

BUDDHA'S TEACHINGS

BEING THE

Sutta-Nipāta or Discourse-Collection

EDITED IN THE ORIGINAL PALI TEXT
WITH AN ENGLISH VERSION FACING IT

BY

LORD CHALMERS

G.C.B. Hon. D.Litt., Oxford

*Sometime Master of Peterhouse, Cambridge University
Sometime Governor of Ceylon*



892

Πάντα γέλωσ καὶ πάντα κόνις καὶ πάντα τὸ μηδέν·
πάντα γὰρ ἐξ ἀλόγων ἐστὶ τὰ γινόμενα. — GLYCON

CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS

Harvard University Press

LONDON : HUMPHREY MILFORD

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

1932

CENTRAL LIBRARY
NEW DELHI

Acc. No. 892

Date. 25-1-54

Call No. BPa 3 / Snt / Cha

Some other works by the author of this volume

A History of Currency in the British Colonies. By Robert Chalmers, B.A., of Oriel College, Oxford: and of Her Majesty's Treasury. London: Printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office. 1893

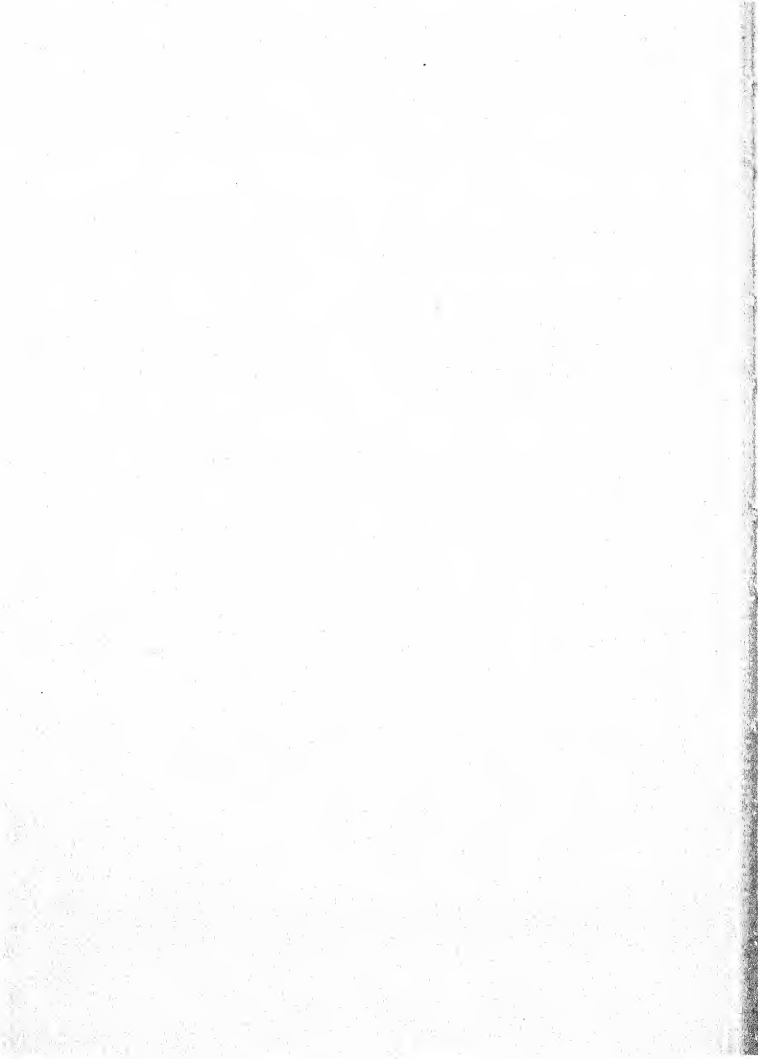
The Jātaka or Stories of the Buddha's Former Births. Translated from the Pali by various hands, under the editorship of Professor E. B. Cowell. Vol. 1. Translated by Robert Chalmers, B.A., of Oriel College, Oxford. Cambridge: at the University Press. 1895

The Majjhima-Nikāya. Edited by Robert Chalmers [in continuation of the edition of V. Trenckner, vol. 1, 1888]: vol. 2, 1898: vol. 3, 1899. London. Published for the Pali Text Society, by the Oxford University Press

Further Dialogues of the Buddha. Translated from the Pali of the Majjhima-Nikāya, by Lord Chalmers, G.C.B. Vol. 1, 1926: vol. 2, 1927. London, Oxford University Press

Large sheet
Book 56
#32/- 26/4

PRAEPOSITO SOCIISQUE
ORIELENSIBUS
ΤΡΟΦΕΙΑ



PREFACE

SOME time ago, when reading the Sutta-Nipāta, I was led to the conclusion that, while all verse when translated should receive a metrical rendering, it was particularly desirable to make the attempt here, so as to emphasize in English the historically significant varieties of versification found in the Pāli. In 1928 Professor Lanman suggested that, with a Pāli text on the opposite page (as in the Loeb Classics), my metrical experiment should find a place in the Harvard Oriental Series. This volume is the outcome of his suggestion.

My Pāli text has been based on Fausböll's *editio princeps* of 1885 and on the 'new edition' of 1913 for the Pāli Text Society (by Andersen and Helmer Smith),—as modified by the subsequent P.T.S. editions of the Commentary on the Sutta-Nipāta (Paramatthajotikā II) and of the canonical Niddesa. The conclusion borne in on me was that, apart from minor matters and a very few real divergences of readings, the text of the Sutta-Nipāta (thanks to this distinguished *paramparā* of Danish scholars) was practically now a *textus receptus*; and that, in a volume which is primarily intended for English readers, it was unnecessary to discuss various readings which Pāli scholars can readily investigate in the authorities quoted above. Where I have differed, I have aimed at the restoration, not at the conjectural emendation, of the text.

Nor, in the matter of interpretation of the text, have I thought it desirable to cumber the translation with polemic notes or with a record of others' renderings. I have therefore confined myself to an examination (in the *Introduction*) into the literary evolution of the Sutta-Nipāta, so far as it can be traced to-day, and will let the version speak for itself as a commentary no less than as a rendering.

My conclusion is that, while its materials are by no means all of equal antiquity, there is no older *book* in Buddhist literature than the Sutta-Nipāta, and no earlier corpus of primitive Buddhist doctrine than it contains.

While the presence of the Pāli on the opposite page forbids exuberance in translation, the limitations of metre (and I have sought to make the English follow roughly the Pāli scheme of versification) make it no easy matter—even without rhyme—to compress terse Pāli into a relatively modest compass in English.

Ignoscent experti.

PETERHOUSE,

18 February 1931.

CONTENTS

PREFACE	PAGE vii
INTRODUCTION.	xiii

Tabular conspectus of the five main divisions (Vaggas or 'Books')

Book	Name	Suttas	Stanzas	Fausbøll	Name in Pali	
1	Snake Book	12	221	1-221	Uraga vagga	2
2	Short Book	14	183	222-404	Cūla vagga	54
3	Long Book	12	361	405-765	Mahā vagga	98
4	The Octads	16	210	766-975	Aṭṭhaka vagga	184
5	The Way-across	16	174	976-1149	Pārāyana vagga	234

Table of the seventy Suttas or minor divisions

*For some Pali sutta-names (marked with a star) there are alternative Pali names.
These are given below, at end of page xi.*

BOOK 1. THE SNAKE BOOK, OR URAGA VAGGA

Sutta	Name in Pali	
1. As Snakes slough outworn skins	Uragasutta	2
2. Dhaniya, the rich herdsman	Dhaniyasutta	4
3. Alone — like the rhinoceros	Khaggavisāṇasutta	10
4. Bhāradvāja, the franklin	Kasi-Bhāradvāja-sutta	20
5. Cunda, the smith	Cundasutta	24
6. The Twelve Failures	Parābhavasutta	26
7. The Wastrel	*Vasalasutta	30
8. Good-will	Mettasutta	36
9. The Himālayan Sprite	*Hemavatasutta	38
10. The Woodland Sprite	Ālavakasutta	44
11. Disillusion (as to the body)	*Vijayasutta	46
12. The Sage	Munisutta	48

BOOK 2. THE SHORT BOOK, OR CŪLA VAGGA

1. The Three Gems	Ratanasutta	54
2. Carrion	Āmagandhasutta	58
3. Loyalty	Hirisutta	62
4. The Boon of Boons	Mahāmangalasutta	64
5. Inward Growths	Sūcilomasutta	66
6. The Good Life	*Dhammacariyasutta	68
7. Brahminism's Golden Age	Brāhmaṇapadhammikasutta	70

<i>Sutta</i>	<i>Name in Pali</i>	
8. The Good Ship	*Nāvāsutta	76
9. Right Conduct	Kirīsīlasutta	78
10. Arise!	Uṭṭhānasutta	78
11. To Rāhula	Rāhulasutta	80
12. Kappa's Destiny	*Vangīsasutta	82
13. The Anchorite's Ideal	*Sammāparibbājanīyasutta	86
14. The Almsman's Life and the Householder's	Dhammikasutta	90

BOOK 3. THE LONG BOOK, OR MAHĀ VAGGA

1. Gotama's Pilgrimage	Pabbajjāsutta	98
2. Gotama's Temptation by Māra	Padhānasutta	100
3. Apt Words	Subhāsitasutta	104
4. Offerings	*Sundarika-Bhāradvājasutta	106
5. Māgha; or Largesse	Māghasutta	114
6. Sabhiya's Questions	Sabhiyasutta	120
7. The Superman	Selasutta	132
8. The Pangs of Grief	Sallasutta	144
9. What is a Brahmin?	Vāsetṭhasutta	146
10. Slander's Doom	*Kokāliyasutta	156
11. Asita's <i>Nunc dimittis</i>	*Nālakasutta	164
12. The Dyads: Origin and Ending of Ills	Dvayaṭānupassanāsutta	172

BOOK 4. BOOK OF OCTADS, OR AṬṬHAKA VAGGA

1. Prologue: Desires	Kāmasutta	184
2. Octad of the Den	Guhaṭṭhakasutta	184
3. Octad of Malice	Duṭṭhaṭṭhakasutta	186
4. Octad of Purity	Suddhaṭṭhakasutta	188
5. Octad of Perfection	Paramaṭṭhakasutta	192
6. Vita brevis	Jarāsutta	192
7. Lechery	Tissa-Metteyya-sutta	196
8. Warring sects	Pasūrasutta	196
9. Beauty scorned	Māgandiyasutta	200
10. 'Ere dissolution comes'	Purābhedasutta	202
11. Contentions	Kalaha-vivāda-sutta	204
12. Rejoinders	Cūla-viyūha-sutta	210
13. More Rejoinders	Mahā-viyūhasutta	214
14. Without delay	Tuvaṭṭakasutta	220
15. The Armed Hand	Attadaṇḍasutta	224
16. What Sāriputta asked	*Sāriputtasutta	228

BOOK 5. BOOK OF THE WAY-ACROSS, OR PĀRĀYANA VAGGA

Division

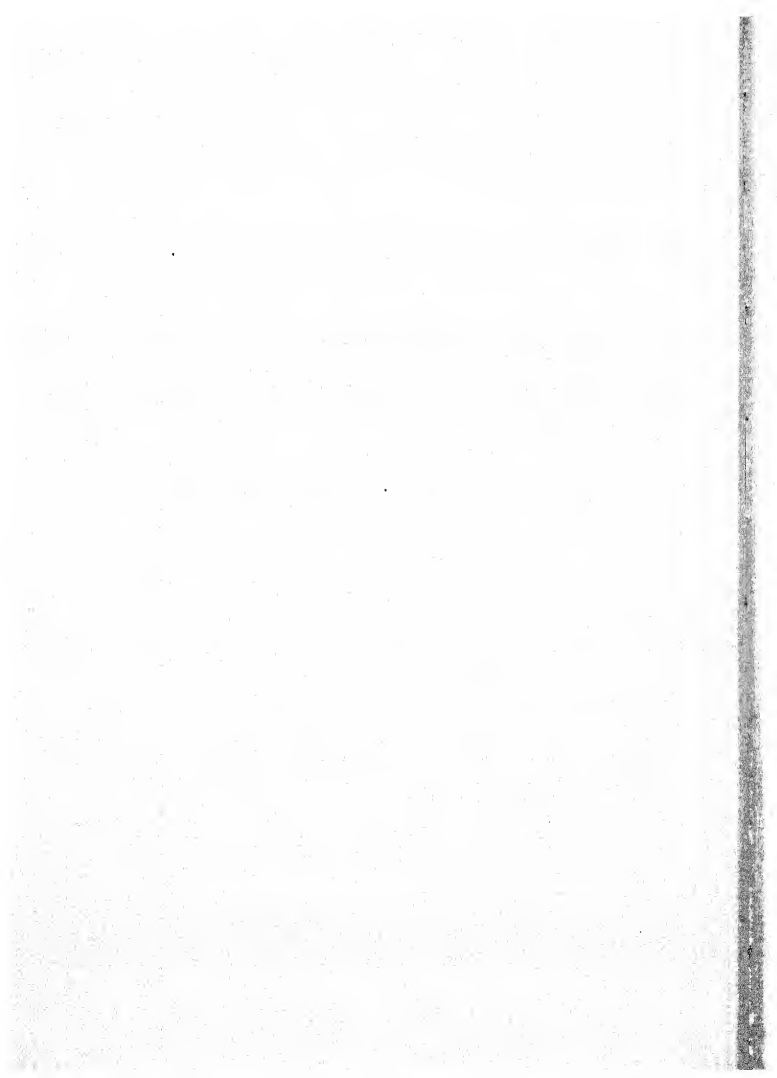
1. Prologue: Bāvarī and his 16 disciples		Vatthugāthā	234
	<i>Answer to</i>	<i>Sutta</i>	<i>Pucchā</i>
2. Ajita's question	(1)	Ajitamāṇava-pucchā	242
3. Tissa Metteyya's question	(2)	Tissametteyyamāṇavapucchā	244
4. Puṇṇaka's question	(3)	Puṇṇakamāṇavapucchā	244
5. Mettagū's question	(4)	Mettagūmāṇavapucchā	246
6. Dhotaka's question	(5)	Dhotakamāṇavapucchā	250
7. Upasīva's question	(6)	Upasivamāṇavapucchā	252
8. Nanda's question	(7)	Nandamāṇavapucchā	254
9. Hemaka's question	(8)	Hemakamāṇavapucchā	256
10. Todeyya's question	(9)	Todeyyamāṇavapucchā	258
11. Kappa's question	(10)	Kappamāṇavapucchā	258
12. Jatukappi's question	(11)	Jatukappimāṇavapucchā	260
13. Bhadrāvudha's question	(12)	Bhadrāvudhamāṇavapucchā	260
14. Udaya's question	(13)	Udayamāṇavapucchā	262
15. Posāla's question	(14)	Posālamāṇavapucchā	264
16. Mogharāja's question	(15)	Mogharājamāṇavapucchā	264
17. Pingiya's question	(16)	Pingiyamāṇavapucchā	266
— Epilogue: lauding Gotama and his Way-across			266

INDEXES

(I) Pali	275
(II) English (by Miss Isaline Horner)	292

Alternative Pali names for Suttas marked above with a star

1.07. Vasala-sutta or Aggi(ka)-Bhāradvāja-sutta (cf. 1.4 and 3.4)	30
1.09. Hemavata-sutta or Sātāgira-sutta	38
1.11. Vijaya-sutta or Kāya-vicchandaniya-sutta	46
2.06. Dhammacariya-sutta or Kapila-sutta	68
2.08. Nāvā-sutta or Dhamma-sutta	76
2.12. Vangīsa-sutta or Nigrodha-Kappa-sutta	82
2.13. Sammā-paribbājaniya-sutta or Muni-sutta or Mahāsamaya-sutta	86
3.04. Sundarika-Bhāradvāja-sutta or Pūrajāsa-sutta	106
3.10. Kokāliya-sutta or Kokālika-sutta	156
3.11. Nālaka-sutta or Moneyya-sutta	164
4.16. Sāriputta-sutta or Thera-paṇha-sutta	228



INTRODUCTION

I

THE Pāli Canon, as it has come down to us, is divided into three Piṭakas (or 'baskets'), viz.:

- I. Vinaya-p°,—containing the detailed Rule with which (in a simpler form) Gotama's bhikkhus (or 'Almsmen') began their corporate life.
- II. Sutta-p°,—containing (subsequent) discourses and dialogues, embodying doctrinal Buddhism.
- III. Abhidhamma-p°,—containing (still later) scholastic expositions of the Sutta-piṭaka.

The Sutta-Nipāta, which is here translated, contains an ancient, probably the most ancient, part of the Sutta-piṭaka. It belongs to that portion of the Sutta-piṭaka which is named the Khuddaka Nikāya, or 'collection of short' treatises (as distinct from the four long Nikāyas,— called Dīgha, Majjhima, Saṃyutta, and Anguttara).

Of the five Vaggas (or 'books') of the present Sutta-Nipāta, the fifth stands out from its fellows by reason of its purposeful unity. While the Uruga, Mahā, Cūla, and Aṭṭhaka Vaggas consist each of a collection of independent and unconnected poems (sometimes interspersed with prose) called *Suttas*, the Pārāyana aims at a dramatic synthesis. Its prologue and epilogue serve as a setting to the sixteen Questions which elicit Gotama's gradual exposition of the saving 'Way Across',—an exposition which collectively is styled a homily (dhamma-pariyāya) in the prose preface to verse 1124 (cf. v. 1130) and is classified as simply a 'suttanta' (not a Vagga, or 'book' of many suttas) at Paramatthajotikā, II. 163.

Uncertainty still attaches to the sense in which the word 'Sutta' was used in primitive Buddhism. Originally meaning 'a thread', the word has come to denote prose narratives or dialogues concerning the *dhamma*, such as those which, in (e.g.) the Dīgha and Majjhima Nikāyas, characterize the great Sutta-Piṭaka,—in contradistinction to the contents of the Vinaya and Abhidhamma Piṭakas. But this was not the case from the outset. Thus, (a) in the Vinaya (II. 95), we find 'Sutta' specifically applied to the canonical Pātimokkha:—'Ubhayāni assa Pātimokkhāni vitthārena svāgatāni honti . . . *suttato* anuvyañjanaso' ('to him have been handed down accurately and in full both Pātimokkhas, Sutta by Sutta and in extenso'). (b) At the end of the canonical Sutta Vibhanga's exposition of the Pātimokkha (Vin. IV. 351), there occur the words: 'Ettakaṃ tassa Bhagavato *sutta*-gataṃ *sutta*-pariyāpannaṃ anva-dhamāsaṃ uddeśaṃ āgacchati' ('thus much of the Lord's words, as handed

down in Suttas and as embodied in Suttas, comes in course of recitation once a fortnight'). And (c) at Vinaya, II. 96-7 there is a condemnation of any 'dhamma-kathika', or professed reciter of the Dhamma (not of the Vinaya alone, it will incidentally be noted), who has failed to master not only the Pātimokkha *Suttas* but also the *Sutta-Vibhanga* commentary thereon ('tassa Suttaṃ āgataṃ, no Sutta-vibhango', or—a *fortiori*—'tassa n' eva Suttaṃ āgataṃ no Sutta-vibhango').

While the foregoing quotations prove the use of the term 'Sutta' to include the disciplinary regulations of the young Community, I am not aware of the term being applied in the Canon to isolated apophthegms, which formed the kernel of Gotama's doctrinal teachings. It may well be, I suggest, that the title of 'Sutta' (primarily meaning 'thread' or 'string', cf. Sumangala Vilāsini, I. 18) was reserved from the outset for any consecutive *thread* of argument or narration (whether of Rule or of Doctrine) continuously *strung* together and coherent.¹

II

The compilation of the Pāli Canon must have been spread over centuries, and have employed successive generations of ecclesiastical authors and editors before the present Ti-piṭaka was finally evolved. No credence can be extended to the orthodox Buddhist belief that the whole Pali Canon—at least in essentials—was settled in its present form at the First Council (which was held immediately after Gotama's death in (?) 483 B.C.). Originally, there were no 'scriptures', only memories of individual utterances by Gotama, and perhaps by his chief lieutenants,—memories like those which, some five and a half centuries later, formed the basic material of the Christian synoptics. Indeed, it cannot safely be assumed that, *in its present form*, any given 'book' of the Canon dates back to before Asoka's Council held at Patna in (perhaps) 240 B.C.

Composition of course preceded compilation; the date (if ascertainable) of the compilation of a canonical 'book' as a whole does not determine the date of composition of its constituents,—which latter may well be more ancient, in whole or part, than the synthetic book into which they have been incorporated.

¹ At Sumangala Vilāsini, I. 23, Buddhaghosa defines 'sutta' as denoting 'the two (Sutta-) Vibhanga, the Niddesa, the Khandhakas and Parivāra (of the Vinaya Piṭaka), the Mangala, Ratana, Nālaka, and Tuvāṭaka Suttas in the Sutta-Nipāta, together with all other utterances of the Tathāgata which are styled Suttas.'

He adds, that all those Suttas which contain both prose and verse are also classified as 'geyya'.

It will be noted, and is (I think) significant, that the list starts with the ancient *Commentaries* on (a) the Vinaya and (b) the Sutta-Nipāta's earliest elements.

In support of the belief now generally accepted that the Pāli Canon was evolved from common material, there is the evidence afforded not only by the constant repetition throughout the great Nikāyas of 'stock passages' (which were as convenient for Eastern recitation as they are wearisome to a Western reader) but also by the frequent incorporation of the same composition, title and all, in more than one canonical book. To take a simple instance from the Sutta-Nipāta:—the Sela and Vāseṭṭha Suttas of our Mahā-vagga recur verbatim under the same titles in the Majjhima Nikāya. Also, the Metta Sutta of our Uruga Vagga, and the Ratana and (Mahā-) Mangala Suttas of our Cūla-vagga, reappear bodily in the canonical Khuddaka Pāṭha. Numerous also are the instances of individual stanzas of the Sutta-Nipāta recurring elsewhere in the Canon;—e.g. verses 45 and 46 are found also in the Majjhima Nikāya (III. 154), and in the Vinaya (I. 350), as well as in the Dhammapada (vv. 328-9).

A special light, however, is thrown on the evolution of our Sutta-Nipāta by the inclusion in the *Canon* of its ancient commentary, called Niddesa (or 'exposition'). Now, this canonical Niddesa is a commentary not on the whole of our 'Sutta-Nipāta' (which it does not name *as such*) but only on its concluding Vaggas (Aṭṭhaka and Pārāyana) and on the Khaggavisāṇa (or 'rhinoceros') Sutta of the Uruga Vagga. The canonical Niddesa, therefore, leaves untouched (i) the whole of the Mahā and Cūla Vaggas, and (ii) eleven out of twelve Suttas of the Uruga Vagga; i.e. it wholly ignores the Sutta-Nipāta's corporate title and two-thirds of its existing contents.

But the Canonical Niddesa is not the sole external authority for the relative age of our Sutta-Nipāta. Further direct (and corroborative) evidence is furnished by the following references to our Sutta-Nipāta in other canonical books, such as the Vinaya and the Saṃyutta and Anguttara Nikāyas,—references, it will be observed, which are specifically restricted to those two Vaggas with which the Niddesa deals. Thus:

- (i) Sn. 844 is quoted at Saṃyutta Nikāya, III. 9 and 12:—Vuttaṃ idam Bhagavatā Aṭṭhaka-vaggike Māgandiya-paṇḍite: 'Okāṃ pahāya . . . kayirā ti'.
- (ii) Sn. 1038 is quoted at Saṃyutta Nikāya, II. 47:—Vuttaṃ idam Pārāyane Ajita-paṇḍite: 'Ye ca . . . mārisāti'.
- (iii) Sn. 1042 is quoted at Anguttara Nikāya, III. 399:—Vuttaṃ idam Bhagavatā Pārāyane Metteyya-paṇḍite: 'Yo ubh' ante . . . accagā ti'.
- (iv) Sn. 1048 is quoted at Anguttara Nikāya, I. 133 and II. 45:—Idaṃ ca pana me taṃ sandhāya bhāsitaṃ Pārāyane Puṇṇaka-paṇḍite: 'Saṃkhāya . . . brūmīti'.
- (v) Sn. 1106-7 is quoted at Anguttara Nikāya, I. 134:—Idaṃ ca pana me taṃ sandhāya bhāsitaṃ Pārāyane Udaya-paṇḍite: 'Pahānam . . . pabbhedanam'.

- (vi) At Vinaya, I. 196¹, Soṇa, being asked by Gotama to show what he knew of the Dhamma, recited the whole contents of the Aṭṭhaka Vagga:—Sabbān' eva Aṭṭhaka-vaggikāni sarena abhāsi.

Hence it may be concluded that, at the date of its composition, the existing Niddesa covered as a commentary the whole of the then existing 'Sutta-Nipāta'; and that, after the composition of the Niddesa commentary, but before the Pāli Canon was fixed, further material was incorporated with the Pārāyana, the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, and the Khaggavisāṇa Sutta to make up the final Sutta-Nipāta as it has come down to us in the Canon. Thus the Pārāyana, the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, and the Khaggavisāṇa are older, as a compilation, not only than the canonical Niddesa which comments on them, but also than (those portions of) the Vinaya and of the two Nikāyas which specifically cite them.

III

But, as has been noted *supra*, authorship precedes editorial compilation; and the ascertained stages of growth of a compiled 'book' by no means settle the relative date of composition of its contents, a question for the solution of which internal evidence must be invoked, for what it is worth.

Internal evidence may be linguistic, metrical, or doctrinal.

Mainly on linguistic grounds, Fausböll (in his Introduction to his translation of the Sutta-Nipāta in vol. x of the *Sacred Books of the East*) originally considered 'the greater part of the Mahāvagga and nearly the whole of the Aṭṭhaka-vagga' as very old', arriving at this conclusion from two reasons, first from the language, and secondly from the contents (the latter perhaps not on sufficient grounds). As regards language, 'we not only find here (he said in 1880) what we meet with in other Pāli poetry, the fuller Vedic forms of nouns and verbs in the plural . . . but also unusual (sometimes old) forms² and words. . . . Sometimes we meet also with difficult and irregular constructions, and very condensed expressions. All this (he urged) proves, I think, that these parts of the book are much older than the Suttas in which the language is not only fluent, but of which some verses are even singularly melodious.'

In 1885, however, in the preface to his *editio princeps* of the Pāli text of the Sutta-Nipāta, Fausböll modified the foregoing view,—solely on external

¹ Repeated at Udāna V. 6, with the specific amplification that Soṇa recited (or 'intoned') 'all the sixteen' Aṭṭhakavaggika Suttas.

In the Pāli Text Society's *Journal* for 1896, and in the *Journal Asiatique* for May 1915, will be found important articles by the late Professor Rhys Davids and by M. Sylvain Lévi, respectively, in which the Soṇa episode is traced beyond the Pāli Canon into Buddhist Sanskrit, Chinese, and Tibetan. A common error of these later translations is the confusion of aṭṭha (= eight) with atttha (= welfare).

² I have adopted a suggestion of Professor Lanman that in (e.g.) verse 29 usabhor iva represents, by wholly regular sandhi, the old nominative termination usabhos. Cf. thambhor iva in v. 214, sāsapor iva in v. 631, hamsor iva in v. 1134; and cf. also vuttir esā in vv. 81 and 480.

evidence. 'I ought (he said in 1885) to have added' (*sc.* to the Mahā and Aṭṭhaka Vaggas) 'the Pārāyana Vagga. That my then (1880) expressed opinion holds good about the two last-mentioned at least' (*sc.* the Aṭṭhaka Vagga and the Pārāyana), seems to me to be evident from there being a commentary on them, called Niddesa, which has been incorporated in the Buddhist canon and from their having been quoted' (as Trenckner had pointed out) 'in the Nikāyas and in the Vinaya-piṭaka'.

This frank shifting of linguistic judgement in deference to non-linguistic evidence tends to support Max Müller's general opinion (in his 1880 Introduction to the Dhammapada at p. xix of vol. x of the *S.B.E.*):—'Nor is the language, whether Sanskrit or Pāli, a safe guide for fixing dates. . . . This branch of critical scholarship requires to be cultivated far more extensively and accurately before true scholars would venture to fix the date of a Sanskrit or Pāli text on the strength of linguistic evidence alone.'

To pass from language to metre, anuṣṭubh ślokas—represented in my translation by blank verse of five accents—constitute a relatively easy metre and thus would naturally be employed, in later recensions, to pad out old triṣṭubh material, which is metrically more difficult to write. Take for example the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, or 'Book of the Octads',—so called because in four of its initial Suttas (Nos. 2–5) there are *eight* stanzas.¹ Though these four eponymous Suttas are all triṣṭubh 'octads', they are now preceded by a Kāma Sutta of only six stanzas, in anuṣṭubh ślokas, which manifestly forms a late preface to the 'Aṭṭhaka' Vagga as a re-edited whole. So, too, in the Sāriputta Sutta (No. 16) of the same Vagga, the equally edifying ślokas, Nos. 955–62, suggest an editorial preamble to the vigorous triṣṭubhs with which the Aṭṭhaka Vagga ends. In the Mahāvagga also, the triṣṭubh verse No. 728 persists in the Dvayatānupassanā Sutta as an oasis amid scholastic accretions. So, also, the Pārāyana now consists, as regards nearly three quarters of its contents, of mixed prose and anuṣṭubh ślokas, which together form as it were a matrix in which are imbedded triṣṭubhs obviously earlier than the interstitial matter surrounding them.

Instances might be multiplied to support the working hypothesis which I venture to advance for the Sutta-Nipāta, that, while all its prose is late, the longer the metrical line the later is the composition likely to have been. It would, however, be straining this working hypothesis unduly to argue that, though in the Pāli Canon triṣṭubhs are most probably ancient, *therefore* all anuṣṭubh ślokas are necessarily, and in all cases, of late date; for both metres go back to the Ṛg-veda.²

¹ The Uruga Vagga is named after its initial Uruga Sutta.

² Charpentier has shown (*Die Suparnasage*, p. 204 *et seqq.*) that the triṣṭubh is normally used for dialogue in the Vedic hymns and in early narrative poetry, including the Jātaka.

The Pārāyana, which perhaps contains the oldest material in the Sutta-Nipāta and is quoted by name four times in the Nikāyas, calls for special comment. Although the Pārāyana now forms a literary unity, it is made up of divers materials, new and old. Evidently new is:

- (a) the not wholly relevant prologue, dealing with the curse on Bāvari (? = Babylonian), and
- (b) the epilogue,—except the triṣṭubhs (vv. 1133-4 and 1142-6) which would seem to have been originally a sequel to Pingiya's Question and to have been amplified subsequently so as to round off the composite Pārāyana.

As regards its sixteen 'Questions', each is in form a separate dialogue dealing with a separate element of Buddhist doctrine; but not all suggest one and the same date of composition. If, tentatively, a metrical test be applied, the triṣṭubhs of the five Questions 3 to 7 (Puṇṇaka's to Nanda's), and of the three Questions 9, 11, and 12 (Todeyya's, Jatukaṇṇi's, and Bhadrāvudha's), would rank as the earlier elements (and, personally, I think such a conclusion probable),—the remaining 'Questions' having been inserted later, when the earliest matter was being supplemented.

Further, there is the direct historical evidence of Asoka's Bhābrū (or Second Bairāt) Rock Edict, which Vincent Smith (*Asoka*, 3rd edition, 1920) would date from Asoka's 13th regnal year, i.e. 257 B.C. As this early Edict cites among seven passages from the Canon at least three from the Sutta-Nipāta (viz. the Muni-sutta (I. 12), the Nālaka-sutta (III. 11), and the Sāriputta-sutta (IV. 16)), there is thus historical evidence for the existence of these Sutta-Nipāta texts before the Patna Council (? 240 B.C.)

The conclusions indicated by the foregoing observations may be summarized as follows:

- (i) The Pārāyana, the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, and the Khaggavisāṇa Sutta are the earliest elements of our present canonical Sutta-Nipāta.
- (ii) These earliest elements preceded in date not only their canonical commentary (the Niddesa) but also those portions (at least) of the Vinaya and of the Saṃyutta and Anguttara Nikāyas which specifically quote them.
- (iii) The date of compilation by Vaggas, which is later than the date of composition of Suttas, does not necessarily fix the date either of original composition, or of later transformations, of Suttas.
- (iv) Metrically, triṣṭubhs suggest the oldest (as prose suggests the latest) elements of our Sutta-Nipāta which, as a composite whole, cannot be dated with any certainty earlier than the final compilation of the Canon.

IV

In accord with the foregoing, internal, linguistic and metrical conclusions, are the following considerations—the first based on the primitive connotation of the word ‘buddha’, and the second on the unvarnished presentment in the Sutta-Nipāta of events which later on were overlaid by the exuberance of Oriental fantasy.

(i) Whilst the title of ‘Sambuddha’ (or more fully: ‘Bhagavā Arahāṃ Sammā-sambuddho’) is restricted to him whom we call ‘the Buddha’ (or to his apocryphal seven—later twenty-five—forerunners of other æons), and whilst the uncompounded form ‘buddha’ throughout the Canon usually has the same denotation, there are in the Sutta-Nipāta some half-dozen instances of its use in a more extended sense so as to embrace ‘catusacca-buddhā ariyapuggalā’ (Pj. II. 374), i.e. ‘the Noble ones who are alive to the Four Truths’ of Buddhism. These instances of the plural use of *buddhā* in the Sutta-Nipāta occur, it will be found, in *triṣṭubh* stanzas, indicated above as the oldest material of this book; and it seems *a priori* probable that what was in Buddhism at first a title open to all *bhikkhus* of highest ‘comprehension’ or ‘enlightenment’ (cf. verse 386 d.), came later to be confined to the Founder alone.

(ii) As against the lavish marvels and wonders which, even in canonical writings (e.g. Majjhima Nikāya, Sutta No. 123), embroider the accounts of Gotama’s birth and departure from home, it is with a sense of relief that in the Sutta-Nipāta we find an absence of Nativity prodigies and (in the first two Suttas of the Mahāvagga) a wholesome austerity in the primitive record of his renunciation and of his ascetic quest of Peace. In the Sutta-Nipāta he is simply a well-born Sakyan who left house and home for the higher life and nearly starved himself to death by the implacable rigours of his self-mortifications.

(iii) Notable, too, is the absence from the Sutta-Nipāta of any mention of *bhikkhunīs*, or *Almswomen*, in connexion with the Buddhist *sangha* or community. It may be that this silence (if not, indeed, accidental) reveals a primitive stage in which there existed *Almsmen* without *Almswomen*,—a stage earlier than the accepted account of Gotama’s (eventual) admission of women to his community at the instance of his aunt, Mahā-pajāpati.¹ At all events the Sutta-Nipāta restricts itself to *Almsmen* alone.

(iv) In the Royal Asiatic Society’s Journal for 1898 I advanced the view that the title of ‘Tathāgata’ indicated one who had won through to the truth (*tatha*). I point out here that this title—given in v. 236 (as usually) to the Buddha—is, in vv. 237–8, extended (in identical terms) to the *dhamma* and

¹ See Miss Horner’s *Women under primitive Buddhism*, Routledge, 1930.

to the saṅgha. This extension of the title from Gotama to the Doctrine and to the Community excludes from the connotation of tathāgata (as thus extended) those fanciful explanations¹ of Gotama's own career which turn on tathā (=thus), as indicating that Gotama personally followed the exact example, and reproduced the experience, of earlier Buddhas in attaining Buddhahood. As applied here to all three members of the Buddhist Triad alike, tathāgata cannot be restricted in meaning to Gotama's own mental processes and their evolution. These specific processes in time and space, whilst historically untrue of his (subsequent) Community, can have no place in the abstract philosophy of his final Doctrine. The only interpretation of 'tathāgata' which will apply here to dhamma and saṅgha, as well as to the Buddha himself, must be abstract in its nature and not lie in the phenomenal realm of historical sequences. Such an interpretation I find only in deriving the word from *tatha* (=true) and in rendering it in all the three cases alike as 'bringing the Truth'.

But I recognize that the author of vv. 236-8 of the Sutta-Nipāta, in applying the title to dhamma and saṅgha, as well as to 'the Buddha', may simply have failed to understand its meaning.

V

I close this Introduction by adducing two parallels—if, indeed, they are not ultimately one—between Buddhism and Christianity. I premise in advance that there is here no question of one creed borrowing from the other; the relationship goes deeper than that. (In his *Ecclesiastical Polity*, Richard Hooker has affirmed a moral law of divine origin, which is not enshrined in the Bible but is deducible from other sources and derives its sanction from man's rational faculties.)

A. The first of these two parallels relates to what Jeremy Taylor would term 'holy living'. From (e.g.) a 1927 lecture on Ireland and Mediaeval Europe (*Proc. Brit. Acad.* vol. xiii) I quote a Franciscan Exhortation to the clergy of the fifteenth century:

'Be not quick to anger, or loud of voice or covetous. Eat not to fulness, be neither niggard nor liar. Delight not in food. Thy side half-bare, half-cold thy bed . . . knowledge, steadfastness, persistence. Silence, humility, chastity, patience. Take not the world's way.'

It would not be difficult to match from the Buddhist scriptures each individual clause and word of this succinct passage, though it would involve citations from several books, and the elimination of otiose matter. For

¹ e.g. Sumangala Vilāsinī, I. 59, et seqq.

brevity's sake I confine myself here to citing from the Sutta-Nipāta the following stanzas of the Mahāmangala Sutta, *infra* (II. 4):

8. 'Tis rev'rent awe, content, prompt gratitude,
and due attendance when the Doctrine's preached;
9. 'tis patience, courtesy, the company
of Almsmen, timely talks on gospel truth;
10. 'tis strict austerity, a holy life,—

'These', observed Gotama (see p. 12 of the first volume of the Dīgha Nikāya), 'are the trifling matters, the minor details, of mere morality.' And so too in the Christian scheme these stages do not rank higher than the 'remote preparation by purgation'. 'Holiness *before* Peace' was the dictum of Hurrell Froude,—see Brilioth's *Anglican Revival*.

B. In higher realms than such *ἀσκησις* or 'training', Saint Augustine's 'proximate preparation' for Contemplation (*θεωπία*) finds its parallel, I suggest, in the *jhāna* of Buddhism. In the ancient Sutta-Nipāta, *jhāna* ('reverie' or 'meditation') is used in the singular only; in the Nikāyas generally, it has come to be subdivided (e.g. in the 4th Sutta of the Majjhima Nikāya) into the following four stages for eliminating mental process:

1. 'Strenuous effort (says Gotama of himself) won for me perseverance that never flagged; there arose in me mindfulness that knew no distraction, perfect tranquillity of body, steadfastness of mind that never wavered.

'Divested of pleasures of sense, divested of wrong states of consciousness, I entered on, and abode in, the First Jhāna with all its zest and satisfaction—a state bred of inward aloofness but not divorced from observation and reflection.

2. 'As I rose above observation and reflection, I entered on, and abode in, the Second Jhāna with all its zest and satisfaction—a state bred of rapt concentration, above all observation and reflection, a state whereby the heart is focused and tranquillity reigns within.

3. 'By shedding the emotion of zest, I entered on, and abode in, the Third Jhāna, with its poised equanimity—mindful and self-possessed, feeling in my frame the satisfaction of which the Noble say that poise and mindfulness bring abiding satisfaction.

4. 'By putting from me both satisfaction and dissatisfaction, and by shedding the joys and sorrows I used to feel, I entered on, and abode in, the Fourth Jhāna—the state that, knowing neither satisfaction nor dissatisfaction, is the consummate purity of poised equanimity and mindfulness.'

Gotama's four stages lead up to a heart and mind 'steadfast, clarified and purified, clean and cleansed of things impure, tempered and apt for service, established and immutable', i.e. to a perfectly tempered instrument for intellectual conquests to be achieved therewith and thereafter.

From Gotama I pass to Augustine of Hippo a thousand years later,—restricting myself here too to the latter's autobiographical records, as marshalled with authority by Dom Cuthbert Butler in his *Western Mysticism*. The *Confessions*, observes the learned Abbot of Downside, are 'the portrayal of an emergence from intellectual error and from moral disorder' by a process 'for the most part intellectual in idea and in language, sometimes being frankly Plotinian'. 'Western mystics (he adds) commonly represent Contemplation' (the older term for mysticism, restored by Dom Cuthbert Butler) 'as attained to by and in absorption in prayer; but for Augustine it seems to have been primarily an intellectual process—informed, indeed, by intense religious warmth, but still primarily intellectual'.

It is after and beyond the 'remote preparation by purgation' that the Christian aspirant proceeds to the Augustinian counterpart of the Buddhist *jhānas*, viz. the proximate preparation for Contemplation by the processes called 'Recollection' and 'Introversion'. Here 'Recollection' is taken in its primary sense of gathering together and concentrating the mind; it consists—and this is the essential link with the *jhānas*—first in the effort to banish from the mind all images and thoughts of external things, all sense-perceptions and thoughts of 'creatures'; then the reasoning processes of the intellect are silenced, and by this exercise of abstraction a solitude is produced wherein the soul may operate in its most spiritual faculties. This shutting off of all internal things from the mind, and emptying it of distracting thoughts, which is the object of 'Recollection', is the prelude to that entering of the mind into itself that is effected by 'Introversion', which is a concentration of the mind on its own highest or deepest part.

With ultimate outlook we are not here concerned. We are not concerned with Gotama's claim to be able both to recall his own previous existences and to foretell the future lot of his fellow creatures; nor on the other hand are we concerned with St. Augustine's claim to have seen God *in actu trepidantis aspectus*. Our sole concern here is not with the vision of a Promised Land but only with the climb up Pisgah's slopes by stages so similar as to approximate to identity.

SUTTA-NIPĀTA
TEXT AND TRANSLATION

(Throughout this volume, Pāli citations are
from the Pāli Text Society's publications.)

I. URAGAVAGGA

I. URAGASUTTA

1. Yo uppatitaṃ vineti kodhaṃ, [1]
visataṃ sappavisam̐ va osadhehi,
so bhikkhu jahāti orapāraṃ,
urago jīṇṇam̐ iva tacam̐ purāṇam̐.
2. Yo rāgaṃ udacchidā asesam̐ [2]
bhisauppham̐ va saroruham̐ vigayha,
so bhikkhu jahāti
3. Yo taṇham̐ udacchidā asesam̐ [3]
saritam̐ sīghasaram̐ visosayitvā,
so bhikkhu
4. Yo mānam̐ udabbadhī asesam̐ [4]
naḷasetuṃ va sudubbalaṃ mahogho,
so bhikkhu
5. Yo nājjhagamā bhavesu sāram̐ [5]
vicinaṃ puppham̐ iva udumbaresu,
so bhikkhu
6. Yass' antarato na santi kopā [6]
itibhavābhavataṃ ca vītivatto,
so bhikkhu
7. Yassa vitakkā vidhūpitā [7]
ajjhataṃ suvikappitā asesā,
so bhikkhu
8. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī [8]
sabbam̐ accagamā imam̐ papañcam̐,
so bhikkhu
9. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī [9]
'sabbam̐ vitatham̐ idan' ti fiatvā loke,
so bhikkhu
10. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī [10]
'sabbam̐ vitatham̐ idan' ti vītalobho,
so bhikkhu

BOOK I. THE SNAKE BOOK

Sutta 1. Snakes

As snakes slough outworn skins, [1]
 an Almsman sheds belief
 in this or after- worlds,
 —who curbs his wrath (as herbs
 quell vipers' poisoned bite);

—who passion extirpates, [2]
 (as divers by the root
 pluck out the lotus plant);

—who cravings extirpates [3]
 by drying up their flow;

—who sweeps away conceit, [4]
 as floods a bridge of reeds;

—who looks for bliss in lives [5]
 to come, as little as
 for flow'rs on fig-tree boughs;

—whose heart no rancour holds; [6]
 who heeds no 'future state';

—whose ev'ry theme of thought [7]
 has through the furnace passed
 to ordered discipline;

—who hurries not nor lags, [8]
 because he 's through this maze;

—who hurries not nor lags, [9]
 because he knows this world
 'has no reality';

—who hurries not nor lags, [10]
 being from wants now freed,
 because the world around
 'has no reality';

11. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī
'sabbaṃ vitatham idan' ti vitarāgo,
so bhikkhu [11]
12. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī
'sabbaṃ vitatham idan' ti vītaḍḍo,
so bhikkhu [12]
13. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī
'sabbaṃ vitatham idan' ti vītamoho,
so bhikkhu [13]
14. Yassānusayā na santi keci,
mūlā akusalā samūhatāse,
so bhikkhu [14]
15. Yassa darathajā na santi keci
oraṃ āgamanāya paccayāse,
so bhikkhu [15]
16. Yassa vanathajā na santi keci
vinibandhāya bhavāya hetukappā,
so bhikkhu [16]
17. Yo nīvaraṇe pahāya pañca
anīgho tiṇṇakathamkatho visallo,
so bhikkhu jahāti orapāraṃ
urago jīṇṇam iva tacarṃ purāṇaṃ. [17]

2. DHANIYASUTTA

1. Pakkodano duddhakhīro 'ham asmi (*iti Dhaniyo gopo*) [18]
anutīre Mahiyā samānavāso;
channā kuṭi, āhito gini.
Atha ce patthayasī, pavassa, deva.

—who hurries not nor lags,
being from passion freed,
because the world around
'has no reality'; [11]

—who hurries not nor lags,
being from blemish freed,
because the world around
'has no reality'; [12]

—who hurries not nor lags,
being from error freed,
because the world around
'has no reality'; [13]

—whose mind admits no warp;
whose wrongful growths are stubbed; [14]

—who has no fever'd schemes
for getting back to earth; [15]

—who has no undergrowths
to tie him to rebirth; [16]

—who, having shed the five
inward impediments,
abides unharried, sure,
and free from rankling barbs. [17]

Sutta 2. *Dhaniya*, The Rich Herdsman

Dhaniya: My food is dressed; my kine
are milked; by Māhī's banks
my folk and I abide;
my fire is lit; my roof
will keep the weather out.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [18]

2. Akkodhano vigatakhīlo 'ham asmi (iii *Bhagavā*) [19]
 anutīre Mahiy' ekarattivāso;
 vivaṭṭā kuṭi, nibbuto gini.
 Atha ce patthayasī, pavassa, deva.
3. Andhakamakasā na vijjare (iti *Dhaniyo gopo*) [20]
 kacche rūḷhatīṇe caranti gāvo
 vuṭṭhim pi saheyyum āgataṃ.
 Atha ce
4. Baddhā hi bhisī susamkhatā, (iti *Bhagavā*) [21]
 tiṇṇo pāragato vineyya oghaṃ;
 attho bhisiyā na vijjati.
 Atha ce
5. Gopī mama assavā alolā (iti *Dhaniyo gopo*) [22]
 dīgharattaṃ samvāsiyā manāpā;
 tassā na suṇāmi kiñci pāpaṃ.
 Atha ce
6. Cittaṃ mama assavaṃ vimuttaṃ (iti *Bhagavā*) [23]
 dīgharattaṃ paribhāvitaṃ sudantaṃ;
 pāpaṃ pana me na vijjati.
 Atha ce
7. Attavetanabhato 'ham asmi (iti *Dhaniyo gopo*) [24]
 puttā ca me samāniyā arogā;
 tesaṃ na suṇāmi kiñci pāpaṃ.
 Atha ce

The Lord: My mood is blest; my mind
is tilled; by Máhi's banks
one night I stay; my Fires
are quenched; my Roof yawns wide.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[19]

Dhaniya: No gnats, no gad-flies here!
Amid the fen's lush grass
my cattle roam at large;
they're proof against the rain!
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[20]

The Lord: I framed a well-wrought Raft,
which bore me o'er the Flood;
I need no further rafts.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[21]

Dhaniya: A staunch and loyal dame
have I, by many years
of comradeship endeared,
of whom I hear naught wrong.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[22]

The Lord: A staunch, enfranchised heart
have I, by many years
of discipline subdued;
in me naught wrong persists.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[23]

Dhaniya: No hireling's livelihood
is mine;—I keep myself.
Round me are stalwart sons,
of whom I hear naught wrong.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[24]

8. Nāhaṃ bhatako 'smi kassaci (iti Bhagavā) [25]
 nibbiṭṭhena carāmi sabbaloke;
 attho bhatiyā na vijjati.
 Atha ce
9. Atthi vasā, atthi dhenupā, (iti Dhaniyo gopo) [26]
 godharaniyo, paveniyo pi atthi,
 usabho pi gavampatī ca atthi.
 Atha ce
10. Na 'tthi vasā, na 'tthi dhenupā, (iti Bhagavā) [27]
 godharaniyo, paveniyo pi na 'tthi;
 usabho pi gavampatīdha na 'tthi.
 Atha ce
11. Khilā nikhātā asampavedhī, (iti Dhaniyo gopo) [28]
 dāmā muñjamayā navā susaṇṭhānā;
 na hi sakkhinti dhenupā pi chettum.
 Atha ce
12. Usabhor iva chetvā bandhanāni, (iti Bhagavā) [29]
 nāgo pūtilataṃ va dālayitvā,
 nāhaṃ puna upessaṃ gabbhaseyyaṃ.
 Atha ce patthayasī, pavassa, deva.
-
13. Ninnāṇ ca thalaṇ ca pūrayanto [30]
 mahāmegho pāvassi tāvad eva.
 Sutvā devassa vassato
 imam atthaṃ Dhaniyo abhāsatha:
14. 'Lābhā vata no anappakā, [31]
 ye mayaṃ Bhagavantam addasāma!
 Saraṇaṃ taṃ upema, cakkhuma!
 Satthā no hohi tuvaṃ, mahāmuni!

The Lord: I serve no man for hire;
with what I 'gained' I range
the world, nor need a wage.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [25]

Dhaniya: Both cows and sucking calves
have I, with cows in calf
and heifers ripe to breed,
and o'er my kine a bull.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [26]

The Lord: No cows nor sucking calves
have I, no cows in calf,
no heifers ripe to breed,
nor bull to rule my kine.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [27]

Dhaniya: Stout pales surround my byres;
new ropes secure my kine;
not e'en a calf gets through.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [28]

The Lord: Breaking my Bonds in twain,
—with strength as of a bull,
or elephant that snaps
a creeper—nevermore
shall I conception know!
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [29]

Here, flooding hill and dale,
down poured the rain; and, as
he heard it, Dhaniya
thus hailed these happenings:— [30]

Dhaniya: Great gain is ours to view
the Lord. We come, O seer,
for refuge unto thee;
be thou our teacher, sage! [31]

15. Gopī ca ahañ ca assavā [32]
 brahmacariyañ Sugate carāmaṣe;
 jātimaraṇassa pāragā
 dukkhass' antakarā bhavāmaṣe!

16. Nandati puttehi puttimā; (iti Māro pāpimā) [33]
 gomiko gohi tath' eva nandati;
 upadhī hi narassa nandanā;
 na hi so nandati yo nirūpadhi.

17. Socati puttehi puttimā; (iti Bhagavā) [34]
 gomiko gohi tath' eva socati;
 upadhī hi narassa socanā;
 na hi so socati yo nirūpadhi.

3. KHAGGAVISĀNASUTTA

1. Sabbesu bhūtesu nidhāya daṇḍaṃ [35]
 aviheṭṭhayaṃ aññātaraṃ pi tesarṃ
 na puttā iccheyya kuto sahāyaṃ;
 eko care khaggavisāṇakappo.
2. Saṃsaggajātassa bhavanti snehā, [36]
 sneh' anvayaṃ dukkham idaṃ pahoti;
 ādīnavaṃ snehajaṃ pekkhamāno
 eko care khaggavisāṇakappo.
3. Mitte suhaje anukampamāno [37]
 hāpeti atthaṃ paṭibaddhacitto;
 etaṃ bhayaṃ santhave pekkhamāno
 eko care
4. Vamso visālo va yathā visatto [38]
 puttesu dāresu ca yā apekā;
 vamsākaḷāro va asajjamāno
 eko care

Fain would my dame and I,
follow the Blessed One,
till, birth and death o'erpast,
we make an end of Ills.

[32]

Māra: Upon his sons is based
a father's joy,—as on
his herds their owner's joy.
For, man is based on joys,
nor has he any joy
whose life depends on naught.

[33]

The Lord: Upon his sons is based
a father's woe,—as on
his herds their owner's woe.
But woes assail not him
whose life depends on Naught.

[34]

Sutta 3. The Rhinoceros

Hurt naught that lives; do harm
to none; yearn not for sons
or friends; but live—as lives
th' rhinoceros—alone!

[35]

Alone! Companionships
breed fondness; fondness leads
to Ills as consequence;
so mark where fondness ends!

[36]

Go forth alone! To live
for friends and comrades means
your own weal sacrificed;
—beware acquaintances!

[37]

Alone! A man absorbed
in wife and child is like
a tree with tangled boughs.
Copy the bamboo-shoot,
—which grows up straight and free.

[38]

5. Migo araṇṇihamhi yathā abandho
yen' icchakaṃ gacchati gocarāya,
viññū naro seritaṃ pekkhamāno
eko care [39]
6. Āmantanā hoti sahāyamajjhe
vāse thāne gamane cārikāya;
anabhijjhitaṃ seritaṃ pekkhamāno
eko care [40]
7. Khiddā rati hoti sahāyamajjhe,
puttesu ca vipulaṃ hoti pemaṃ,
piyavippayogaṃ vijigucchamāno
eko care [41]
8. Cātuddiso appaṭigho ca hoti
santussamāno itaritarena,
parissayānaṃ sahita achambhī
eko care [42]
9. Dussaṅgahā pabbajitā pi eke,
atho gahaṭṭhā gharam āvasantā;
appossukko paraputtesu hutvā
eko care [43]
10. Oropayitvā gihivyañjanāni,
saṃsīnapatto yathā kovilāro,
chetvāna viro gihibandhanāni
eko care [44]
11. Sace labhetha nipakaṃ sahāyaṃ
saddhimcaram sādhuviḥārī' dhīraṃ,
abhibhuyya sabbāni parissayāni,
careyya ten' attamano satimā. [45]
12. No ce labhetha nipakaṃ sahāyaṃ
saddhimcaram sādhuviḥārī' dhīraṃ,
rājā va raṭṭhaṃ vijitam pahāya
eko care [46]

Alone! As wild things—free
to range the woodlands—browse
at pleasure where they will,
the sage seeks liberty.

[39]

Alone! For, fellows give
a man no peace,—in hall,
on walks, or tours for alms.
No liberty dwells there.

[40]

Alone! Though fellowship
bring mirth, and children joy,
beware the severance
affection's ties entail.

[41]

Alone! To all the world
—north, south, and east and west—
be kindly; take what comes;
brave perils manfully.

[42]

Alone! Grumbling is rife
with homeless Almsmen, as
in worldlings' homes.—Fret not
o'er sons of other men.

[43]

Alone! As trees shed leaves,
discard the layman's garb
and sever dauntlessly
all ties to house and home.

[44]

Alone! If fortune grant
a trusty, staunch, true friend,
with him brave dangers, cleave
to him,—with mindfulness.

[45]

If fortune grant thee no
such friend, then, like a king
who quits a conquered realm,
go forth and live—alone.

[46]

13. Addhā pasaṁsāma sahāyasampadaṁ;
 seṭṭhā samā sevittabbā sahāyā;
 ete aladdhā anavajjabhojī
 eko care [47]
14. Disvā suvaṇṇassa pabhassarāni
 kammāraputtēna suniṭṭhitāni
 saṁghaṭṭamānāni duve bhujasmim,
 eko care [48]
15. 'Evaṁ dutiyena sahā mam' assa
 vācābhilāpo abhisajjanā vā,—
 etaṁ bhayaṁ āyatiṁ pekkhamāno
 eko care [49]
16. Kāmā hi citrā madhurā manoramā
 virūparūpena mathenti cittam;
 ādinavaṁ kāmagaṇesu disvā
 eko care . . . [50]
17. 'Iti ca gaṇḍo ca upaddavo ca
 rogo ca sallaṇ ca bhayaṁ ca m' etaṁ,—
 etaṁ bhayaṁ kāmagaṇesu disvā,
 eko care [51]
18. Sītaṁ ca uṇhaṁ ca, khudaṁ, pipāsam,
 vātātape ḍaṁsasirimsape ca,
 sabbāni p'etāni abhisambhavitvā,
 eko care [52]
19. Nāgo va yūthāni vivajjayitvā
 saṁjātakhandho padumī uḷāro
 yathābhirantaṁ vihare araṇṇie,
 eko care [53]
20. Atṭhāna' taṁ saṁgaṇikāratassa
 yaṁ phassaye sāmayaikaṁ vimuttiṁ.
 Ādiccabandhussa vaco nisamma,
 eko care [54]

Prize comradeship! Choose out
equals, or better men.
But, if such fail, lead thou
a blameless life—alone.

[47]

Alone! A lesson learn
from bangles richly wrought,
which clash and jangle if
one wrist wears two at once;

[48]

Alone! In company
a squabble may arise
or angry jar; reflect
what troubles thus may come.

[49]

With varied winsome charm
pleasures seduce the heart;
their menace recognize
—and go thy way alone.

[50]

View pleasure as the plague,
as virus fraught with doom,
as fever's deadly dart;
—and go thy way alone.

[51]

Alone! Brave cold and heat,
thirst, hunger, wind and sun,
mosquitos, gnats, and snakes;
o'ercome them one and all.

[52]

As some huge elephant,
fair as the lotus, quits
the herd to dwell where'er
he will,—go forth alone.

[53]

No boon-companion wins
Release, e'en for a time.
Go forth alone,—as he,
the Sun's great kinsman, taught.

[54]

21. Diṭṭhivisūkāni upātivatto [55]
 patto niyāmaṃ paṭiladdhamaggo
 'uppannañāṇo 'mhi anaññāneyyo',
 eko care
22. Nillolupo nikkuho nippipāso [56]
 nimmakkho niddhantakasāvamoho
 nirāsayo sabbaloke bhavitvā,
 eko care
23. Pāpaṃ saḥāyaṃ parivajjayetha [57]
 anattadassiṃ visame niviṭṭhaṃ,
 sayāṃ na seve pasutaṃ pamattaṃ;
 eko care
24. Bahussutaṃ dhammadharaṃ bhajetha [58]
 mittāṃ uḷāraṃ paṭibhānavantaṃ;
 aññāya atthāni, vineyya kankhaṃ,
 eko care
25. Khiddaṃ ratim kāmasukhaṃ ca loka [59]
 analankarivā anapekkhamāno,
 vibhūsanattāhānā virato, saccavādī,
 eko care
26. Puttaṃ ca dāraṃ pitaraṃ ca mātaraṃ [60]
 dhanāni dhaññāni ca bandhavāni ca
 hitvāna kāmāni yathodhikāni,
 eko care
27. 'Sango eso, parittam ettha sokhyaṃ, [61]
 appassādo, dukkham ettha bhiyyo,
 gaḷo eso' iti ñatvā mutimā,
 eko care
28. Sandālayitvāna sarīyojanāni [62]
 jālaṃ va bhetvā salil' ambucārī,
 aggīva daḍḍhaṃ anivattamāno,
 eko care

Above hypotheses,
in certitude assured,
tread thou the Way alone,
to claim full insight won
and pupilage outgrown.

[55]

Alone! *Sans* wants, deceit,
hopes, jealousy! Unsmirched
by fond illusions! Tied
to naught the world can show!

[56]

Go forth alone! Discard
evil associates
who prompt no good, whose bent
is wrong. Avoid all such
as chop and change, or flag.

[57]

Go forth alone. Secure
a friend of garnered lore,
of shining parts and worth,
to teach thee where Weal dwells
and clear thy mind of doubts.

[58]

Alone! Leave jollity,
pleasure and mundane joys;
avoid display; speak truth.

[59]

Alone! Quit wife and child;
quit parents, wealth and gear,
and kinsfolk,—all life's joys.

[60]

Go forth alone! Be sure
pleasure's a chain, brief bliss,
short rapture, long-drawn woe,
a baited hook for fools.

[61]

Alone! Thy fetters burst,
—as fish the net; be like
the forest fires which ne'er
revisit burnt-out scenes.

[62]

29. Okkhittacakkhu, na ca pādalolo, [63]
guttindriyo, rakkhitamānasāno,
anavassuto, aparīḍayhamāno,
eko care
30. Ohārayitvā gihivyañjanāni, [64]
sañchinnapatto yathā pārīchatto,
kāśāyavattho abhinikkhamitvā,
eko care
31. Rasesu gedhaṃ akaraṃ, alolo, [65]
anaññāposī, sapadānacārī,
kule kule appaṭibaddhacitto,
eko care
32. Pahāya pañc' āvaraṇāni cetaso [66]
upakkilese vyapanujja sabbe,
anissito, chetvā sinehadosaṃ,
eko care
33. Vipīṭṭhikatvāna sukhaṃ dukhaṃ ca [67]
pubbe va ca somanassadomanassaṃ,
laddhān' upekhaṃ samathaṃ visuddhaṃ,
eko care
34. Āraddhaviṇṇaṃ paramatthapattiyā, [68]
alīnacitto, akusītavutti,
dalhanikkamo thāmaḷāpappanno,
eko care
35. Paṭisallāpaṃ jhānaṃ ariñcamāno, [69]
dhammesu niccaṃ anudhammacārī,
ādinavaṃ sammāsītā bhavesu,
eko care
36. Taṇhakkhayaṃ patthayaṃ appamatto [70]
anelamūgo sutavā satimā
saṃkhātadhammo niyato padhānavā,
eko care

Alone! With downcast eyes,
not loitering, keep watch
o'er ev'ry faculty;
keep thoughts in leash; let naught
invade, let naught inflame.

[63]

Alone! As trees shed leaves,
discard the layman's garb,
and, clad in orange robes,
relinquish house and home.

[64]

Alone! Let dainty fare
seduce thee not. With none
to keep besides thyself,
seek alms from door to door,
making no favourites.

[65]

Alone! Divest thyself
of all Five Hindrances;
banish the Lesser Faults;
shed likes and dislikes; live
th' emancipated life.

[66]

Alone! Leave weal and woe;
leave whilom joys and griefs;
ensue the holy calm
of poised indifference.

[67]

Alone! Strive hard to win
the goal of goals,—with heart
unfetter'd, strenuous,
stout, persevering, staunch.

[68]

Alone! To lonely thought
and reverie hold fast;
in all thy mental states
the Doctrine keep, alive
to transmigration's doom.

[69]

Alone! Toil on to quench
cravings by watchfulness,
by lore, by mindfulness,
by Doctrine's mastery,
by certitude, and grip.

[70]

37. Siho va saddesu asantasanto,
vāto va jālamhi asajjamāno,
padumaṃ va toyena alippamāno,
eko care [71]
38. Siho yathā dāṭhabali pasayha
rājā migānaṃ abhibhuyyacārī,
sevetha pantāni senāsānāni;
eko care [72]
39. Mettaṃ upekhaṃ karuṇaṃ vimuttiṃ
āsevamāno muditaṃ ca kāle,
sabbena lokena avirujjhamāno,
eko care [73]
40. Rāgaṃ ca dosaṃ ca pahāya mohaṃ,
sandālayitvāna saṃyojanāni,
asantaṃ jīvitaṃ khayaṃhi,
eko care [74]
41. 'Bhajanti sevanti ca kāraṇatthā,
nikkāraṇā dullabhā ajja mittā,
attaṭṭhapaññā asuci manussā,'—
eko care khaggavisāṇakappo. [75]

4. KASIBHĀRADVĀJASUTTA

Evam me sutarū. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Magadhese viharati Dakkhiṇā-girismiṃ Ekaṇālāyaṃ brāhmaṇagāme. Tena kho pana samayena Kasibhārad-vājassa brāhmaṇassa pañcamattāni nangalasatāni payuttāni honti vappakāle. Atha kho Bhagavā, pubbaṇhasamayaṃ nivāsetvā pattacīvaraṃ ādāya, yena Kasibhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa kammanto ten' upasaṃkami. Tena kho pana samayena Kasibhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa parivesanā vattati. Atha kho Bhagavā yena parivesanā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā ekamantaṃ aṭṭhāsi. Addasā kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṃ piṇḍāya ṭhitāṃ, disvāna Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Ahaṃ kho, samaṇa, kasāmi ca vapāmi ca, kasitvā ca vāpitvā ca bhuñjāmi; tvam pi, samaṇa, kasassu ca vapassu ca, kasitvā ca vāpitvā ca bhuñjassūti.

Alone! Be undismayed
 (as lions are) by sounds,
 uncaged as whistling wind,
 unspotted by the world
 as lotus by the wave. [71]

Alone! Dwell far aloof,
 —as, after spring and kill,
 the strong-fanged king of beasts
 seeks out a distant lair. [72]

Alone! In season due
 practise goodwill, and poise,
 pity, and kindliness,
 thereby to win Release,
 unthwarted by the world. [73]

Alone! Oust passion, hate,
 illusion! Burst all bonds!
 Face death intrepidly! [74]

Alone! Self-seeking sways
 friends nowadays;—few bring
 disinterested hearts.
 Mankind is foul, but quick
 to compass private ends. [75]

Sutta 4. *Bhāradvāja, the Franklin*

Thus have I heard. Once the Lord was living among the Magadha folk at Dakkhiṇā-giri in the brahmin village of Eka-Nālā, at a time when the brahmin Kasi-Bhāradvāja's five hundred ploughs were harnessed for the sowing. In the morning early, duly robed and bowl in hand, the Lord went to where the brahmin was busy, at an hour when a meal was forward; and stood there to one side. Observing him standing there for alms, the brahmin said:—Before I eat, I plough and sow, anchorite; and you too should plough and sow before you eat.

Aham pi kho, brāhmaṇa, kasāmi ca vapāmi ca, kasitvā ca vapitvā ca bhuñjāmīti.

Na kho pana mayam passāma bhoto Gotamassa yugam vā nangalam vā phalam vā pācanam vā balivadde vā; atha ca pana bhavam Gotamo evam āha: Aham pi kho, brāhmaṇa, kasāmi ca vapāmi ca, kasitvā ca vapitvā ca bhuñjāmīti.

Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantam gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Kassako paṭijānāsi, na ca passāma te kasim. [76]
Kasin no pucchito brūhi yathā jānemu te kasim.

2. Saddhā bījam, tapo vuṭṭhi, paññā me yuganangalam, [77]
hiri isā, mano yottam, sati me phālapācanam.

3. Kāyagutto, vacīgutto, āhāre udare yato, [78]
saccam karomi niddānam, soraccam me pamocanam.

4. Viriyam me dhuradhorayham, yogakkhemādhivāhanam [79]
gacchati anivattantam, yattha gantvā na socati.

5. Evam esā kasī kaṭṭhā; sā hoti amatapphalā; [80]
etam kasim kasitvāna sabbadukkhā pamuccatīti.

Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo mahatiyā kamsapātiyā pāyāsam vaḍḍhetvā Bhagavato upanāmesi: Bhuñjatu bhavam Gotamo pāyāsam, kassako bhavam, yam hi bhavam Gotamo amatapphalam kasim kasatīti

6. Gāthābhigītam me abhojaneyyam; [81]
sampassatam, brāhmaṇa, n' esa dhammo;
gāthābhigītam panudanti buddhā.
Dhamme satī, brāhmaṇa, vuttir esā.

7. Aññena ca kevalinam mahesim [82]
khiṇāsavam kukkucavūpasantam
annena pānena upaṭṭhahassu;
khetam hi tam puññapekhasa hotīti.

Atha kassa cāham, bho Gotama, imam pāyāsam dammīti?

Na kho 'han tam, brāhmaṇa, passāmi sadevake loke samārake sabrahmake sassamaṇabrāhmaṇiyā pajāya sadevamanussāya yassa so pāyāso bhutto sammāpariṇāmam gaccheyya aññatra Tathāgatassa vā Tathāgatasāvakassa

I too, brahmin, do plough and do sow before I eat.

We fail, however, to see the worthy Gotama's yoke, or plough, or plough-share, or goad, or ox-team,—albeit he asserts that he ploughs and sows before he eats.

Thereupon, the brahmin addressed the Lord in this stanza:

You claim to be a tiller, though we see [76]
none of your tillage. Tell us how you till;
for of your tilling we would fain hear more.

The Lord: My seed is faith; austerity of life [77]
my rain; wisdom my yoke and plough; my pole
is fear to err,—with thought to strap the yoke,
and mindfulness for ploughshare and the goad.

Watchful o'er word and deed, and temperate [78]
in diet, I make insight weed my crop,
nor rest till final bliss is harvested.

Effort is my stout ox, which turns not back [79]
at headlands;—straight to Peace he bears me on,
to that last bourne where anguish is no more.

Thus have I tilled, with Deathlessness for crop. [80]
And whoso tills as I, is freed from Ills.

Hereon, the brahmin served up milk-rice on a great bronze dish and offered it to the Lord, saying—Eat this, Gotama; a tiller indeed art thou, in that thou tillest a crop that is Deathless.

The Lord: I take no chanter's fee. [81]
—Seers countenance it not;
th' Enlighten'd scout such fees;
and while this Doctrine lasts,
this practice must hold good.

Provide with other fare [82]
a sage of holy calm,
consummate, Cankerless;
merit to reap,—sow *there*.

To whom then am I to give this, Gotama?

Brahmin, in the whole wide world of gods, Māras, and Brahmās, I see no one among anchorites and brahmins, gods and men, who could digest this food except a Truth-finder or the disciple of a Truth-finder. So either throw

vā. Tena hi tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, taṃ pāyāsaṃ appaharite vā chaḍḍehi appāṇake vā udae opilāpehīti.

Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo taṃ pāyāsaṃ appāṇake udae opilāpesi. Atha kho so pāyāso udae pakkhitto ciccīṭayati cīcīṭayati sandhūpāyati sampadhūpāyati. Seyyathāpi nāma phālo divasasantatto udae pakkhitto ciccīṭayati cīcīṭayati sandhūpāyati sampadhūpāyati, evam eva so pāyāso udae pakkhitto ciccīṭayati . . . sampadhūpāyati. Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo saṃviggo lomahatṭhajāto yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamtivā Bhagavato pādesu sirasā nipatitvā Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama; abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama! Seyyathāpi, bho Gotama, nikkujjitaṃ vā ukkujjeyya, paṭicchannaṃ vā vivareyya, mūlhassa vā maggaṃ ācikkheyya, andhakāre vā telapajjotaṃ dhāreyya: 'cakkhumanto rūpāni dakkhīntīti',—evam evaṃ bhotā Gotamena anekapariyāyena dhammo pakāsito. Esāhaṃ bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ gacchāmi dhammaṃ ca bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca; labheyyāhaṃ bhoto Gotamassa santike pabbajjaṃ, labheyyaṃ upasampadan ti. Alattha kho Kasi-Bhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato santike pabbajjaṃ, alattha upasampadaṃ. Acirūpasampanno kho paṇ' āyasmā Bhāradvājo eko vūpakaṭṭho appamatto ātāpi pahitatto viharanto na-cirass' eva yass' atthāya kulaputtā samma-d-eva agārasmā anagāriyaṃ pabbajanti tad anuttaraṃ brahmacariya-pariyosānaṃ diṭṭhe va dhamme sayam abhiññā sacchikatvā upasampajja vihāsi; 'khīṇā jāti, vusitaṃ brahmacariyaṃ, kataṃ karaṇiyaṃ, nāparaṃ itthattāyāti' abbhāññāsi. Aññātaro ca kho paṇ' āyasmā Bhāradvājo arahataṃ ahosi.

5. CUNDASUTTA

1. Pucchāmi Muninṃ pahūtapaññaṃ (*iti Cundo kammāraputto*) [83]

Buddhaṃ dhammassāmiṃ vītaṇhaṃ

dīpaduttamaṃ sārathīnaṃ pavaraṃ:

Kati loke samaṇā? Tad ingha brūhi.

2. Caturo samaṇā; na pañcam' atthi.

(*Cundāti Bhagavā*) [84]

Te te āvikaromi sakkhipuṭṭho:

—Maggajino, Maggadesako ca,

Magge jīvati, yo ca Maggadūsi.

it away where little grass grows, or else fling it into water where there are no living creatures.

Thereupon, into water where there were no living creatures the brahmin flung that milk-rice,—which hissed and sputtered, smoked and steamed, just like a ploughshare that has lain broiling in the sun.

Aghast, and with every hair on his body standing erect, the brahmin went over to the Lord, and, bowing his head at the Lord's feet, cried:—Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again what had fallen down, or reveal what had been hidden away, or tell a man who had gone astray which was his way, or bring a lamp into darkness so that those with eyes to see might see the things about them,—even so, in many ways has Gotama made his Doctrine clear! To the reverend Gotama I come for refuge and to his Doctrine and to his Community. Be it mine to receive admission and confirmation at the hands of the Lord! So the brahmin Kasi-Bhāradvāja was admitted and confirmed as an almsman of the Lord. Nor was it long after his confirmation before the Reverend Bhāradvāja, dwelling alone and aloof, strenuous, ardent and purged of self, won after no great time that prize in quest of which young men go forth from home to homelessness as Pilgrims, that prize of prizes which crowns the higher life,—even this did he think out for himself, realize and attain, and in this did he dwell here and now, convinced that for him rebirth was no more, that he had lived the highest life, that his task was done, and that now there was no more left of what he had been. So the Reverend Bhāradvāja was numbered among the Arahats.

Sutta 5. Cunda, the Smith

Cunda: I ask th' Enlightened Sage [83]
of boundless lore, the Lord
of Doctrine, craving-free,
foremost of all mankind,
man's matchless charioteer,—
I ask how many kinds
of anchorites there are?

The Lord: Four kinds there are,—no fifth; [84]
and here in order are
the four: Way-master first;
Way-preacher next; then he
that treads the Way; and fourth
the man that fouls the Way.

3. Kaṃ 'Maggajinaṃ' vadanti buddhā? (*iti Cundo kammāraputto*) [85]
 'Maggajjhāyī' kathaṃ atulyo hoti?
 'Magge jīvati' me brūhi puṭṭho.
 Atha me āvikaroḥi 'Maggadūsiṃ'.
4. Yo tiṇṇakathamkatho visallo, [86]
 nibbānābhirato anānugiddho,
 lokassa sadevakassa netā,
 tādiṃ 'Maggajinaṃ' vadanti buddhā.
5. 'Paramaṃ, paramaṃ' ti yo 'dha ñatvā [87]
 akkhāti vibhajati idh' eva Dhammaṃ,
 taṃ kaṃkhacchidaṃ muniṃ anejaṃ
 dutiyaṃ bhikkhunam āhu 'Maggadesiṃ'.
6. Yo dhammapade sudesite [88]
 magge jīvati saṃnyato satimā
 anavajjapadāni sevamāno,
 tatiyaṃ bhikkhunam āhu 'Maggajiviṃ'.
7. Chadanaṃ katvāna subbatānaṃ [89]
 pakkhandi kuladūsako pagabbho
 māyāvi asaṃnyato palāpo
 patirūpena caraṃ,—sa 'Maggadūsi'.
8. Ete ca paṭivijjhi yo gahaṭṭho [90]
 sutavā ariyasāvako sapañño
 'sabbe ne tādīsā' ti ñatvā,
 iti disvā na hāpeti tassa saddhā.
 Kathaṃ hi duṭṭhena asampaduṭṭhaṃ
 suddhaṃ asuddhena samaṃ kareyya?

6. PARĀBHAVASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho aññatarā devatā abhikkantāya rattiyaṃ abhikkantavaṇṇā kevalakappaṃ Jetavanaṃ obhāsetvā yena Bhagavā ten'

Cunda: Whom do th' Enlightened call
Way-master? What inspires
the Way's rapt votary?
Who treads—who fouls—the Way?

[85]

The Lord: The man who sheds all doubt
and, free from rankling barbs,
Nirvāna's bliss enjoys;
who, craving nothing, guides
the world of gods and men;
—him seers 'Way-master' call.

[86]

'Way-preacher' second ranks
among the Almsmen four.
Convinced perfection's here,
he preaches and expounds
the Doctrine, solving doubts,
—a sage from cravings purged.

[87]

'Way-farer' ranks as third.
The Path, in texts revealed,
he treads in temperance,
in mindfulness, in zeal,
and blamelessness of life.

[88]

'Way-fouler' counterfeits
the good, and homes defiles,
—a reckless ruffian,
a base, low cozeners.

[89]

If taught and grounded well,
the saints' lay-hearer knows
these four divergent types,
with faith not undermined.
For, how could he confuse
impure with pure, or take
a rascal for a saint?

[90]

Sutta 6. Failures

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure-grounds, as night was passing away, a deity of surpassing beauty came to the Lord, flooding the whole grove with radiance,

upasaṁkami upasaṁkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṁ aṭṭhāsi.
Ekamantaṁ thitā kho sā devatā Bhagavantam gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Parābhavantaṁ purisaṁ mayam pucchāma Gotamaṁ, [91]
Bhagavantaṁ puttḥum āgama: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
2. Suvijāno bhavaṁ hoti, suvijāno parābhavo; [92]
—dhammakāmo bhavaṁ hoti, dhammadessī parābhavo.
3. Iti h' etaṁ vijānāma; paṭhamo so parābhavo. [93]
Dutiyaṁ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
4. Asant' assa piyā honti; sante na kurute piyaṁ; [94]
asataṁ dhammaṁ roceti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṁ.
5. Iti h' etaṁ vijānāma; dutiyo so parābhavo. [95]
Tatiyaṁ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
6. Niddāsīli sabhāsīli anuṭṭhātā ca yo naro [96]
alaso kodhapaññāno;—tam parābhavato mukhaṁ.
7. Iti h' etaṁ vijānāma; tatiyo so parābhavo. [97]
Catutthaṁ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
8. Yo mātaraṁ vā pitaraṁ vā jīṇakaṁ gatayobbanam [98]
pahu santo na bharati;—tam parābhavato mukhaṁ.
9. Iti h' etaṁ vijānāma; catuttho so parābhavo. [99]
Pañcamaṁ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
10. Yo brāhmaṇaṁ vā samaṇaṁ vā aññaṁ vā pi vaṇibbakaṁ [100]
musāvādena vañceti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṁ.
11. Iti h' etaṁ vijānāma; pañcama so parābhavo. [101]
Chaṭṭhamaṁ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
12. Pahūtavitto puriso sahirāñño sabhojano [102]
eko bhuñjati sādūni;—tam parābhavato mukhaṁ.
13. Iti h' etaṁ vijānāma; chaṭṭhama so parābhavo. [103]
Sattamaṁ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
14. Jātitthaddho dhanatthaddho gottatthaddho ca yo naro [104]
saṁ nātiṁ atimaññeti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṁ.
15. Iti h' etaṁ vijānāma; sattama so parābhavo. [105]
Aṭṭhamaṁ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṁ?
16. Itthidhutto surādhutto akkhadhutto ca yo naro [106]
laddhaṁ laddhaṁ vināseti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṁ.

and, after salutation meet, stood to one side, addressing the Lord in these stanzas :—

Concerning him who fails, I come to ask [91]
of Gotama from what that failure springs.

The Lord: Both worth and failure can be quickly seen: [92]
—worth still aspires, but failure hates the light.

The deity: Thus much I see;—first failure stands out plain. [93]
Now tell me whence the second failure comes.

The Lord: The second failure's he who loves the bad, [94]
courts not the good, and favours bad men's creeds.

The deity: Thus much I see;—the second failure's plain. [95]
Now tell me whence the further failures come.

The Lord: Third comes the critic, lazy, indolent, [96]
and sleek; his constant carping marks him out.

Fourth failure's he who, well-to-do himself, [97-8]
supports not aged parents, past their prime.

Fifth failure's he who brahmins guides astray, [99-100]
or anchorites, or other wayfarers.

Sixth comes the wealthy man, with pelf and gear, [101-2]
who keeps his dainties strictly to himself.

He seventh comes whom birth or wealth or clan [103-4]
inflates, till he looks down on kith and kin.

The eighth's the rake who squanders all he gets, [105-6]
fast as it comes, on women, drink, and dice.

17. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; aṭṭhamo so parābhavo. [107]
Navamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
18. Sehi dārehi asantuṭṭho vesiyāsu padissati, [108]
dissati paradāresu;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
19. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; navamo so parābhavo. [109]
Dasamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
20. Atītayobbano poso āneti timbarutthaniṃ; [110]
tassā issā na supati;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
21. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; dasamo so parābhavo. [111]
Ekādasamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
22. Itthisoṇḍim vikiraṇiṃ, purisaṃ vā pi tādisaṃ, [112]
issariyasmiṃ tḥāpeti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
23. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; ekādasamo so parābhavo. [113]
Dvādasamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
24. Appabhogo mahātaṇho khattiye jāyate kule; [114]
so 'dha rajjaṃ patthayati;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
25. Ete parābhave loke paṇḍito samavekkhiya [115]
ariyo dassanasampanno, sa lokaṃ bhajate sivaṃ.

7. VASALASUTTA

Evam me suttaṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvattiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho Bhagavā pubbaṇhasamayaṃ nivāsetvā pattacivaram ādāya Sāvattiṃ piṇḍāya pāvisi. Tena kho pana samayena Aggikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa nivesane aggi pajjalito hoti, āhuti pagga-hitā. Atha kho Bhagavā Sāvattiyaṃ sapadānaṃ piṇḍāya caramāno yena Aggikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa nivasanāṃ ten' upasaṃkami. Addasā kho Aggikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṃ dūrato va āgacchantāṃ disvāna Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: 'Tatr' eva, muṇḍaka, tatr' eva, samaṇaka, tatr' eva, vasalaka, tiṭṭhāhīti. Evaṃ vutte Bhagavā Aggikabhāradvājaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ etad avoca: Jānāsi pana tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, vasalaṃ vā vasalakaraṇe vā dhamme ti?

Na khvāhaṃ, bho Gotama, jānāmi vasalaṃ vā vasalakaraṇe vā dhamme. Sādhū me bhavaṃ Gotamo tathā dhammaṃ desetu yathāhaṃ jāneyyaṃ vasalaṃ vā vasalakaraṇe vā dhamme ti.

Tena hi, brāhmaṇa, suṇāhi, sādhukaṃ manasikarohi; bhāssissāmīti.

Evam bho ti kho Aggikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato paccassosi.

Ninth comes the lecher who, not satisfied
with his own wives, is seen about with whores,
or caught in dalliance with others' wives.

[107-8]

Tenth comes the dotard who, in failing age,
a maiden takes to wife, with ripe round breasts,
so fair he cannot sleep for jealousy.

[109-10]

Eleventh failure's he who puts in charge
a drunken, spendthrift rake,—of either sex.

[111-12]

Twelfth comes th' ambitious noble, lacking means,
who fondly schemes to get himself made king.

[113-14]

The noble sage, whose penetrating eye
these failures scans, has won the realms of bliss.

[115]

Sutta 7. The Wastrel

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying in Sāvattḥī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure-ground, early one morning, duly robed and bowl in hand, he went into the city for alms, at an hour when there was the sacrificial fire lighted in the dwelling of the brahmin Aggika-Bhāradvāja; and the oblation was elevated. In the course of his house-to-house visitations, the Lord approached the brahmin's dwelling, but was seen some way off by the brahmin, who shouted :—Stop where you are, shaveling! Stop where you are, you wretched anchorite! Stop where you are, wastrel!

Said the Lord to the brahmin :—Do you understand, brahmin, what a 'wastrel' is, or what outlooks make a 'wastrel'?

No, replied the brahmin, I do not understand what a 'wastrel' is or what outlooks make a 'wastrel'. Be so good, Gotama, as to explain it, for my information.

Give ear then, brahmin, and pay attention; I will speak.

Certainly, said the brahmin in assent.

Bhagavā etad avoca:

1. Kodhano upanāhī ca pāpamakkhī ca yo naro
vipannaditthi māyāvī, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [116]
2. Ekajaṃ vā dijaṃ vā pi yo 'dha pāṇaṃ vihiṃsati,
yassa pāṇe dayā na 'tthi, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [117]
3. Yo hanti parirundhati gāmāni nigamāni ca
niggāhako samaññāto, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [118]
4. Gāme vā yadi vāraññe yaṃ paresaṃ mamāyitaṃ
theyyā adinnaṃ ādiyati, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [119]
5. Yo have iṇaṃ ādāya cujjaṃāno palāyati
'na hi te iṇaṃ atthīti', taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [120]
6. Yo ve kiñcikkhakamyatā panthasmiṃ vajataṃ janāṃ
hantvā kiñcikkham ādeti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [121]
7. Yo attahetu parahetu dhanahetu ca yo naro
sakkhi puṭṭho musā brūti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [122]
8. Yo ñātinaṃ sakhānaṃ vā dāresu patidissati
sahasā sampiyena vā, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [123]
9. Yo mātaraṃ vā pitaraṃ vā jipṇakaṃ gatayobbanāṃ
pahu santo na bharati, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [124]
10. Yo mātaraṃ vā pitaraṃ vā bhātaraṃ bhaginim sasuraṃ
hanti roseti vācāya, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [125]
11. Yo atthaṃ pucchito santo anattam anusāsati,
paṭicchannena manteti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [126]
12. Yo katvā pāpakaṃ kammaṃ 'mā maṃ jaññā' ti icchati,
yo paṭicchannakammanto, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [127]
13. Yo ve parakulaṃ gantvā bhutvāna sucibhojanaṃ
āgataṃ na paṭipūjeti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [128]
14. Yo brāhmaṇaṃ vā samaṇaṃ vā aññaṃ vāpi vaṇibbakaṃ
musāvādena vañceti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [129]
15. Yo brāhmaṇaṃ vā samaṇaṃ vā bhattakāle upaṭṭhite
roseti vācā, na ca deti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [130]
16. Asataṃ yo 'dha pabrūti mohena paliguṇṭhito
kiñcikkham nijigimsāno, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [131]
17. Yo c' attānaṃ samukkaṃse paraṃ ca-m-avajānāti,
nihīno sena mānena, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [132]

The Lord began:—

- Be he as 'wastrel' known, who harbours ire and rancour, slander, error, and deceit. [116]
- The wastrel's he who injures living things (or beast or bird), and pities naught that lives. [117]
- The wastrel harries and beleaguers folk in town and village,—where he's called a scourge. [118]
- The wastrel steals, in village or the waste, whate'er he covets of another's goods. [119]
- The wastrel, pressed to pay up what he owes, denies a debt is owing and absconds. [120]
- The wastrel, coveting some trifle, slays a peaceful trav'ler for that trifle's sake. [121]
- The wastrel bears false witness in a suit, to help himself or others, or for cash. [122]
- By force, or with consent, the wastrel holds commerce with wives of kinsmen or of friends. [123]
- The wastrel's he who, well-to-do himself, supports not aged parents, past their prime. [124]
- The wastrel strikes, and goads with taunts, his sire, his mother, brother, sister, mother-in-law. [125]
- The wastrel, asked for counsel, counsels wrong and clokes pronouncements in obscurities. [126]
- The wastrel hopes his villainies will not be known as his, and privily proceeds. [127]
- The wastrel gladly shares another's feast, but, when his host calls, offers no return. [128]
- The wastrel's he who brahmins guides astray, or anchorites, or other travellers. [129]
- At dinner-time, the wastrel greets with jeers—not alms—a brahmin or an anchorite. [130]
- The wastrel, greedy for a penny fee, tells fortunes,—in abysmal ignorance. [131]
- Debased by overweening arrogance, the wastrel lauds himself, runs others down. [132]

18. Rosako kadariyo ca pāpiccho maccharī saṭho
ahirako anottāpī, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [133]
19. Yo Buddhāṃ paribhāsati atha vā tassa sāvakam,
paribbājam gahaṭṭham vā, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [134]
20. Yo ve anarahā santo araham paṭijānati,
coro sabrahmake loke, esa kho vasalādhamo.
—Ete kho 'vasalā' vuttā, mayā vo ye pakāsītā. [135]
-
21. Na jaccā 'vasalo' hoti;—na jaccā hoti brāhmaṇo;
kammanā 'vasalo' hoti, kammanā hoti brāhmaṇo. [136]
22. Tad amināpi jānātha yathā me 'daṃ nidassanam:
Caṇḍālaputto sopāko Mātango iti vissuto. [137]
23. So yasaṃ paramaṃ patto Mātango yaṃ sudullabham;
āgañchurū tass' upaṭṭhānam khattiyā brāhmaṇā bahū. [138]
24. So devayānam āruya virajam so mahāpatham
kāmarāgaṃ virājetvā brahmalokūpago ahu;
—na taṃ jāti nivāresi brahmalokūpapattiyā. [139]
25. Ajjhāyakakule jātā brāhmaṇā mantabandhavā
te ca pāpesu kammesu abhiñham upadissare, [140]
26. diṭṭhe va dhamme gārayhā samparāye ca duggati;
na ne jāti nivāreti duggaccā garahāya vā. [141]
27. Na jaccā 'vasalo' hoti;—na jaccā hoti brāhmaṇo.
Kammanā 'vasalo' hoti, kammanā hoti brāhmaṇo ti. [142]

Evam vutte Aggikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantam etad avoca:—
Abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama; abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama! Seyyathāpi, bho
Gotama, nikkujjitaṃ vā ukkujjeyya, paṭicchannaṃ vā vivareyya, mūlhasa vā
maggaṃ ācikkheyya, andhakāre vā telapajjotaṃ dhāreyya 'cakkhumanto
rūpāni dakkhinti',—evam evaṃ bhotā Gotamena anekapariyāyena dhammo
pakāsito. Esāhaṃ bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ gacchāmi dhammaṃ ca
bhikkhusarāṇhaṃ ca; upāsakaṃ maṃ bhavaṃ Gotamo dhāretu ajjatagge
pānupetaṃ saraṇaṃ gataṃ.

The wastrel fosters strife, is miserly,
evil of aspirations, stingy, sly,
devoid of conscience, and unscrupulous. [133]

The wastrel's tongue defames th' Enlighten'd One,
or His disciples, mendicant or lay. [134]

Th' unsaintly wastrel, claiming saint to be,
is master-thief of all the universe,
and vilest wastrel of the wastrel crowd.
—All these are wastrels whom I have portrayed. [135]

No *birth* a wastrel—or a Brahmin—makes;
'tis *conduct* wastrels makes,—and Brahmins too. [136]

And here's an illustration proves my case:—
Low, dog-devouring outcastes had a son [137]

—Mātanga named—whose fame preëminent
drew crowds of brahmins and nobility. [138]

Upborne in heaven's chariot, he soared,
from passion purged, along the spotless path
till bliss was won; nor did his lowly birth
deny him entry into paradise! [139]

But there are brahmins born, in runes profound,
whose evil lives proclaim them what they are, [140]

whom men on earth condemn, whom doom awaits;
nor does their brahmin birth forbid, or bar,
their condemnation here, or future doom. [141]

No birth a wastrel—or a Brahmin—makes;
'tis conduct wastrels makes,—and Brahmins too. [142]

Hereupon, the brahmin Aggika-Bhāradvāja said to the Lord:—Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again what had been cast down, and reveal what had been hidden away, or tell a man who had gone astray which was his way, or bring a lamp into darkness so that those with eyes to see might see the things about them,—even so, in many ways, has Gotama made his Doctrine clear. To the reverend Gotama I come as my refuge, and to his Doctrine, and to his Community. I ask him to accept me as a follower who has found an abiding refuge from this day forth while life lasts.

8. METTASUTTA

1. Karaṇīyam atthakusalena [143]
 yan taṃ santaṃ padaṃ abhisamecca
 sakko uju ca sūjū ca
 suvaco c' assa mudū anati mānī,
2. santussako ca subhāro ca [144]
 appakicco ca sallahukavutti
 santindriyo ca nipako ca
 appagabbho kulesu ananugiddho;
3. na ca khuddaṃ samācare kiñci [145]
 yena viññū pare upavadeyyuṃ.
 Sukhino vā khemino hontu
 sabbe sattā bhavantu sukhittā,
4. ye keci pāṇabhūt' atthi [146]
 tasā vā thāvarā vā anavasesā
 dīghā vā ye mahantā vā
 majjhimā rassakā aṇukathulā,
5. diṭṭhā vā ye vā addiṭṭhā [147]
 ye ca dūre vasanti avidūre
 bhūtā vā sambhavesi vā,
 sabbe sattā bhavantu sukhittā.
6. Na paro paraṃ nikubbetha, [148]
 nātimaññetha katthaci naṃ kañci,
 vyārosanā paṭighasaññā
 nāññamaññassa dukkham iccheyya.
7. Mātā yathā niyaṃ puttāṃ [149]
 āyusā ekaputtam anurakkhe,
 evaṃ pi sabbabhūtesu
 mānasam bhāvaye aparimāṇaṃ.

Sutta 8. Goodwill

When Peace is won, th' adept
in welfare needs to prove
an able, upright man,
of gracious speech, kind mood,
devoid of arrogance,

[143]

an easy, grateful, guest,
—no busybody; wants
but few; sense-disciplined,
quick-witted, bluster-free,
never importunate;

[144]

and let him never stoop
to conduct mean or low,
evoking grave rebuke.
May creatures all abound

[145]

in weal and peace; may all
be blessed with peace always;
all creatures weak or strong,
all creatures great and small;

[146]

creatures unseen or seen,
dwelling afar or near,
born or awaiting birth,
—may all be blessed with peace!

[147]

Let none cajole or flout
his fellows anywhere;
let none wish others harm
in dudgeon or in hate.

[148]

Just as with her own life
a mother shields from hurt
her own, her only, child,—
let all-embracing thoughts
for all that lives be thine,

[149]

8. Mettañ ca sabbalokasmiñ
mānasam bhāvaye aparimāṇaṃ
uddham adho ca tiriyañ ca
asambādhañ averam asapattañ. [150]

9. Tiṭṭhañ carañ nisinno vā
sayāno vā yāvat' assa vigatamiddho
etañ satirañ adhiṭṭheyya,
—'brahmam etañ vihāram' idha-m-āhu. [151]

10. Diṭṭhiñ ca anupagamma
sīlavā dassanena sampanno
kāmesu vineyya gedhañ,
na hi jātu gabbhaseyyaṃ punar eti. [152]

9. HEMAVATASUTTA

1. Ajja pannaraso uposatho (iti Sātāgiro yakkho) [153]
divyā ratti upaṭṭhitā;
anomanāmañ Satthārañ
handā passāma Gotamañ.
2. Kacci mano supaṇihito (iti Hemavato yakkho) [154]
sabbabhūtesu tādino?
Kacci iṭṭhe aniṭṭhe ca
saṃkapp' assa vasikatā?
3. Mano c' assa supaṇihito (iti Sātāgiro yakkho) [155]
sabbabhūtesu tādino;
atho iṭṭhe aniṭṭhe ca
saṃkapp' assa vasikatā.
4. Kacci adinnañ nādiyati? (iti Hemavato yakkho) [156]
Kacci pañesu saṃyato?
Kacci ārā pamādamhā?
Kacci jhānañ na riñcati?
5. Na so adinnañ ādiyati, (iti Sātāgiro yakkho) [157]
atho pañesu saṃyato,
atho ārā pamādamhā
buddho jhānañ na riñcati.

—an all-embracing love
for all the universe
in all its heights and depths
and breadth, unstinted love,
unmarred by hate within,
not rousing enmity.

[150]

So, as you stand or walk,
or sit, or lie, reflect
with all your might on this;
—'tis deemed 'a state divine'.

[151]

Ignoring sophists' views,
the good—with insight filled,
and purged of appetite
for sensuous delights—
shall never see rebirth.

[152]

Sutta 9. The Himalayan Sprite

Sātāgira: It's mid-month sabbath, and a lovely night;
—to peerless Gotama let us repair.

[153]

Hemavata: Has he his thoughts in full control? Does such
control of thoughts extend to all that lives?
Come fair or foul, can he control his mind?

[154]

Sātāgira: He keeps his thoughts in full control, and this
control of thoughts extends to all that lives.
Come fair or foul, he still controls his mind.

[155]

Hemavata: Leaves he untouched what is not given him?
Keeps he his hands from harming living things?
Is he remiss in zeal or reverie?

[156]

Sātāgira: He leaves untouched what is not given him;
he keeps his hands from harm to living things;
he knows no sloth; he cleaves to reverie.

[157]

6. Kacci musā na bhaṇati? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [158]
 Kacci na khīṇavyappatho?
 Kacci vebhūtiyaṃ nāha?
 Kacci samphaṃ na bhāsati?
7. Musā ca so na bhaṇati, (*iti Sātāgiro yakkho*) [159]
 atho na khīṇavyappatho,
 atho vebhūtiyaṃ nāha,
 mantā atthaṃ so bhāsati.
8. Kacci na rajjati kāmesu? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [160]
 Kacci cittaṃ anāvilam?
 Kacci moham atikkanto?
 Kacci dhammesu cakkhumā?
9. Na so rajjati kāmesu, (*iti Sātāgiro yakkho*) [161]
 atho cittaṃ anāvilam,
 sabbamoham atikkanto
 buddho dhammesu cakkhumā.
10. Kacci vijjāya sampanno? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [162]
 Kacci saṃsuddhacāraṇo?
 Kacci 'ssa āsavā khīṇā?
 Kacci na 'tthi punabbhavo?
11. Vijjāya-m-eva sampanno, (*iti Sātāgiro yakkho*) [163]
 atho saṃsuddhacāraṇo;
 sabb' assa āsavā khīṇā;
 na 'tthi tassa punabbhavo.
- 11A. Sampannam munino cittaṃ kammanā vyappathena ca [163 A]
 vijjācaraṇasampannam dhammato nam pasaṃsasi.
- 11B. Sampannam munino cittaṃ kammanā vyappathena ca [163 B]
 vijjācaraṇasampannam dhammato anumodasi.
12. Sampannam munino cittaṃ kammanā vyappathena ca [164]
 vijjācaraṇasampannam handa passāma Gotamam.
13. Enijamgham kisaṃ viraṃ appāhāram alolupam [165]
 munim vanasmiṃ jhāyantaṃ ehi passāma Gotamam.
14. Siham v' ekacaram, nāgam kāmesu anapekhiṇam [166]
 upasamkamma pucchāma maccupāsā pamocanam.

Hemavata: Tell me; do falsehoods ever cross his lips?
Is he harsh-spoken or calumnious?
Or does his speech bewray frivolity? [158]

Sātāgira: Not so. No falsehoods ever cross his lips;
he's not harsh-spoken nor calumnious;
his edifying words proclaim him Seer. [159]

Hemavata: Is he unstained by sensuous delights?
Keeps he a heart unmarred? Has he o'ercome
illusion? Has his eye all outlooks gauged? [160]

Sātāgira: Unstained is he by sensuous delights;
he keeps a heart unmarred; illusion he
has overcome and ev'ry outlook gauged. [161]

Hemavata: Say, has he lore? Walks he in purity?
Are Cankers dead? Will he be born no more? [162]

Sātāgira: Yes, he has lore, and walks in purity;
Cankers are dead; he'll ne'er be born again. [163]

Hemavata: A sage indeed! His mind within is matched
by deed and utterance. Conviction prompts
your praise and gratitude to one who blends
insight and life in one consummate whole. [163A & B]

Sātāgira: Come let us visit this great Gotama. [164]

Hemavata: Yes, let us visit him,—that superman,
lean, self-denying, temperate, the seer
in lonesome forest rapt in reverie. [165]

Seek we this lion lone—this elephant
that heedeth none of pleasure's lures—and ask
the way to gain release from snares of death. [166]

15. Akkhātāraṃ pavattāraṃ sabbadhammāna' pāraguṃ
buddhaṃ verabhayātitāṃ mayaṃ pucchāma Gotamaṃ. [167]

16. Kismiṃ loko samuppanno? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [168]
Kismiṃ kubbati santhavaṃ?
Kissa loko upādāya?
Kismiṃ loko vihaññati?

17. Chassu loko samuppanno; (*Hemavatāti Bhagavā*) [169]
chassu kubbati santhavaṃ;
channam eva upādāya
chassu loko vihaññati.

18. Kataman taṃ upādānaṃ yattha loko vihaññati?
Niyyānaṃ pucchito brūhi: kathaṃ dukkhā pamuccati? [170]

19. Pañca kāmaguṇā loke manochaṭṭhā paveditā.
Ettha chandaṃ virājetvā evaṃ dukkhā pamuccati. [171]

20. Etaṃ lokassa niyyānaṃ akkhātāṃ vo yathātathaṃ.
Etaṃ vo aham akkhāmi: Evaṃ dukkhā pamuccati. [172]

21. Ko sū 'dha tarati oghaṃ? Ko 'dha tarati aṇṇavaṃ?
Appatiṭṭhe anālambe ko gambhīre na sīdati? [173]

22. Sabbadā silasampanno paññavā susamāhito
ajjhatacintī satimā oghaṃ tarati duttaraṃ. [174]

23. Virato kāmasaññāya, sabbasaṃyojanātigo,
nandībhavaparikkhīṇo,—so gambhīre na sīdati. [175]

24. Gambhīrapaññaṃ nīpuṇatthadassiṃ
akiñcanaṃ kāmabhava asattaṃ,
—taṃ passatha sabbadhi vippamuttaṃ
dibbe pathe kamamānaṃ mahesiṃ! [176]

25. Anomaṇāmaṃ nīpuṇatthadassiṃ
paññādaṃ kāmālaye asattaṃ,
—taṃ passatha sabbaviduṃ sumedhaṃ,
ariye pathe kamamānaṃ mahesiṃ! [177]

- Sātāgira* Let us together question Gotama,
and the great revealer and expounder, who
Hemavata: has gauged all outlooks, won Enlightenment,
and sloughed away transgression's haunting fears.
Hemavata How came the world to be? Whereby
to the Lord: gets it relation? What gives it support? [167]
Say, what assails the world? What brings it low? [168]
- The Lord*: From six things springs the world, and six [169]
give it relation; six give it support;
six bring the world to final overthrow.
- Hemavata*: What's this support? What overthrows the world? [170]
Expound Release, and how to end all Ills.
- The Lord*: Five worldly strands has pleasure; mind makes six. [171]
By scouting pleasure comes the end of Ills;
—just this affords Release from worldly toils; [172]
—just this, I testify, ends mortal Ills.
- Hemavata*: Who makes a crossing hence o'er Stream and Flood? [173]
Who braves the shoreless, bottomless abyss?
- The Lord*: Across the raging Flood in safety fares [174]
the virtuous, of comprehending mind,
serene, reflective, watchful evermore.
Th' abyss engulfs not him who—quit of gust [175]
for pleasure, quit of trammels, freed from bonds—
has stifled hankerings for life on life.
- Hemavata*: Mark, sirs, this mighty sage, [176]
—subtle, profound in lore,
stainless, detached from lusts
and dreams of life to come—
who treads the way divine
in full Deliverance.
Mark, sirs, this mighty sage, [177]
—subtle, as 'peerless' hailed,
giver of lore, immune
from grip of lusts, this seer
who understandeth all
and treads the Noble Way
in full Deliverance.

26. Suddiṭṭhaṃ vata no ajja suppbhātaṃ suhuṭṭhitaṃ [178]
yaṃ addasāma Sambuddhaṃ oghatiṇṇam anāsavaṃ.
27. Ime dasasatā yakkhā iddhimanto yasassino [179]
sabbe taṃ saraṇaṃ yanti; tvaṃ no Satthā anuttaro.
28. Te mayaṃ vicarissāma gāmaṃ gāmaṃ nagā nagaṃ, [180]
namassamānā Sambuddhaṃ, dhammassa ca sudhammataṃ.

10. ĀḶAVAKASUTTA

Evam me sutāṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā ĀḶaviyaṃ viharati ĀḶavakassa yakkhassa bhavane. Atha kho ĀḶavako yakkho yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkama, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama, samaṇāti. Sādh' āvuso ti Bhagavā nikkhami. Pavisā, samaṇāti. Sādh' āvuso ti Bhagavā pāvisi. Dutiyam pi kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama . . . pāvisi. Tatiyam pi kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama . . . pāvisi. Catuttham pi kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama, samaṇāti. Na khvāhan taṃ, āvuso, nikkhamissāmi; yaṃ te karaṇiyaṃ, taṃ karohīti. Pañhan taṃ, samaṇa, pucchissāmi. Sace me na vyākariassasi, cittaṃ vā te khipissāmi, hadayaṃ vā te phāḷessāmi, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipissāmi.

Na khvāhaṃ taṃ, āvuso, passāmi sadevake loke, sabrahmake, sassamaṇa-brāhmaṇiyā pajāya sadevamanussāya yo me cittaṃ vā khipeyya, hadayaṃ vā phāḷeyya, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipeyya. Api ca tvaṃ, āvuso, puccha yad ākankhasīti.

Atha kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Kiṃ sū 'dha vittaṃ purisassa seṭṭhaṃ? [181]
Kiṃ su suciṇṇaṃ sukham āvahāti?
Kiṃ su have sādutaraṃ rasānaṃ?
Kathaṃjiviraṃ jīvitaṃ āhu seṭṭhaṃ?
2. Saddh' idha vittaṃ purisassa seṭṭhaṃ; [182]
dhammo suciṇṇo sukham āvahāti;
saccaṃ have sādutaraṃ rasānaṃ;
paññājiviraṃ jīvitaṃ āhu seṭṭhaṃ.
3. Kathaṃ su taratī oghaṃ? Kathaṃ su taratī appavaṃ? [183]
Kathaṃ su dukkhaṃ acceti? Kathaṃ su parisujjhati?
4. Saddhāya taratī oghaṃ, appamādena appavaṃ; [184]
viriyena dukkhaṃ acceti, paññāya parisujjhati.

All the Sprites: A gracious sight, a vision glorious,
has dawned on us, whose eyes have seen the Lord
of all Enlightenment, from Cankers purged,
who o'er the Flood has crossed triumphantly. [178]

We thousand Sprites, most potent, far-renowned,
with thee seek refuge, guide beyond compare! [179]

Village to village, hill to hill, we'll laud [180]
the All-Enlighten'd and his matchless creed.

Sutta 10. The Woodland Sprite

Thus have I heard. Once the Lord was staying at Ālavi in the domain of the Woodland Sprite Ālavaka, who came to the Lord saying:—Come out, anchorite!

Yes, sir, replied the Lord, as out he came.

Get in again, anchorite, said the Sprite.

Yes, sir, replied the Lord, as in he went.

A second and a third time the same thing happened. But when the Sprite ordered the Lord out for the fourth time, the Lord replied:—No, I will not come out for you, sir. Do what you please.

I will ask you a question, anchorite. If you don't answer me, I will scare you out of your wits, or rive your heart, or fling you by the heels across the Ganges.

Sir, in all the wide world of gods, Māras, and Brahmās, I see no one among anchorites and brahmins, gods or men, who could do to me what you suggest. However, sir, ask what you will.

Hereon, the Sprite Ālavaka addressed the Lord in these stanzas:—

What forms a man's chief wealth? [181]

What leads men on to weal?

What taste excels the rest?

What life is deemed the best?

The Lord: Faith forms a man's chief wealth; [182]

the Doctrine leads to weal;

the sweetest taste is truth;

a life of wisdom's best.

Ālavaka: How cross the Surge? How cross the raging Flood? [183]

How shed besetting Ills? How cleanse the heart?

The Lord: The Surge is crossed by faith, the Flood by zeal; [184]

Effort sheds Ills; and Insight cleanses hearts.

5. Kathaṃ su labhate paññaṃ? Kathaṃ su vindate dhaṇaṃ? [185]
Kathaṃ su kittiṃ pappoti? Kathaṃ mittāni ganthati?
Asmā lokā paraṃ lokaṃ kathaṃ pecca na socati?
6. Saddahāno arahataṃ dhammaṃ nibbānapattiyaṃ [186]
sussūsā labhate paññaṃ appamatto vicakkaṇo;
7. patirūpakārī dhuravā uṭṭhātā vindate dhaṇaṃ; [187]
saccena kittiṃ pappoti; dadaṃ mittāni ganthati.
8. Yass' ete caturo dhammā saddhassa ghamesino [188]
—saccaṃ, dhammo, dhiti, cāgo—, sa ve pecca na socati.
9. Ingha aññe pi pucchassu puthū samaṇabrāhmaṇe [189]
yadi saccā damā cāgā khantyaṃ bhiyyo 'dha vijjati.
10. Kathaṃ nu dāni puccheyyaṃ puthū samaṇabrāhmaṇe? [190]
—So 'haṃ ajja pajānāmi yo attho samparāyiko.
11. Atthāya vata me Buddhō vāsāy' Ālavim āgamā. [191]
—So 'haṃ ajja pajānāmi yattha dinnāṃ mahapphalaṃ.
12. So ahaṃ vicarissāmi gāmaṃ gāmaṃ purā purā [192]
namassamāno Sambuddhaṃ dhammassa ca sudhammataṃ.

II. VIJAYASUTTA

1. Carāṃ vā yadi vā tiṭṭhaṃ, nisinno uda vā sayāṃ, [193]
sammiñjati pasāreti,—esā kāyassa iñjanā.
2. Aṭṭhinahārusaṃyutto tacamaṃsāvalepano [194]
chaviyā kāyo paṭicchanno yathābhūtaṃ na dissati.
3. Antapūro udarapūro yakapeḷassa vatthino [195]
hadayassa papphāsassa vakkassa pihakassa ca
4. siṃghāṇikāya khelassa sedassa ca medassa ca [196]
lohitassa lasikāya pittassa ca vasāya ca.

Ālavaka: How's Insight gained? And how are Riches found? [185]
 How comes renown? What knits affection's ties?
 How, after life on earth, shall sorrow cease?

The Lord: Insight is gained by trust that Arahats [186]
 hold saving doctrine; next, by diligent
 and close attention to their homilies;

he Riches finds whose life is in the right, [187]
 who bears his yoke with strenuous resolve.
 Through truth there comes renown; affection's ties
 are knit by ready generosity.

Equipped with truthfulness and Doctrine sound, [188]
 with steadfast heart and openhandedness,
 a man shall cease from sorrow after death.

Go ask of brahmins, ask of anchorites, [189]
 if aught on earth surpasses truthfulness,
 self-mastery, munificence, and ruth.

Ālavaka: Why should I ask them,—I who grasp to-day [190]
 wherein resides true welfare after life?

'Twas well for me there came to Ālavi [191]
 th' Enlighten'd Lord, since I have heard to-day
 where gifts bestowed ensure a harvest rich.

Village to village, town to town, I'll laud [192]
 the All-Enlighten'd and his matchless creed.

Sutta 11. Disillusion

If—walking, standing, sitting, lying-down— [193]
 a man draws in a limb or thrusts it forth,
 'tis but a movement of a mortal frame.

Whilst knit by bones and sinews, plaster'd o'er [194]
 by flesh and tissues, and encased in skin,
 the body does not pass for what it is.

Within, 'tis stuffed with entrails, liver, paunch, [195]
 with heart and bladder, kidneys, lungs, and spleen;

'tis stuffed with spittle, snot, and sweat, and blood, [196]
 joints' lubricating humours, bile, and fat;

5. Ath' assa navahi sotehi asuci savati sabbadā:
—akkhimhā akkhigūthako, kaṇṇamhā kaṇṇagūthako, [197]
6. siṅghāpikā ca nāsāto, mukhena vamat' ekadā [198]
pittam, semhañ ca vamatī, kāyāmhā sedajallikā;
7. ath' assa susiram' sīsam' matthalungassa pūritam. [199]
subhato nam' maññati bālo avijjāya purakkhato.
8. Yadā ca so mato seti uddhumāto vinīlako [200]
apaviddho susānasmim, anapekhā honti ñātayo,
9. khādanti nam' supāṇā ca sigālā ca, vakā kimī [201]
kākā gijjhā ca khādanti, ye c' aññe santi pāpayo.
10. Sutvāna Buddhavacanāṃ bhikkhu paññāṇavā idha, [202]
—so kho nam' parijānāti; yathābhūtam hi passati:
11. 'Yathā idam, tathā etam; yathā etam, tathā idam'; [203]
ajjhatañ ca bahiddhā ca kāye chandam virājaye.
12. Chandarāgaviratto so bhikkhu paññāṇavā idha [204]
ajjhagā amatañ santim nibbānapadam accutañ.
13. Dipādako 'yam asuci duggandho parihīrati [205]
nānākuṇapaparipūro vissavanto tato tato.
14. Etādisena kāyena yo maññe upāmetave [206]
parañ vā avajāneyya,—kim aññatra adassanā?

12. MUNISUTTA

1. Santhavāto bhayañ jātañ, nīketā jāyate rajo. [207]
Aniketam asanthavañ :—etañ ve munidassanañ.
2. Yo jātam ucchiṇṇa na ropayeyya, [208]
jāyantañ assa nānuppavecche,
tam āhu ekañ muninañ carantañ :—
'Addakkhi so santipadañ mahesi'.
3. Saṃkhāya vatthūni pamāya bijañ [209]
sineham assa nānuppavecche.
Sa ve muni jātikhayantadassī
takkañ pahāya na upeti saṃkharā.

- and evermore from its nine apertures
 nine several excretions issue forth, [197]
- as eyes and ears, with nostrils, mouth, and skin,
 exude abroad their foul discharge of filth, [198]
- and brains fill up the hollow cranium. [199]
 —‘A fine thing this!’ say fools, by error led.
- But, when the livid bloated corpse is flung [200]
 out on the charnel-ground, his kin heed not,
- while jackals, dogs, wolves, vultures, crows, and worms, [201]
 with other living things, devour his flesh.
- But th’ Almsman, here in Buddha’s teaching versed, [202]
 —he knows the body, sees its nature clear.
- So let the thought—‘this corpse was once as you, [203]
 and is as you will some day be’, dispel
 pride in the body from your heart and mind.
- For when such pride and passion pass away, [204]
 the Almsman, here in Buddha’s teaching versed,
 wins Deathless peace, Nirvāna’s changeless state.
- This noisome, two-legged body man parades, [205]
 —though inly putrid, though discharging filth.
- What is’t but blindness, for *that* body’s sake, [206]
 to plume one’s self or sneer at other men?

Sutta 12. The Sage

- From close association perils spring; [207]
 a home degrades. Clear-eyed, the sage concludes
 to have no home, and no associates.
- When ancient growths are dead, [208]
 When no fresh growths arise,
 the lonely sage is hailed
 ‘a seer who peace beholds’.
- Weigh causes; kill off germs, [209]
 before affection grows.
 Proof then against rebirth,
 the sage is lost to ken.

4. Aññāya sabbāni nivesanāni, [210]
anikāmayam aññataram pi tesam,
sa ve munī vitagedho agiddho
nāyūhatī;—pāragato hi hoti.
5. Sabbābhibbhum sabbavidum sumedham [211]
sabbesu dhammesu anūpalittam
sabbaññajham taṇhakkhaye vimuttam,
—tam vāpi dhīrā 'munim' vedayanti.
6. Paññābalaṃ silavatūpapannam [212]
samāhitam jhānarataṃ satimam
sangā pamuttam akhilaraṃ anāsavaṃ,
—tam vāpi dhīrā 'munim' vedayanti.
7. Ekaṃ carantaṃ munim appamattaṃ [213]
nindāpasamsāsu avedhamānam,
siham va saddesu asantantaṃ,
vātaṃ va jālamhi asajjamānam,
padumaṃ va toyena alippamānam,
netāraṃ aññesaṃ anaññaneyyam,
tam vāpi—pe—
8. Yo ogahane thambhor ivābhijāyati, [214]
yasmim pare vācāpariyantaṃ vadanti,
tam vitarāgaṃ susamāhitindriyaṃ,
tam vāpi
9. Yo ve ñhitatto tasaram va ujjum [215]
jigucchati kammehi pāpakehi
vīmaṃsamāno visamaṃ samañ ca,
tam vāpi
10. Yo samyatatto na karoti pāpaṃ, [216]
daharo ca majjho ca munī yatatto,
arosaneyyo (so) na roseti kañci,
tam vāpi
11. Yad aggato majjhato sesato vā [217]
piṇḍam labhetha paradattūpajivī,
nālan thutun no pi nipaccavādi,
tam vāpi

Alive to errors all,
a prey to none, the Sage
harbours no want, wants naught;
—across the Flood is he.

[210]

The wise acclaim as 'Sage'
a conqueror all-wise,
flawless of thought, without
one tie or craving, Freed;

[211]

—the thinker wise and good,
thought's watchful votary,
released from ties, and quit
of crassness, Canker-free;

[212]

—the Sage who walks aloof,
unmoved by praise or blame,
whom (lion-like) no sounds
dismay, whom (like the wind)
no nets enmesh, who (like
the lotus) sheds what'er
would tarnish him;—the guide
of others, led by none;

[213]

—tranquil, sense-disciplined,
still imperturbable
(no matter what men say)
as is a timber-balk;

[214]

—who loathes depravity,
as, shuttle-wise, he moves
onward 'twixt right and wrong,

[215]

—the Sage, by self-restraint
through youth and manhood kept
from wrong, who angers none
nor ever anger feels;

[216]

—who, careless if his dole
from top or bottom comes,
carps not at what he gets,
nor meagre thanks returns;

[217]

12. Munim carantaṃ virataṃ methunasmā,
yo yobbane na upanibajjhate kvaci,
madappamādā virataṃ vippamuttaṃ,
taṃ vāpi [218]
13. Aññāya lokaṃ paramatthadassim,
oghaṃ samuddaṃ atitariya tādim,
taṃ chinnaganthaṃ asitaṃ anāsavaṃ,
taṃ vāpi dhīrā 'munim' vedayanti. [219]
-
14. Asamā ubho dūravihāravuttino:
gihī dāraposī, amamo ca subbato.
Parapāṇarodhāya gihī asaṃyato;
niccaṃ munī rakkhati pāṇine yato. [220]
15. Sikhī yathā nilagīvo vihangamo
haṃsassa nōpeti javaṃ kudācanaṃ,
evaṃ gihī nānukaroti bhikkhuno
munino vivittassa vanamhi jhāyato ti. [221]

Uragavaggo paṭhamo

—the Sage who chastely lives,
unsnares by youthful charms,
who ne'er gives way to drink
or riotous excess;

[218]

—who comprehends the world,
who sees the supreme good
who, safe across the Flood,
has burst his chains and now
no ties nor Cankers knows;
—him wise men hail as 'Sage'.

[219]

Unlike and wide apart they stand
in mode of life and livelihood,
—the layman with a house and home,
and virtue's upright, selfless son.
Heedless, the layman kills and slays;
heedful, the Sage shields life from harm.

[220]

For all its crest and neck so blue
the peacock ne'er can match in flight
the swan, nor layman emulate
an Almsman, when in lonesome wilds
the Sage is plunged in Reverie.

[221]

End of the Snake Book

II. CŪLAVAGGA

I. RATANASUTTA

1. Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [222]
 bhum māni vā yāni va antalikkhe,
 sabbe va bhūtā sumanā bhavantu;
 atho pi sakkacca supantu bhāsitaṃ.
2. Tasmā hi bhūtā nisāmetha sabbe: [223]
 mettaṃ karotha mānusiya pajāya
 divā ca ratto ca haranti ye balin.
 Tasmā hi ne rakkhatha appamattā.
3. Yaṃ kiñci vittaṃ idha vā hurāṃ vā [224]
 saggesu vā yaṃ ratanaṃ paṇitaṃ,
 na no samaṃ atthi tathāgatena.
 Idam pi Buddhē ratanaṃ paṇitaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
4. Khayaṃ virāgaṃ amataṃ paṇitaṃ [225]
 yad ajjhagā Sakyamunī samāhito,
 na tena Dhammena sam' atthi kiñci.
 Idam pi Dhamme ratanaṃ paṇitaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
5. Yam Buddhaseṭṭho parivaṇṇayi sucim [226]
 ('samādhim ānantarikaṃ' ñam āhu),
 samādhinā tena samo na vijjati.
 Idam pi Dhamme ratanaṃ paṇitaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
6. Ye puggalā aṭṭha satam pasatthā [227]
 (cattāri etāni yugāni honti),
 te dakkhiṇeyyā Sugatassa sāvakā;
 etesu dinnāni mahapphalāni.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇitaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!

II. THE SHORT BOOK

Sutta 1. The Three Gems

May denizens of earth
and sky assembled here,
may beings all, rejoice
and hearken unto me. [222]

List, beings all, and show
goodwill to men, who bring
oblations night and day.
So shield mankind from harm. [223]

No wealth in earth or skies,
no gem divine, can vie
with Him who found the Truth.
This gem the Buddha holds;
—and may that truth bless all! [224]

The perfect Peace He preached
—our Sage's Deathless Peace—
can find no match elsewhere.
This gem the Doctrine holds;
—and may that truth bless all! [225]

'Rapt contemplation's meed',
which matchless Buddha praised,
can find no match elsewhere.
This gem the Doctrine holds;
—and may that truth bless all! [226]

His faithful followers,
Conversion's eightfold ranks
(four Paths, four Fruits, in all),
deserve oblations; gifts
to them yield rich returns.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all! [227]

7. Ye suppayuttā manasā dāhena [228]
 nikkāmino Gotamasāsanamhi,
 te pattipattā amataṃ vigayha,
 laddhā mudhā nibbutiṃ bhuñjamānā.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
8. Yath' Indakhīlo paṭhaviṃ sito siyā [229]
 catubbhi vātehi asampekampiyo,
 tathūpamaṃ sappurisaṃ vadāmi,
 yo ariyasaccāni avecca passati.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
9. Ye ariyasaccāni vibhāvayanti [230]
 gambhīrapaññena sudesitāni,
 kiñcāpi te honti bhusappamattā,
 na te bhavaṃ aṭṭhamaṃ ādiyanti.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
10. Sahā v' assa dassanasampadāya, [231]
 tayas su dhammā jahitā bhavanti:—
 sakkāyadiṭṭhi vicikicchitaṃ ca
 silabbataṃ vāpi yad atthi kiñci;
 catūh' apāyehi ca vipkamutto
 cha cābhithānāni abhabbo kātuṃ.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
11. Kiñcāpi so kammaṃ karoti pāpakaṃ [232]
 kāyena vācā uda cetasā vā,
 abhabbo so tassa paṭicchādāya;
 —abhabbatā diṭṭhapadassa vuttā.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
12. Vanappagumbe yathā phusitagge [233]
 gimhānamāse paṭhamasmiṃ gimhe,
 tathūpamaṃ Dhammavaraṃ adesayi
 nibbānagāmiṃ parama-m-hitāya.
 Idam pi Buddhē ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!

And they whose stedfast hearts,
by lusts unswayed, are set
on Gotama's behests,
—these win their goal; these taste
a bliss right cheaply earned.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[228]

As Indra's deep-sunk balk
defies all winds that blow,
so stedfast stand the good
who grasp the Noble Truths.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[229]

All who absorb those Truths
which our deep thinker preached,
though they backslide, shall see
not more than seven births.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[230]

And when full vision comes,
three outlooks pass away:—
doubt, personality,
and ritual. Thus freed
from dread of hell and doom,
man cannot perpetrate
the six dire, deadly sins.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[231]

And if one should transgress
in word or deed or thought,
he cannot cloke his fault,
since he has 'seen the light'.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[232]

As when in spring the brake
is gay with flow'r and leaf,
this best of gospels lights
the way Nirvāna-ward.
This gem the Buddha holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[233]

13. Varo varaññū varado varāharo [234]
 anuttaro Dhammavararāṇṇaṃ adesayi.
 Idam pi Buddhē ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
14. 'Khīṇaṃ purāṇaṃ, navaṃ na 'tthi sambhavaṃ', [235]
 virattacittā āyatike bhavasmimā
 te khīṇabījā avirūhichandā
 nibbanti dhīrā yathāyama padīpo.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
15. Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [236]
 bhummaṇi vā yāni va antalikkhe,
 tathāgataṃ devamanussapūjitaṃ
 Buddhaṃ namassāma; suvatthi hotu!
16. Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [237]
 bhummaṇi vā yāni va antalikkhe,
 tathāgataṃ devamanussapūjitaṃ
 Dhammaṃ namassāma; suvatthi hotu!
17. Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [238]
 bhummaṇi vā yāni va antalikkhe,
 tathāgataṃ devamanussapūjitaṃ
 Saṃghaṃ namassāma; suvatthi hotu!

2. ĀMAGANDHASUTTA

1. Sāmākacingulakacīnakāni [239]
 pattapphalaṃ mūlapphalaṃ gavippphalaṃ
 dhammena laddhaṃ sata-m-asamānā
 na kāmakāmā alikaṃ bhaṇanti.
2. Yad asamāno sukataṃ suniṭṭhitaṃ [240]
 parehi dīnaṃ payataṃ paṇītaṃ
 sālīnaṃ annaṃ paribhujjamaṇo,
 so bhuñjati, Kassapa, āmagandhaṃ.

He is—He knows—He gives—
the best; His Doctrine's best.
This gem the Buddha holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[234]

'The old is dead; no fresh
growths rise', cry saints, who, quit
of germs and hopes, reject
all life to come and pass
away like lamps unfed.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[235]

Praise, denizens of earth
and skies, praise, beings all,
the Buddha, dear to gods
and men,—who brings the Truth;
—and may a blessing come!

[236]

Praise, denizens of earth
and skies, praise, beings all,
the Doctrine, dear to gods
and men,—which brings the Truth;
—and may a blessing come!

[237]

Praise, denizens of earth
and skies, praise, beings all,
the Order, dear to gods
and men,—which brings the Truth;
—and may a blessing come!

[238]

Sutta 2. Carrion

A brahmin: The millet-grain, palm-nuts,
pulse, bulbs, and wilding shoots,
—this diet, rightly got,
ne'er prompts the good to lie.

[239]

'Tis eating carrion
to touch a host's rich fare,
well-dressed and delicate!

[240]

3. 'Na āmagandho mama kappatīti' [241]
icc-eva tvaṃ bhāsasi, Brahmabandhu,
sālinam annaṃ paribhuñjamāno
sakuntamaṃsehi susaṃkhatehi.
Pucchāmi taṃ, Kassapa, etam atthaṃ:
Kathappakāro tava āmagandho?
4. Pāṇātipāto vadhachedabandhanaṃ [242]
theyyaṃ musāvādo nikatī vañcanāni ca
ajjhenakujjaṃ paradārasevanā,
—es' āmagandho, na hi maṃsabhojanaṃ.
5. Ye idha kāmesu asaṃyatā janā [243]
rasesu giddhā asucikamissitā
natthikadiṭṭhī visamā durannayā,
—es' āmagandho, na hi maṃsabhojanaṃ.
6. Ye lūkhasā dāruṇā piṭṭhimaṃsikā [244]
mittadduno nikkaruṇātimānino
adānasilā, na ca denti kassaci,
—es' āmagandho—pe—
7. Kodho mado thambho paccupaṭṭhāpanā [245]
māyā usuyyā bhassasamussayo ca
mānātimāno ca asabbhi santhavo,
—es' āmagandho
8. Ye pāpasilā inaghātasūcakā [246]
vohārakūṭā idha pāṭirūpikā
narādhamā ye 'dha karonti kibbisam,
—es' āmagandho
9. Ye idha pāṇesu asaṃyatā janā [247]
paresam ādāya vihesam uyyutā
dussilaluddā pharusā anādarā,
—es' āmagandho
10. Etesu giddhā, viruddhātipātino [248]
nicc' uyyutā pecca tamaṃ vajanti ye,
patanti sattā nirayaṃ avamsirā,
—es' āmagandho

Though you (a brahmin!) say
 you touch no carrion,
 you eat choice dishes made
 with flesh of birds.—I ask
 what you term 'carrion'.

[241]

Kassapa
 (a former Buddha): Killing and maiming, stripes,
 bonds, theft, lies, fraud, deceit,
 adultery,—not meats,
 but these, are carrion.

[242]

Pursuit of pleasure, lust
 for guzzling, life unclean,
 blatant dissent,—not meats,
 but these, are carrion.

[243]

Backbiting, cruelty,
 betrayals, ruthless pride,
 mean stinginess,—not meats,
 but these, are carrion.

[244]

Anger, conceit, revolt,
 guile, envy, bluster, pride,
 low company,—not meats,
 but these, are carrion.

[245]

Base living, slander, fraud,
 cheating, the trickster's wiles,
 foul infamies,—not meats,
 but these, are carrion.

[246]

The lust to kill and hurt
 and rob, the evil trade
 of hunters fierce,—not meats,
 but these, are carrion.

[247]

This rage to slay and steal,
 these crimes, are fraught with doom
 and end in hell;—not meats,
 but these, are carrion.

[248]

11. Na macchamarāsaṃ nānāsakattaṃ,
na naggiyaṃ muṇḍiyaṃ jaṭṭajallaṃ
kharājjināni vā,
nāggihuttass' upasevanā va yā,
ye vā pi loke amarā bahū tapā,
mantāhuti yañña-m-utūpasevanā
sodhenti maccaṃ avitippakankhaṃ. [249]
12. Sotesu gutto vijitindriyo care [250]
dhamme t̥hito ajjavamaddave rato
sangātigo sabbadukkhappahīno
na lippati diṭṭhasutesu dhīro.
13. Icc' etam attham Bhagavā punappunaṃ [251]
akkhāsi; taṃ vedayi mantapāragū.
Citrāhi gāthāhi Muni-ppakāsayi
nirāmagandho asito durannayo.
14. Sutvāna Buddhassa subhāsitaṃ padaṃ [252]
nirāmagandhaṃ sabbadukkhāpanūdanaṃ,
nīcamano vandi Tathāgatassa;
tatth' eva pabbajjam arocayittha.

3. HIRISUTTA

1. Hirin tarantaṃ vijigucchamaṇaṃ, [253]
'sakhāham asmi' iti bhāsamaṇaṃ,
sayhāni kammāni anādiyantaṃ,
'N' eso mamaṇ' ti iti naṃ vijaññā.
2. Ananvayaṃ piyaṃ vācaṃ yo mittesu pakubbati, [254]
'Akarontaṃ bhāsamaṇaṃ' pariṇānanti paṇḍitā.

No abstinence from meat
and fish, no nudity,
no top-knots, shaven crowns,
no grime or garb of pelt,
no cult of sacred fire,
no stark austerities
to purchase future bliss,
no runes, burnt-off'rings, rites,
—can cleanse the man who doubts.

[249]

Control thy senses, rule
thy powers, hold to Truth,
be kind. The saint who leaves
all ties and vanquishes
all Ills, is stained by naught
he either sees or hears.

[250]

What thus the Lord set forth,
the brahmin realized,
as, verse by verse, he heard
th' unswerving mystic Sage,
all 'carriion' above.

[251]

Hearing the Buddha preach
these lofty, saving truths,
denouncing 'carriion'
and sweeping Ills away,
the brahmin meekly knelt
and asked to be enrolled
an Almsman then and there.

[252]

Sutta 3. Loyalty

Renounce dishonest men
who flout their plighted word
and, though they pose as friends,
perform not what they might.

[253]

When glozing protestations end in naught,
then sage observers style it 'words, not deeds'.

[254]

3. Na so mitto yo sadā appamatto [255]
 bhedāsamkī randham evānupassī;
 yasmiñ ca seti urasīva putto,
 sa ve mitto yo parehi abhejjo.
4. Pāmujjakaraṇaṃ ṭhānaṃ pasaṃsāvahanāṃ sukhāṃ [256]
 phalānisarṇo bhāveti vahanto porisaṃ dhuraṃ.
5. Pavivekarasam pītvā rasaṃ upasamassa ca [257]
 niddaro hoti nippāpo dhammapīṭirasāṃ pivāṃ.

4. MAHĀMANGALASUTTA

Evam me sutāṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho aññatarā devatā abhikkantāya rattiyā abhikkantavaṇṇā kevalakappaṃ Jetavanaṃ obhāsetvā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantaṃ abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ aṭṭhāsi. Ekamantaṃ ṭhitā kho sā devatā Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Bahū devā manussā ca mangalāni acintayurū, [258]
 ākankhamānā sotthānaṃ:—brūhi mangalam uttamaṃ.
-
2. Asevanā ca bālānaṃ, paṇḍitānaṃ ca sevanā, [259]
 pūjā ca pūjanīyānaṃ;—etam mangalam uttamaṃ.
3. Patirūpadesavāso ca, pubbe ca katapuññatā, [260]
 attasammāpaṇidhi ca;—etam mangalam uttamaṃ.
4. Bāhusaccaṃ ca sippaṃ ca vinayo ca susikkhito [261]
 subhāsita ca yā vacā;—etam mangalam uttamaṃ.
5. Mātāpitu upaṭṭhānaṃ, puttadārassa sangaho, [262]
 anākulā ca kammantā;—etam mangalam uttamaṃ.
6. Dānaṃ ca dhammacariyā ca, nātakānaṃ ca sangaho, [263]
 anavajjāni kammāni;—etam mangalam uttamaṃ.
7. Ārati virati pāpā majjapānā ca sarīyamo, [264]
 appamādo ca dhammesu;—etam mangalam uttamaṃ.

No friend is he whose eye
is ever on the watch [255]
to spy shortcomings out,
—against a future breach.
But if you rest secure,
like babe on mother's breast,
you have a friend indeed,
whom none can rob you of.

Whoso, while shouldering man's common lot, [256]
has reaped a harvest blest, accomplishes
a happy life and well-earned meed of praise.

But he who, in aloofness, tastes true Peace, [257]
puts haunting dread away, and wickedness,
and quaffs those draughts of bliss the Doctrine gives.

Sutta 4. The Boon of Boons

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasaunce, a certain deity of surpassing beauty illumined the whole grove as night was on the wane, and, coming to the Lord, stood to one side after meet salutations, addressing the Lord in the following stanzas:—

In quest of weal, full many gods and men [258]
have ponder'd over fortune's choicest boons.
Tell me, I pray, what boon stands out supreme.

The Lord: 'Tis shunning fools, consorting with the wise, [259]
and heartfelt worship of the worshipful;

'tis life in scenes befitting spent, a past [260]
of garner'd goodness, aspiration high;

'tis lore profound and skill, obedience [261]
to rules prescribed, and well-weighed utterance;

'tis ministry to parents, tender care [262]
for wife and child, an undistracting trade;

'tis largesse, pious living, tender care [263]
for kith and kin, conduct beyond reproach;

'tis shunning and eschewing wickedness, [264]
forswearing drink, keeping right states of mind;

8. Gāravo ca nivāto ca santuṭṭhi ca kataññitūā [265]
kālena dhammasavanam;—etam mangalam uttaram.
9. Khanti ca sovaccasatā samaṇānañ ca dassanam [266]
kālena dhammasācchā;—etam mangalam uttaram.
10. Tapo ca brahmacariyā ca, ariyasaccāna' dassanam, [267]
nibbānasacchikiriyā ca;—etam mangalam uttaram.
11. Phuṭṭhassa lokadhammehi cittaṃ yassa na kampati [268]
asokaṃ virajam khemaṃ;—etam mangalam uttaram.
12. Etādisāni katvāna sabbattha-m-aparājita [269]
sabbattha sotthiṃ gacchanti;—taṃ tesam mangalam uttaram.

5. SŪCĪLOMASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Gayāyaṃ viharati Tāmkita-maṇice Sūcilomassa yakkhassa bhavane. Tena kho pana samayena Kharo ca yakkho Sūcilomo ca yakkho Bhagavato avidūre atikkamanti. Atha kho Kharo yakkho Sūcilomaṃ yakkham etad avoca: Eso samaṇo ti.

N' eso samaṇo; samaṇako eso. Yāva jānāmi yadi vā so samaṇo yadi vā samaṇako ti.

Atha kho Sūcilomo yakkho yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavato kāyaṃ upanāmesi. Atha kho Bhagavā kāyaṃ apanāmesi. Atha kho Sūcilomo yakkho Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Bhāyasi maṃ, samaṇāti.

Na khvāhan taṃ, āvuso, bhāyāmi; api ca kho te samphasso pāpako ti.

Pañham taṃ, samaṇa, pucchissāmi. Sace me na vyākarissasi, cittaṃ vā te khipissāmi, hadayaṃ vā te phālessāmi, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipissāmi.

Na khvāhan taṃ, āvuso, passāmi sadevake loke samārake sabrahmake sassamaṇabrāhmaṇiyā pajāya sadevamanussāya yo me cittaṃ vā khipeyya, hadayaṃ vā phāleyya, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipeyya. Api ca tvaṃ, āvuso, puccha yad ākankhasīti.

Atha kho Sūcilomo yakkho Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Rāgo ca doso ca kutonidānā? [270]
Aratī ratī lomahaṃso kutojā?
Kuto samuṭṭhāya mano vitakkā,
kumārakā vaṃkam iv', ossajanti?
2. 'Rāgo ca doso ca itonidānā; [271]
aratī ratī lomahaṃso itojā;
ito samuṭṭhāya mano vitakkā,
kumārakā vaṃkam iv', ossajanti.

'tis rev'rent awe, content, prompt gratitude,
and due attendance when the Doctrine's preached; [265]

'tis patience, courtesy, the company
of Almsmen, timely talks on gospel truth; [266]

'tis strict austerity, a holy life,
the Noble Truths seen clear, Nirvāna won; [267]

a heart untouched by wordly things, a heart
from sorrow freed, th' unspotted heart at Peace. [268]

—To them who live that life, defeat ne'er comes,
but always weal;—this 'boon of boons' is theirs! [269]

Sutta 5. Inward Growths

Thus have I heard. Once, while the Lord was staying at Gayā near Stone-Couch in the domain of the sprite Sūciloma, the sprites Khara and Sūciloma were passing close by the Lord.

That's an anchorite, said Khara.

No, it is not, answered Sūciloma;—though he looks anchoritish. Wait till I make sure whether he is a real anchorite or only looks like one.

Accordingly, the sprite, with bristles like needles, went and brushed up against the Lord,—who drew back.

You're afraid of me, anchorite, said the sprite.

No, said the Lord; I am not afraid of you; but contact with you is unpleasant.

I will ask you a question, anchorite; if you do not answer it, I'll scare you out of your wits, or rive your heart, or fling you by the heels across the Ganges.

Sir, replied the Lord, in all the wide world of gods, Māras, and Brahmās, I see no one among anchorites and brahmins, gods or men, who could do to me what you suggest. However, sir, ask what you will.

Hereupon, the sprite Sūciloma addressed the Lord in these stanzas:—

Whence spring ill-will and lusts? [270]
Whence likes, dislikes, and dread?
Whence thoughts which plague the mind
as boys a captive crow?

The Lord: 'Self' breeds ill-will and lusts, [271]
dislikes and likes and dread,
and thoughts which plague the mind
as boys a captive crow.

3. Snehajā attasambhūtā nigrodhassēva khandhajā, [272]
puthū visattā kāmesu mālurvā va vitatā vane.

4. Ye naṃ pajānanti yatonidānaṃ, [273]
te naṃ vinodenti (suṇohi yakkha!);
te duttaraṃ ogham imaṃ taranti
atiṇṇapubbaṃ apunabbhavāya.

6. DHAMMACARIYASUTTA

1. Dhammacariyaṃ brahmacariyaṃ, etad āhu vasuttamaṃ. [274]
Pabbajito pi ce hoti agārasmā anagāriyaṃ,
2. so ce mukharajātiko vihesābhirato mago, [275]
jīvitan tassa pāpiyo, rajaṃ vaḍḍheti attano.
3. Kalahābhirato bhikkhu mohadhammena āvaṭo [276]
akkhātam pi na jānāti Dhammaṃ Buddhena desitaṃ.
4. Vihesaṃ bhāvitattānaṃ avijjāya purakkhato [277]
saṃkilesaṃ na jānāti maggaṃ nirayagāminaṃ.
5. Vinipātaṃ samāpanno, gabbhā gabbhaṃ, tamā tamaṃ, [278]
sa ve tādīsako bhikkhu pecca dukkhaṃ nigacchati.
6. Gūthakūpo yathā assa sampuṇṇo gaṇavassiko, [279]
yo evarūpo assa; dubbisodho hi sangāṇo.
7. Yaṃ evarūpaṃ jānātha, bhikkhavo, gehanissitaṃ [280]
pāpicchaṃ pāpasamkappaṃ pāpa-ācāragocaraṃ,
8. sabbe samaggā hutvāna abhinibbijjāyātha naṃ, [281]
kāraṇḍavaṃ niddhamatha, kasamburaṃ apakassatha;
9. tato palāpe vāhetha assamaṇe samaṇamānina, [282]
niddhamitvāna pāpicche pāpa-ācāragocare,
10. suddhā suddhehi saṃvāsaṃ kappayavho patissatā; [283]
tato samaggā nipakā dukkhass' antaṃ karissatha.

Like banyan saplings, these are inward growths
by 'Self' begotten, craving's progeny,
which spread abroad a tangled growth of lusts,
like creepers rank that overgrow the woods.

[272]

All such as know their source,
dispel the brood (give ear!)
and cross life's Flood at last,
to know rebirth no more.

[273]

Sutta 6. The Good Life

The good, the holy life is hailed 'supreme'!
Though one goes forth from home to homelessness,

[274]

but shows himself harsh-tongued, and brutishly
delights to harry others, then his life
is evil and he waxes fouler still.

[275]

The wrangling Almsman, in blank folly pent,
misses the Doctrine which the Buddha preached.

[276]

By ignorance impelled to harry saints,
he fails to see his guilt leads straight to hell.

[277]

Passed now to doom—to birth on birth always,
darkness succeeding darkness—, this life o'er
that Almsman goes to dree his weird of woe.

[278]

E'en as a jakes chock-full through years of use,
that man would be;—since guilt is hard to cleanse.

[279]

Almsmen, if such a parasite ye find,
of evil wants and aims, of evil life,

[280]

let all with one accord him shun, as chaff
him winnow out, as refuse cast away.

[281]

So, cart away, like empty husks, those frauds
who pose as Almsmen, being vile at heart.

[282]

Be pure, and only with the pure consort;
and ye, in concord sage, shall end all Ills.

[283]

7. BRĀHMAṆADHAMMIKASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvattiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho sambahulā Kosalakā brāhmaṇamahāsālā jīṇṇā vuddhā mahallakā addhagatā vayo anuppattā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṅkamimṣu, upasaṅkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhim sammodimṣu, sammodayiṃsaṃ katham sārāṇiyaṃ vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisidimṣu. Ekamantaṃ nisinnā kho te brāhmaṇamahāsālā Bhagavantaṃ etad avocum: Sandissanti nu kho, bho Gotama, etarahi brāhmaṇā porāṇānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ brāhmaṇadhamme ti?

Na kho, brāhmaṇā, sandissanti etarahi brāhmaṇā porāṇānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ brāhmaṇadhamme ti.

Sādhū no bhavaṃ Gotamo porāṇānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ brāhmaṇadhammaṃ bhāsatu, sace bho Gotamassa agarūti.

Tena hi, brāhmaṇā, supātha sādhukaṃ manasikarotha, bhāsissāmīti.

Evam bho ti kho te brāhmaṇamahāsālā Bhagavato paccassosum. Bhagavā etad avoca:—

1. Isayo pubbakā āsum saṃyatattā tapassino; [284]
paṇica kāmaguṇe hitvā atta-d-attham acārisum.
2. Na pasū brāhmaṇān' āsum, na hiraññam, na dhāniyaṃ; [285]
sajjhāyadhaṇaḍḍhaññāsum, brahmaṇaṃ nidhim apālayum.
3. Yaṃ tesaṃ pakataṃ āsi dvārabhattaṃ upaṭṭhitaṃ [286]
saddhāpakataṃ esānaṃ dātave tad amaññisum.
4. Nānārattehi vatthehi sayaneh' āvasathehi ca [287]
phitā janapadā raṭṭhā te namassimṣu brāhmaṇe.
5. Avajjhā brāhmaṇā āsum ajeyyā dhammarakkhitā; [288]
na ne koci nivāresi kuladvāresu sabbaso.
6. Aṭṭhacattārisaṃ vassāni komārabrahmacariyaṃ carimṣu te; [289]
vijjācaraṇapariyitthim acarum brāhmaṇā pure.
7. Na brāhmaṇā aññaṃ agamum, na pi bhariyaṃ kiṇimṣu te; [290]
sampiyen' eva saṃvāsaṃ sangantvā samarocayum.
8. Aññatra tamhā samayā utuveramaṇiṃ pati [291]
antarā methunaṃ dhammaṃ nāssu gacchanti brāhmaṇā.

Sutta 7. Brahminism's Golden Age

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthi in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure-grounds, there came to him a number of Kosalan brahmins of great wealth—broken and old, aged and stricken in years, drawing to their life's close—who, after courteous salutations, took their seats to one side, saying: Are the brahmins of to-day in accord, Gotama, with the brahminic outlook of the brahmins of old?

No, brahmins; they are not.

If it is agreeable to you, sir, please tell us what was the brahminic outlook of the brahmins of old.

Give ear then and hearken; I will tell you.

Certainly, sir, answered they in assent.

The Lord began:—

In self-control and strict austerity [284]
the ancient sages dwelt; the fivefold strands
of pleasure they renounced, themselves to save.

No herds had brahmins then, no gold or pelf; [285]
their wealth was holy lore and holy life.

They deemed the common scraps outside folks' doors [286]
to be faith's offering for brahmin needs.

The rich of country sides and realms at large [287]
great court and homage to these brahmins paid
with garments dyed and couches and abodes.

Inviolable, invincible were they, [288]
shielded from harm by holiness of life;
and on a brahmin no man closed his doors.

For eight and forty years as celibates [289]
the early brahmins lived, in quest devout
of ken and vision and of holy life.

For wives these brahmins sought no other caste, [290]
and never purchased brides; 'twas their delight
to pass their wedded lives in bonds of love.

'Twas only when a period was o'er, [291]
that brahmins knew their wives,—and not between.

9. Brahmacariyañ ca silañ ca ajjavam maddavam tapam
soraccam avihimsañ ca khantiñ cāpi avaṇṇayum. [292]
10. Yo nesam paramo āsi brahmā dalhaparakkamo,
sa vāpi methunam dhammam supinante pi nāgamā. [293]
11. Tassa vattam anusikkhantā idh' eke viññujātikā
brahmacariyañ ca silañ ca khantiñ cāpi avaṇṇayum. [294]
12. Taṇḍulam sayanam vattham sappitelañ ca yāciya
dhammena samudānetvā tato yaññam akappayum;
upaṭṭhitasmim yaññasmim nāssu gāvo hanimsu te. [295]
13. 'Yathā mātā pitā bhātā aññe vāpi ca nātakā,
gāvo no paramā mittā, yāsu jāyanti osadhā, [296]
14. annadā baladā c' etā vaṇṇadā sukhadā tathā,'
—etam atthavasam nātva nāssu gāvo hanimsu te. [297]
15. Sukhumālā mahākāyā vaṇṇavanto yasassino
brāhmaṇā sehi dhammehi kiccākiccesu ussukā,
yāva loke avattimsu sukham edhittha ayam pajā. [298]
16. Tesam āsi vipallāso. Disvāna aṇuto aṇum
rājino ca viyākāram, nariyo ca samalankatā, [299]
17. rathe c' ājaññasam yutte sukate, cittasibbane,
nivesane, nivese ca vibhatte bhāgaso mite, [300]
18. gomaṇḍalaparibbūlham, nārivaragaṇāyutam,
ulāram mānusaṃ bhogaṃ abhijjhāyimsu brāhmaṇā. [301]
19. Te tattha mante ganthetvā Okkākam tad' upāgamum:
—Pahūtadhanadhañño si;
yajassu, bahu te vittam; yajassu, bahu te dhanam! [302]
20. Tato ca rājā samyatto brāhmaṇehi rathesabho,
assamedham purisamedham sammāpāsam
vājapeyyam niraggaḷam,—
ete yāge yajitvāna brāhmaṇānam adā dhanam, [303]
21. —gāvo, sayanañ ca, vatthañ ca, nariyo ca samalankatā,
rathe c' ājaññasam yutte sukate, cittasibbane, [304]
22. nivesanāni rammāni suvibhattāni bhāgaso
nānādhāññassa pūretvā brāhmaṇānam adā dhanam. [305]

Brahmins prized holy living, rectitude, [292]
 meek kindly gentleness, austerities,
 patient forbearance, tender mercy, ruth.

The pattern brahmin—steadfast, resolute— [293]
 not e'en in dreams had carnal intercourse.

By his example, wisdom's sons were brought [294]
 to prize forbearance, virtue, holy life.

They asked but rice, beds, garments, ghee, and oil; [295]
 and with such gifts they made their offerings;
 —no cows were slaughter'd for their sacrifice.

Holding that cows,—like parents, brothers, kin— [296]
 were their best friends, the source of healthful things,

of food, well-being, goodness, and strength, [297]
 —grateful for this, they never slaughter'd cows.

Tall, goodly, debonair, and famous men [298]
 were brahmins then, inspired by zeal to grow
 to their own standards high of right and wrong;
 and, while these lived on earth, mankind fared well.

Then came corruption. Bit by bit, they saw [299]
 the monarch's splendour, women richly dight,

steeds yoked to chariots, gay coverlets, [300]
 stately abodes, and chamber'd palaces,

girt round with crowded byres, and graced with troops [301]
 of women fair to view;—vast mundane wealth
 those brahmins saw, and, seeing, coveted.

Thereon, they framed these verses and they sought [302]
 Okkāka;—'King', said they, 'abounding wealth
 is thine and substance; offer sacrifice!
 great store, great wealth hast thou; make sacrifice!'

Thereon the king, that doughty charioteer, [303]
 won o'er by brahmins, offered sacrifice
 of horses, human victims, and the rest;

and, at the close, to brahmins largesse gave [304]
 of kine, beds, garments, women richly dight,

steeds yoked to chariots, gay coverlets, [305]
 stately abodes, and chambered palaces,
 filled full of gear.—The king this largesse gave.

23. Te ca tattha dhanam laddhā sannidhiṃ samarocayum; [306]
tesaṃ icchāvatiṇṇānaṃ bhiyyo taṇhā pavaḍḍhatha.
Te tattha mante ganthetvā Okkākaṃ puna-m-upāgamum:
24. 'Yathā āpo ca paṭhavī ca hiraññadhanadhāniyaṃ, [307]
evaṃ gāvo manussānaṃ; parikkhāro so hi pāpinaṃ.
Yajassu, bahu te vittaṃ; yajassu, bahu te dhanam!
25. Tato ca rājā samyatto brāhmaṇehi rathesabho [308]
'nekā satasahassiyo gāvo yaññe aghātayi.
26. Na pādā na viṣāṇena nāssu hiṃsanti kenaci [309]
gāvo eḷakasamānā soratā kumbhadūhanā,
—tā viṣāṇe gahetvāna rājā satthen' aghātayi.
27. Tato ca devā pitaro Indo asura-rakkhasā [310]
'Adhammo' iti pakkandum yaṃ sattham nipatī gave.
28. Tayo rogā pure āsum:—icchā, anasanañ, jarā; [311]
pasūnañ ca samārambhā aṭṭhānavuti-m-āgamum.
29. Eso adhammo daṇḍānaṃ okkanto purāṇo ahū, [312]
adūsikāyo haññanti, dhammā dhamṣenti yājakaṃ,
30. —evaṃ eso aṇudhammo porāṇo viññūgarahito; [313]
yattha edisakaṃ passati, yājakaṃ garahatī jano.
31. Evaṃ dhamme viyāpanne vibhinnā sudda-vessikā, [314]
puthu vibhinnā khattiyā, pati' bhariyā 'vamaññiatha.
32. Khattiyā Brahmapandhū ca ye c' aññe gottarakkhitā [315]
jātivādaṃ niraṃkatvā kāmānaṃ vasam upāgamun ti.

Evaṃ vutte te brāhmaṇamahāsālā Bhagavantaṃ etad avocum: Abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama; abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama! Seyyathā pi, bho Gotama, nikkujjitaṃ vā ukkujjeyya, paṭicchannaṃ vā vivareyya, mūlhasa vā maggaṃ ācikkheyya, andhakāre vā telapajjotaṃ dhāreyya 'cakkhumanto rūpāni dak-khintīti', evaṃ evaṃ bhotā Gotamena anekapariyāyena dhammo pakāsito. Ete mayaṃ bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ gacchāma dhammañ ca bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca; upāsake no bhavaṃ Gotamo dhāretu ajjatagge pāṇupetaṃ saraṇaṃ gate.

But largesse fired their passion more to get; [306]
 their craving grew and grew. Once more they sought
 Okkāka, with these verses newly framed:—

'As earth and water, gold and silver, so [307]
 are cows a primal requisite of man.
 Great store, great wealth is thine; make sacrifice!'

Thereon the king, that doughty charioteer, [308]
 won o'er by brahmins, for the sacrifice
 doomed cows by hundred-thousands to the knife.

—The cows that do no hurt with horn or hoof, [309]
 yes, gentle lambl-like cows that fill the pail,
 he bade be taken by the horn and slain.

' 'Tis wrong! 'tis wrong!' arose th' united wail [310]
 of Brahmās, Indra, Titans, ogres too,
 as cows were butcher'd for the sacrifice.

Diseases, which of yore were only three [311]
 —desires, and hunger, and senility—
 with cattle-killing rose to ninety-eight!

'Of old began this outrage; harmless cows [312]
 are slain by guilty sacrificers' hands':—

thus, thus, the wise condemn this ancient guilt, [313]
 and folk condemn the sacrificers' crime.

When right thus perished, straightway discord split [314]
 farmers and serfs, and split the nobles' ranks,
 while wives looked down upon their lords with scorn;

nobles and 'Brahmā's kin', with folk of rank, [315]
 flouting their birthright, fell a prey to lusts.

Hereupon, those brahmins of great wealth said to the Lord:—Wonderful, Gotama! quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again what had been cast down, or reveal what had been hidden away, or tell a man who had gone astray which was his way, or bring a lamp into the dark so that those with eyes to see might see the things about them,—even so in many ways has Gotama made his Doctrine clear. We come to the reverend Gotama as our refuge, and to his Doctrine and to his Community. We ask him to accept us as followers who have found an abiding refuge from this day forth while life lasts.

8. NĀVĀSUTTA

1. Yasmā hi Dhammaṃ puriso vijaññā, [316]
 Indaraṃ va naṃ devatā pūjayeyya;
 so pūjito tasmim̐ pasannacitto
 bahussuto pātukaroti Dhammaṃ.
2. Tad aṭṭhikatvāna nisamma dhīro [317]
 dhammānudhammaṃ paṭipajjamāno
 viññū vibhāvī nipuṇo ca hoti,
 yo tādisaṃ bhajati appamatto.
3. Khuddaṇ ca bālaṃ upasevamāno [318]
 anāgatatthaṇi ca usūyakaṇi ca
 idh' eva Dhammaṃ avibhāvayitvā
 avitiṇṇakankho maraṇaṃ upeti.
4. Yathā naro āpagaṃ otarivā [319]
 mahodikaṃ salilaṃ siṅhasotaṃ,
 so vuyhamāno anusotagāmī
 —kiṃ so pare sakkhati tārayeturū?
5. Tath' eva Dhammaṃ avibhāvayitvā, [320]
 bahussutānaṃ anisāmay' atthaṃ,
 sayāṃ ajānaṃ avitiṇṇakankho
 —kiṃ so pare sakkhati nijjhaketuṃ?
6. Yathā pi nāvaṃ daḥhaṃ āruhitvā [321]
 phiyen' arittena samangibhūto,
 so tāraye tattha bahū pi aññe
 tatr' ūpāyaññū kusalo mutimā;
7. —evam pi yo vedagu bhāvitatto [322]
 bahussuto hoti avedhadhammo,
 so kho pare nijjhapaye pajānaṃ
 sotāvadhānūpanisūpappanne.
8. Tasmā have sappurisaṃ bhajetha [323]
 medhāvinaṇi c' eva bahussutāni ca;
 aññāya atthaṃ paṭipajjamāno
 viññātadhammo so sukhaṃ labhethāti.

Sutta 8. *The Good Ship*

As gods their homage pay [316]
to Indra, pay thou thine
to him who teaches thee.
Well-pleased thereby, thy sage
will make the Doctrine plain.

When earnest study guides [317]
along the way ordained,
the leal disciple comes,
through converse with his sage,
to grasp, to see, to know.

But with a sorry dolt, [318]
who fails to win the goal,
yet envies those who do,
the student misses Truth
and dies with doubts still rife.

As one whom th' headlong rush [319]
of some vast stream in spate
whirls willy-nilly down,
—can he help others o'er?

So he who grasps not Truth [320]
and heeds not learning's voice,
a doubter, knowing nought,
—can he gain others o'er?

As on a good stout ship, [321]
equipped with helm and oar,
a man expert and skilled
can ferry many o'er;

—so he who knows, who's trained, [322]
deep student, calmly sure,
by his full knowledge wins
hearers who're ripe to learn.

So pick a good and wise [323]
and learned teacher; tread
the path of Truth he shows,
till insight bring thee bliss.

9. KIMSĪLASUTTA

1. Kimsilo, kimsamācāro, kāni kammāni brūhayam
naro sammāniviṭṭh' assa uttamatthañ ca pāpuṇe? [324]
2. Vaddhāpacāyī anusuyyako siyā,
kālaññū c' assa garūṇaṃ dassanāya
dhammiṃ kathaṃ erayitaṃ khaṇaṇñū
suṇeyya sakkacca subhāsitaṇi. [325]
3. Kālena gacche garūṇaṃ sakāsaṃ
thambhaṃ nirankatvā nivātavuttī
atthaṃ dhammaṃ saṃyamaṃ brahmacariyaṃ
anussare c' eva samācare ca. [326]
4. Dhammārāmo Dhammarato [327]
Dhamme ṭhito Dhammavinicchayaññū
n' evācare Dhammasandosavādaṃ,
tacchehi niyyetha subhāsitaṇi.
5. Hassaṃ jappaṃ paridevaṃ padosaṃ [328]
māyākataṃ kuhaṇaṃ giddhimānaṃ
sārambhakakkassakasāvamucchaṃ
hitvā care vītamado ṭhitatto.
6. Viññātasārāṇi subhāsitaṇi, [329]
sutaṇ ca viññātaṃ samādhisaṃ,
na tassa paññā ca sutaṇ ca vaḍḍhati
yo sāhaso hoti naro pamatto.
7. Dhamme ca ye ariyapavedite ratā [330]
anuttarā te vacasā manasā kammanā ca,
te santisoraccasamādhisaṇṭhitā
sutassa paññāya ca sāraṃ ajjhagū

10. UṬṬHĀNASUTTA

1. Uṭṭhahatha! nisīdatha! Ko attho supitena vo? [331]
Āturānaṃ hi kā niddā sallaviddhāna' ruppataṃ?

Sutta 9. Right Conduct

Sāriputta: What conduct, code, or scheme of things to do,
will make man sure, and bring the highest good? [324]

The Lord: Revere and envy not [325]

thine Elders; go to them
at seasons due; betimes
attend their homilies
and hear their weighty words.

Betimes thine Elders seek [326]
with meek humility;
weigh, follow, what they teach
of Doctrine, self-control,
the higher life, and Weal.

Be Doctrine thy delight [327]
and joy; in it stand fast;
plumb, plumb its depths; eschew
unworthy, vapid talk;
be Truth thy lofty theme.

Quit merry japes, laments, [328]
deceit and fraud, greed, pride,
brawls, taunts, the triple taint,
—quit, quit them each and all
and live self-poised, serene.

An exhortation's crown [329]
is comprehension, merged
in concentration rapt.
No growth in ken and lore
attends remiss self-will.

But they who find their joy [330]
in Buddha's Doctrine, shine
in word and thought and deed.
Full ken and lore reward
the meek, th' intent, the calm.

Sutta 10. Arise !

Arise! Sit up! Of what avail is sleep? [331]
What slumbers visit sick men writhing sore
beneath the barbèd arrow's rankling smart?

2. Uṭṭhahatha! nisīdatha! Daḷhaṃ sikkhatha santiyā,
mā vo pamatte viññāya maccurājā amohayittha vasānuge. [332]
3. Yāya devā manussā ca sitā tiṭṭhanti atthikā,
tarath' etaṃ visattikaṃ, khaṇo ve mā upaccagā.
Khaṇâtītā hi socanti nirayamhi samappitā. [333]
4. Pamādo rajo, pamādā pamādānupatito rajo.
Appamādena vijjāya abbūlhe sallam attano. [334]

11. RĀHULASUTTA

1. 'Kacci abhiñhasaṃvāsā nāvajānāsi paṇḍitam?
Ukkādhāro manussānaṃ kacci apacito tayā?' [335]
2. 'Nāhaṃ abhiñhasaṃvāsā avajānāmi paṇḍitam;
ukkādhāro manussānaṃ niccaṃ apacito mayā'. [336]
3. Pañca kāmaguṇe hitvā piyarūpe manorame,
saddhāya gharā nikkhamma dukkhass' antakaro bhava. [337]
4. Mitte bhajassu kalyāṇe pantaṇi ca sayanāsanaṃ
vivittaṃ appanigghosaṃ; mattaññi hohi bhojane, [338]
5. cīvare piṇḍapāte ca paccaye sayanāsane;
etesu taṇhaṃ mā 'kāsi, mā lokaṃ punar āgami. [339]
6. Saṃvuto pātimokkhasmiṃ indriyesu ca pañcasu;
satī kāyagatā ty-atthu; nibbidābahulo bhava. [340]
7. Nimittaṃ parivajjehi subhaṃ rāgūpasamhitaṃ,
asubhāya cittaṃ bhāvehi, ekaggaṃ susamāhitaṃ, [341]
8. animittaṇi ca bhāvehi, mānānusayam ujjaha:
tato mānābhisamayā upasanto carissasīti. [342]

Itthaṃ sudam Bhagavā āyasmantaṃ Rāhulaṃ imāhi gāthāhi abhiñhaṃ
ovadati.

Arise! Sit up! Strive hard for inward Peace;
let not Death's monarch, finding you remiss,
snare and befool you as his thralls and dupes. [332]

O'ercome the toils which trap both gods and men.
Let not the moment idly pass; for, they
who let it slip, repine—too late—in hell. [333]

Sloth is defilement; hard aheel of sloth
defilement comes; by zeal and knowledge pluck
the barbèd arrow from your rankling wound. [334]

Sutta 11. To Rāhula

The Lord: Does constant dwelling with thy teacher leave
thee scornful? Dost thou inly honour him
who bears aloft the torch that lights mankind? [335]

Rāhula: No constant dwelling with my teacher leaves
me scornful; always do I honour him
who bears aloft the torch which lights mankind. [336]

The Lord: Leave pleasure's fivefold strands,—so sweet, so dear;
and, led by Faith, leave home, to end all Ills. [337]

Choose worthy friends; a distant lodging seek,
remote and quiet; sparing be in food [338]

and raiment, alms, the requisites, and bed. [339]
Crave not for these, lest back to earth thou come.

Obey the code; control thy senses five;
watch well thy body; grow to loathe the world. [340]

Forsake the gay appearances of things,
where passion reigns. In things austere, not gay,
school thou thy heart to fixity and calm. [341]

Foster what harbours no appearances. [342]
Discard all trend to pride; pride comprehend
and thou shalt go thy way serene and calm.

It was in this wise that, in these stanzas, the Lord again and again exhorted the reverend Rāhula.

12. VANGĪSASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Āḷaviyaṃ viharati, Aggāḷave cetiye. Tena kho pana samayena āyasmato Vangīsassa upajjhāyo Nigrodhakappo nāma therō Aggāḷave cetiye aciraparinibbuto hoti. Atha kho āyasmato Vangīsassa rahogatassa paṭisallīnassa evaṃ cetaso parivitaḅko udapādi:—Parinibbuto nu kho me upajjhāyo? udāhu no parinibbuto ti? Atha kho āyasmā Vangīso sāyaṇhasamayaṃ paṭisallānā vuṭṭhito yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisīno kho āyasmā Vangīso Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Idha mayham, bhante, rahogatassa paṭisallīnassa evaṃ cetaso parivitaḅko udapādi 'Parinibbuto nu kho me upajjhāyo? udāhu no parinibbuto ti?' Atha kho āyasmā Vangīso utṭhāyāsanā ekaṃsaṃ cīvaraṃ katvā yena Bhagavā ten' añjalim paṇāmetvā Bhagavantam gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Pucchāma Satthāraṃ anomapaññaṃ [343]
 diṭṭhe va dhamme yo vicikicchānaṃ chettā:
 Aggāḷave kālam akāsi bhikkhu
 ñāto yasassī abhinibbutatto.
2. Nigrodhakappo iti tassa nāmaṃ [344]
 tayā kataṃ, Bhagavā, brāhmaṇassa;
 so taṃ namassaṃ acari mutyapekho
 āradhaviṛiyo daḷhadhammadassī.
3. Taṃ sāvaḅaṃ, Sakka, mayam pi sabbe [345]
 aññātuṃ icchāma, samantacakkhu;
 samavaṭṭhitā no savanāya sotā;
 —tuvan no Satthā, tvam anuttaro si.
4. Chind' eva no vicikiccham; brūhi m' etaṃ:— [346]
 parinibbutaṃ vedaya, bhūripañña,
 majjhe va no bhāsa, samantacakkhu,
 Sakko va devānaṃ saḅassanetto.
5. Ye keci ganthā idha mohamaggā [347]
 aññānapakkhā vicikicchathānā
 Tathāgataṃ patvā na te bhavanti;
 —cakkhuṃ hi etaṃ paramaṃ narānaṃ.

Sutta 12. Kappa's Destiny

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying in the Agg-Ālava shrine in Ālavi, there had passed away at the shrine, not long before, the Elder Nigrodha-Kappa, who had been the director of the reverend Vangīsa; and Vangīsa in his private meditations speculated whether his old director had, or had not, passed utterly away. Rising from these meditations at eventide, the reverend Vangīsa betook him to the Lord, and, taking his seat to one side after due salutations, told the Lord of his speculations about his old director. Then, rising up from his seat, with his right shoulder respectfully bared, and with his folded palms extended towards the Lord, the reverend Vangīsa addressed him in these stanzas:—

Teacher beyond compare, [343]
 who solvest here and now
 all doubts, we come to ask
 about an Almsman famed
 who died in placid calm.

As 'Banyan-Kappa' thou [344]
 didst name that brahmin, Lord,
 (so leal to thee) who sought
 Release with tireless zeal
 and unrelaxing grip.

All-seeing Sákyán, [345]
 reveal thy servant's lot.
 Teacher without a peer,
 we long to learn of thee;

resolve our doubts; declare [346]
 if he has ceased to be!
 O thou, who seest all,
 speak out among us here
 as speaks among the gods
 Sakka the thousand-eyed.

Deluding bondages, [347]
 —th' allies of ignorance,
 the harbourers of doubt—
 vanish before the Lord,
 whose gaze transcends man's sight.

6. No ce hi jātu puriso kilese [348]
 (vāto yathā abbhagghanam) vihāne,
 tamo v' assa nivuto sabbaloko,
 na jotimanto pi narā tapeyyuṃ.
7. Dhīrā ca pajjotakarā bhavanti. [349]
 Taṃ taṃ ahaṃ, Vīra, tath' eva maññe,
 vipassinaṃ jānaṃ upāgamamha,
 parisāsu no āvikarohi Kappaṃ!
8. Khippaṃ giraṃ eraya vagguvagguṃ [350]
 haṃsā va paggayha saṇiṃ nikūja
 bindussarena suvikappitena;
 sabbe va te ujugatā suṇāma.
9. Pahīnajātimaṇaṃ asesam [351]
 niggayha dhonaṃ vadessāmi dhammaṃ.
 Na kāmakāro hi puthujjanānaṃ;
 saṃkheyyakāro ca Tathāgatānaṃ.
10. Sampannavēyyākaraṇaṃ tava-y-idaṃ [352]
 samujjupaṇṇassa samuggahitaṃ.
 Ayam añjali pacchimo suppaṇāmito;
 mā mohayi jānaṃ, anomapaṇṇa.
11. Parovaraṃ ariyadhammaṃ viditvā, [353]
 mā mohayi jānaṃ, anomaviriya;
 vāriṃ yathā ghammani ghammatatto
 vācābhikankhāmi. Sutaṃ pavassa!
12. Yadatthiyaṃ brahmacariyaṃ acāri [354]
 Kappāyano, kacci 'ssa taṃ amoghaṃ?
 Nibbāyi so? ādu sa-upādi-seso?
 Yathā vimutto ahu, taṃ suṇāma!

If One dispelled not vice,
as wind the clouds, a pall
of darkness would enshroud
the world entire; not e'en
the Sons of Light could shine.

[348]

The wise illumine. Sure
that thou art wise and can'st
illumine, we, who know
thy scope, beg thee to tell
this conclave Kappa's lot.

[349]

Haste then to lift thy voice
so sweet, and, like a swan
with outstretched neck, ring out
in strains melodious;
—apt audience are we.

[350]

Yes; He who's cleansed and done
with birth and death, will tell!
'Tis not to please the crowd
I ask this; but to learn
the verdict of Truth's Lords.

[351]

Thy comprehension holds
the power to make all clear.
Once more, with clasped hands,
we pray thee, matchless sage,
to leave us not astray.

[352]

O thou, whose vision spans
all truth! Untiring sage,
O leave us not astray!
As folk in summer heat
for water pine, pine I
to hear thy words flow forth.

[353]

Did Kappa's higher life
prove fruitless in the end?
Has all he was quite gone?
Or does some part survive?
Say, what Release was his?

[354]

13. 'Acchecchi taṇhaṃ idha nāmarūpe. (ti Bhagavā) [355]
 Kaṇhassa sotaṃ digharattānusayitaṃ
 atāri jātimaṇaṇaṃ asesaraṃ.'
 —Icc' abravī Bhagavā pañcasetṭho.
14. Esa sutvā pasīdāmi vaco te, isisattama; [356]
 'Amoghaṃ kira' me puṭṭhaṃ; na maṃ vañcesi Brāhmaṇo.
15. Yathāvādī tathākārī ahū Buddhassa sāvako; [357]
 acchidā Maccuno jālaṃ tataṃ māyāvino daḷhaṃ.
16. Addasa, Bhagavā, ādiṃ upādānassa Kappiyo; [358]
 accagā vata Kappāyano maccudheyyaṃ suduttaraṃ.

13. SAMMĀPARIBBĀJANIYASUTTA

1. Pucchāmi Muninṃ pahūtapaññaṃ [359]
 tiṇṇaṃ pāragataṃ parinibbutaṃ t̥hitattaṃ:—
 Nikkhamma gharā, panujja kāme,
 kathaṃ bhikkhu sammā so loka paribbajeyya?
-
2. Yassa mangalā samūhatā (ti Bhagavā) [360]
 uppādā supinā ca lakkhaṇā ca,
 sa mangaladosavippahīno
 sammā so loka paribbajeyya.
3. Rāgaṃ vinayetha mānusesu [361]
 dibbesu kāmesu cāpi bhikkhu,
 atikkamma bhavaṃ samecca Dhammaṃ
 sammā so loka paribbajeyya.
4. Vipit̥thikatvā pesuṇāni, [362]
 kodhaṃ kadariyaṃ jaheyya bhikkhu,
 anurodhavirodhavippahīno
 sammā so—pe—
5. Hitvāna piyaṃ c' eva appiyaṃ ca [363]
 anupādāya anissito kuhiñci,
 saṃyojanīyehi vippamutto
 sammā so

The Lord: On earth he shed the craze
for 'personality';
across dark Māra's stream,
he's safe from birth and death.
(Said He who taught the Five.) [355]

Vangisa: Seventh in line of Seers, I hail thy words!
For, when I asked if Kappa's life had proved
no failure, Brahmin, thou hast spoken out! [356]

So then, thy henchman's words and deeds conformed;
he burst false Māra's wide-spread net so strong. [357]

Lord! Kappa found whence transmigration springs,
and passed beyond fell Māra's grisly realms! [358]

Sutta 13. The Anchorite's Ideal

A Questioner: Deep sage, who, safe 'Across',
art spent, consummate, sure,
—declare how th' Almsman here,
who quits his house and home
and pleasure's path forsakes,
best proves true anchorite? [359]

The Lord: Best anchorite is he
who heeds not omens, dreams,
portents, or prodigies;
who sets no store by luck; [360]

whom passion cannot tempt
with joys of men or gods,
because rebirth is quenched,
because the Truth is won; [361]

who resolutely turns
his back on calumny
and wrath and selfishness,
till love and hate are dead; [362]

who bans dislikes and likes,
whom nought sustains, whom nought
supports, whom nought enchains; [363]

6. Na so upadhīsu sāram eti
āḍānesu vineyya chandarāgaṃ,
so anissito anaññāneyyo
sammā so loke paribbajeyya [364]
7. Vacasā manasā ca kammanā ca
aviruddho sammā viditvā Dhammam,
nibbānapadābhipatthayāno
sammā so [365]
8. Yo 'vandati man' ti na uppameyya,
akkutṭho pi na sandhiyetha bhikkhu,
laddhā parabhojanam na majje,
sammā so [366]
9. Lobhañ ca bhavañ ca vippahāya
virato chedanabandhanāto bhikkhu,
so tiṇṇakathamkatho visallo
sammā so [367]
10. Sāruppam attano viditvā
na ca bhikkhu himseyya kañci loke,
yathātathiyam viditvāna Dhammam,
sammā so [368]
11. Yassānusayā na santi keci,
mūlā akusalā samūhatāse,
so nirāsayo anāsayaṇo
sammā so [369]
12. Āsavakhīno pahīnamāno
sabbaṃ rāgapatham upātivatto
danto parinibbuto tñitatto
sammā so [370]
13. Saddho sutavā niyāmadassī
vaggagatesu na vaggasāri dhīro
lobham dosam vineyya paṭigham
sammā so [371]

who never sets his hopes
on mundane things, nor lives
for pelf, whom naught upholds,
who follows no man's lead; [364]

whom words nor thoughts nor deeds
distract from grasping Truth;
who for Nirvāna yearns; [365]

whom homage ne'er inflates
nor scoffs depress, nor feasts
of honour can elate; [366]

who casts out covetise
and lust for life to come;
who harbours no desire
to chain or maim; whose doubts,
with inward barbs, are gone; [367]

whom sense of duty keeps
from harming anyone,
because his eyes have seen
the Doctrine's verities; [368]

whom wrong proclivities
lead not astray because
their harmful roots are gone;
who nothing needs nor seeks; [369]

whose Cankers are destroyed;
who casts forth pride, and quells
all passion,—schooled and sure;
who, being quick, is dead; [370]

whom Faith and Lore have led
to find salvation's road;
whom sects can ne'er pervert;
whom no resentment moves,
nor hate, nor covetise; [371]

14. Saṃsuddhajino, vivattacchaddo,
dhammesu vasi, pārāgū, anejo,
saṃkhāranirodhañāṇakusalo,
saṃmā so loke paribbajeyya. [372]
15. Atītesu anāgatesu cāpi
kappātīto aticca suddhipañño
sabbāyatanehi vip̐pamutto,
saṃmā so [373]
16. Aññāya padaṃ samecca Dhammaṃ
vivaṭaṃ disvāna pahānaṃ āsavānaṃ
sabbūpadhīnaṃ parikkhaya,
saṃmā so loke paribbajeyya. [374]
17. 'Addhā hi, Bhagavā, tath'eva etaṃ;
—yo so evaṃvihārī danto bhikkhu
sabbasaṃyojaniye ca vītivatto
saṃmā so loke paribbajeyya.' [375]

14. DHAMMIKASUTTA

Evam me sutaṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvattthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho Dhammiko upāsako paṇicahi upāsaka-satehi saddhim̐ yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamtvā Bhagavantam̐ abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Dhammiko upāsako Bhagavantam̐ gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Pucchāmi taṃ, Gotama bhūripañña:—
Kathaṃkaro sāvako sādhu hoti:
yo vā agārā anāgāram eti?
agārino vā pan' upāsakāse? [376]
2. Tuvaṃ hi lokassa sadevakassa
gatiṃ pajānāsi parāyanaṃ ca;
na t'atthi tulyo, nipuṇatthadassī;
tuvaṃ hi Buddhaṃ pavaraṃ vadanti. [377]
3. Sabbaṃ tuvaṃ ñāṇam̐ avecca, Dhammaṃ
pakāsesi satte anukampamāno,
vivattacchaddo 'si, samantacakkhu,
virocasi vimalo sabbaloke. [378]

whom purity has crowned
with victory; who strips
the veil from things, and knows
all outlooks, mast'ring all,
wantless, and fully skilled
to quench each Plastic Force;

[372]

who outgrows time—to come,
or past—by purity
and insight, with Release
from all that springs from sense;

[373]

who knows the path and grasps
the Doctrine, seeing clear
how he may Cankers oust
by sapping mundane ties;
—best anchorite is he.

[374]

The Questioner: 'Tis surely so, O Lord!
The Almsman schooled to live
like this, who bursts all bonds,
is best of anchorites.

[375]

Sutta 14. Dhammika's Enquiry

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure-ground, there came to him, with five hundred other lay-followers, the lay-follower Dhammika, who, after due salutations, took his seat to one side and addressed the Lord in the following stanzas:—

Dhammika: What conduct, Gotama,
perfects, as followers,
both those that homeless are
and those that dwell in homes?

[376]

For, thou know'st well the lot
and goal of gods and men,
—thou matchless judge of Weal,
'Buddha most excellent'!

[377]

In pity (knowledge won)
thou did'st reveal the Truth
and unveil all, pure seer,
to flood the world with light.

[378]

4. Āgañchi te santike nāgarājā,
Erāvaṇo nāma, 'Jino' ti sutvā;
so pi tayā mantayitvājjhagamā
'sādhūti' sutvāna patītarūpo. [379]
5. Rājā pi taṃ Vessavaṇo Kuvero
upeti, Dhammaṃ paripucchamāno;
tassāpi tvaṃ pucchito brūsi, dhīra;
so cāpi sutvāna patītarūpo. [380]
6. Ye kec' ime tithiyā vādasilā
(Ājivikā vā yadi vā Nigaṇṭhā),
paññāya taṃ nātitaranti sabbe
—ñhito vajantaṃ viya sīghagāmim. [381]
7. Ye kec' ime brāhmaṇā vādasilā
vuddhā cāpi brāhmaṇā santi keci,
sabbe tayi atthabaddhā bhavanti,
—ye vāpi c' aññe vādino maññamānā. [382]
8. Ayaṃ hi Dhammo nipuṇo sukho ca,
yo 'yaṃ tayā, Bhagavā, suppvutto,
taṃ eva sabbe sussūsamānā;
tvaṃ no vada pucchito, Buddhasetṭha. [383]
9. Sabbe c' ime bhikkhavo sannisinnā,
upāsakā cāpi, tath' eva sotum
suṇantu Dhammaṃ vimalenānubuddhaṃ
subhāsitaṃ, Vāsavassēva devā. [384]

10. Supātha me, bhikkhavo, sāvayāmi vo
Dhammaṃ dhutaṃ, taṃ ca dharātha sabbe,
iriyāpathaṃ pabbajitānulomikam;
sevettha naṃ atthadassī mutimā. [385]
11. Na ve vikāle vicareyya bhikkhu,
gāmaṃ ca piṇḍāya careyya kāle;
akālacāriṃ hi saṃjanti sangā;
—tasmā vikāle na caranti buddhā. [386]
12. Rūpā ca saddā ca rasā ca gandhā
phassā ca ye sammadayanti satte,
etesu dhammesu vineyya chandaṃ
kālena so pavise pātarāsaṃ. [387]

News of 'a Conqueror' [379]

drew Indra's elephant
(of elephants the king),
who joyed to hear thy talk.

Came too the fairies' king, [380]

thy Doctrine to explore.
Such answers thou didst give
as he rejoiced to hear.

Trained Jains and Mendicants [381]

all failed to vanquish thee,
—as they who stand stock-still
catch not the fleet of foot.

Trained brahmins, ripe in years, [382]

—with others keen to air
their point of view—are led
t' embrace thy saving Truth.

For, 'tis thy saving Truth,— [383]

subtile, but preached so well—
for which all yearn. Vouchsafe,
an answer, Lord, to us!

Let th' Almsmen seated round [384]

with these lay followers
learn from thy lips (as gods
hearken to Indra's words)
thy Lore immaculate!

The Lord: Give ear, ye Almsmen! Hear, [385]

and keep, the rules prescribed:—
Let seekers after Weal,
behave as anchorites.

Go not thy round when noon [386]

is past; betimes seek alms.
Snarers greet th' untimely guest;
th' enlighten'd time their rounds.

Before thou seek'st thy meal, [387]

clear thou thy mind of zest
for forms, sounds, odours, taste,
and touch,—which turn men's heads.

13. Piṇḍaṃ ca bhikkhu samayena laddhā [388]
eko paṭikkamma raho nisīde
ajjhatacintī; na mano bahiddhā
nicchāraye sangahitattabhāvo.
14. Sace pi so sallape sāvakena [389]
aññena vā kenaci bhikkhunā vā,
Dhammaṃ paṇītaṃ tam udāhareyya,
na pesuṇaṃ, no pi parūpavādaṃ.
15. Vādaṃ hi eke paṭiseniyanti. [390]
Na te pasarīsāma parittapaññe;
tato tato ne pasajanti sangā,
cittaṃ hi te tattha gamenti dūre.
16. Piṇḍaṃ vihāraṃ sayanāsanaṃ ca [391]
āpaṇi ca saṃghāṭīrajaṭṭupavāhanaṃ
sutvāna Dhammaṃ Sugatena desitaṃ
saṃkhāya seve varapaññāsāvako.
17. Tasmā hi piṇḍe sayanāsane ca [392]
āpe ca saṃghāṭīrajaṭṭupavāhane,
etesu dhammesu anūpalitto
bhikkhu, yathā pokkhare vāribindu.
18. Gahaṭṭhavattaṃ pana vo vadāmi, [393]
yathākaro sāvako sādhu hoti.
—Na h' eso labbhā sapariggahena
phassetuṃ yo kevalo bhikkhudhammo.
19. Pāṇaṃ na hane, na ca ghātayeyya, [394]
na cānujaññā hanataṃ paresaṃ,
sabbesu bhūtesu nidhāya daṇḍaṃ
ye thāvarā ye ca tasanti loke.
20. Tato adinnaṃ parivajjayeyya [395]
kiñci kvaci sāvako bujhamāno;
na hāraye, harataṃ nānujaññā;
sabbaṃ adinnaṃ parivajjayeyya.
21. Abrahmacariyaṃ parivajjayeyya, [396]
angārakāsuraṃ jalitaṃ va, viññū;
asambhuṇanto pana brahmacariyaṃ
parassa dāraṃ na atikkameyya.

Thine alms received, return
alone, to sit apart
and think,—with fixed mind
that never strays abroad.

[388]

In talk with pious folk
or Almsmen, let thy theme
the Doctrine's virtues be,
—not spite, not finding fault.

[389]

If men assail, let us
not heed these shallow pates,
who cling to this or that
as vagrant minds dictate.

[390]

Let wisdom's son, who heard
his Lord, treat alms, cell, bed,
water and rinsings, just
as means, and nothing more.

[391]

Such reason'd use will leave
an Almsman as unstained
as lotus-leaf,—whereon
no drop of water rests.

[392]

To conduct which perfects
lay-followers I pass.
(For, marriage these forbids
to grow to Almsmen's scope.)

[393]

Slay not, nor doom to death,
nor sanction slaughter. Do
no violence to aught
that lives,—or strong or weak.

[394]

No layman, wittingly,
should thief, or order theft,
or sanction any theft;
—take but what others give.

[395]

And shun incontinence
as 'twere a pit of fire,
or, failing continence,
debauch no wedded wife.

[396]

22. Sabhaggato vā parisaggato vā [397]
 ekassa v' eko na musā bhaṇeyya,
 na bhāṇaye, bhaṇataṃ nānujaññā;
 sabbaṃ abhūtaṃ parivajjayeyya.
23. Majjañ ca pānaṃ na samācareyya [398]
 —Dhammaṃ imaṃ rocaṇe yo gahaṭṭho—
 na pāyaye, pipataṃ nānujaññā,
 ummādanantaṃ iti naṃ viditvā.
24. Madā hi pāpāni karonti bālā, [399]
 kāronṭi c' aññe pi jane pamatte;
 etaṃ apuññāyatanāṃ vivajjaye
 ummādanaṃ mohanaṃ bālakantaṃ.
25. "Pāṇam na hane, na cādinnaṃ ādiye, [400]
 musā na bhāse, na ca majjapo siyā,
 abrahmacariyā virameyya methunā,
 rattiṃ na bhuñjeyya vikālabhojanaṃ,
26. mālāṃ na dhāre, na ca gandham ācare, [401]
 mañce chamāyaṃ va sayetha santhate".
 —Etaṃ hi aṭṭhangikam āh' uposathaṃ
 Buddhena dukkhamtagunā pakāsitaṃ.
27. Tato ca pakkhass' upavass' uposathaṃ [402]
 —'cātuddasiṃ pañcadasīṃ aṭṭhamiṃ'—
 pāṭihāriyapakkhañ ca pasannamānaso
 aṭṭhangupetaṃ susamattarūpaṃ.
28. Tato ca pāto upavutthuposatho [403]
 annena pānena ca bhikkhusaṃghaṃ
 pasannacitto anumodamāno
 yathārahaṃ saṃvibhajetha viññū.
29. Dhammena mātāpitara bhareyya, [404]
 payojaye dhammikaṃ so vaṇijjam;
 —etaṃ gihi vattayaṃ appamatto
 Sayampabhe nāma upeti deve ti.

In conclaves, courts, or talk,
let him not lie; let him
not prompt or sanction lies;
—let him renounce untruth. [397]

Layman, observe this law:— [398]
Shun drink; make no man drink;
sanction no drinking. Mark
how drink to madness leads.

Through drink fools sin, and egg [399]
lax brethren on to sin.
So flee this maddening vice,
this folly, bliss of fools.

“Slay not, nor steal, nor lie; [400]
from strong drink keep away;
refrain from lechery;
touch not wrong meals o' nights;

eschew both scents and wreaths; [401]
spread on the ground thy bed.”
(These eightfold sabbath-rules
the saving Buddha framed.)

So make thy sabbath vows [402]
as week succeeds to week,
and keep with pious hearts
this eightfold festival.

At morn, these vows performed, [403]
with pious, thankful heart
be wise and of thy means
give Almsmen food and drink.

Cherish thy parents well; [404]
follow a righteous trade.
—Thus shall the layman staunch
reach realms of light above.

End of the Short Book

III. MAHĀVAGGA

I. PABBAJJĀSUTTA

1. Pabbajjaṃ kittayissāmi, yathā pabbaji Cakkhumā,
yathā vimariṣsamāno so pabbajjaṃ samarocayi. [405]
2. 'Sambādhō 'yaṃ gharāvāso, rajass' āyatanam' iti,
'Abbhokāso ca pabbajjā',—iti disvāna pabbaji. [406]
3. Pabbajitvāna kāyena pāpakammaṃ vivajjayi,
vacīduccaritaṃ hitvā ājīvaṃ parisodhayi. [407]
4. Agamā Rājagahaṃ Buddho Magadhānaṃ Giribbajam
piṇḍāya abhihāresi ākiṇṇavaralakkhaṇo. [408]
5. Tam addasā Bimbisāro pāsādasmiṃ patiṭṭhito;
disvā lakkhaṇasampannaṃ, imam atthaṃ abhāsatha:— [409]
6. 'Imaṃ, bhonto, nisāmetha. Abhirūpo, brahā, suci,
caraṇena c'eva sampanno, yugamattaṃ ca pekkhati [410]
7. okkhittacakkhu satimā; nāyaṃ nīcakulā-m-iva.
Rājadūtā vidhāvantu, kuhiṃ bhikkhu gamissati.' [411]
8. Te pesitā rājadūtā piṭṭhito anubandhisuṃ:— [412]
'Kuhiṃ gamissati bhikkhu? Katthavāso bhavissati?'
9. Sapaḍānaṃ caramāno, guttadvāro, susaṃvuto,
khippaṃ pattam' apūresi sampajāno patissato. [413]
10. Sa piṇḍacāraṃ caritvā, nikkhamma nagarā, muni
Paṇḍavaṃ abhihāresi: 'Etthavāso bhavissati'. [414]
11. Disvāna vāsūpagataṃ tato dūtā upāvisuṃ,
eko ca dūto āgantvā rājino paṭivedayi: [415]
12. 'Esa bhikkhu, mahārāja, Paṇḍavassa puratthato
nisinno vyagghusabho va siho va girigabbhare.' [416]

III. THE LONG BOOK

Sutta 1. Gotama's Pilgrimage

My tongue shall tell his going forth from home, [405]
 shall tell how he, our Seer, left house and home
 for Pilgrimage, and why he chose that life.

Because he saw 'a hole and corner life' [406]
 was all a house and home could give, the Lord
 went forth from home, embracing homelessness.

A Pilgrim now, he shunned all evil deeds [407]
 and lived his life aright, with blameless lips.

To Rājagāha come, th' Enlighten'd One, [408]
 by high distinction stamped, in quest of alms
 entered the hill-girt gorge of Māgadhá.

As from his royal palace he looked down, [409]
 King Bimbisāra thus addressed his court:—

'Mark, sirs, that man, so handsome, tall, and calm, [410]
 of goodly gait, with gaze a plough's length on,

with eyes on earth downcast, of set intent! [411]
 He comes, methinks, of no mean humble stock.
 Let servants speed to track that Almsman down.'

So royal servants tracked the Almsman's steps [412]
 to find where he would go and where would stay.

With senses' portals guarded, self-controll'd, [413]
 from house to house he duly went for alms
 and quickly filled his bowl,—mindful, alert.

His round for alms now o'er, from out the town [414]
 our sage departed, climbing Paṇḍavá
 to find a lodging on its craggy heights.

Marking his lodging down, the messengers [415]
 drew near, while one went back who told the king:—

'Like puissant tiger, or a lion, sire, [416]
 within a cavern on the eastward crags
 of rugged Paṇḍava, your Almsman sits.'

13. Sutvāna dūtavacanāṃ bhaddayānena khattiyo
taramānarūpo niyyāsi yena Paṇḍavapabbato. [417]
14. Sa yānabhūmiṃ yāyitvā yānā oruyha khattiyo
pattiko upasaṃkamma āsajja naṃ upāvisi. [418]
15. Nisajja rājā sammodi kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ tato
kathaṃ so vītisāretvā imam atthaṃ abhāsatha:— [419]
16. 'Yuvā ca daharo cāsi paṭhamuppattiko susu
vaṇṇārohena sampanno, jātimā viya khattiyo [420]
17. sobhayanto anikaggaṃ nāgasarṇghapurakkhato.
Dadāmi bhoge, bhuñjassu, jātiṃ c' akkhāhi pucchito.' [421]
18. 'Ujū janapado, rāja, Himavantassa passato
dhanaviriyeṇa sampanno, Kosalesu niketino, [422]
19. Ādiccā nāma gottena, Sākiyā nāma jātiyā;
tamhā kulā pabbajito [rāja] na kāme abhipatthayaṃ, [423]
20. kāmesv ādīnavāṃ disvā, nekkhammaṃ daṭṭhu khemato,
padhānāya gamissāmi; ettha me rañjati mano' ti. [424]

2. PADHĀNASUTTA

1. Tam maṃ padhānapahitattaṃ, nadim Nerañjaram pati,
viparakkamma jhāyantaṃ yogakkhemassa pattiyā, [425]
2. Namuci karuṇaṃ vācaṃ bhāsamāno upāgami:—
'Kiso tvam asi dubbaṇṇo; santike maraṇaṃ tava. [426]
3. Sahassabhāgo maraṇassa, ekaṃso tava jīvitāṃ. [427]
Jīva, bho ! Jīvitāṃ seyyo;—jīvaṃ puññāni kāhasi.
4. Carato ca te brahmacariyaṃ, aggihuttaṃ ca jūhato, [428]
pahūtaṃ cīyate puññāṃ.—Kiṃ padhānena kāhasi?
5. Duggo maggo padhānāya, dukkaro durabbhisambhavo.' [429]
—Imā gāthā bhaṇaṃ Māro aṭṭhā Buddhassa santike.

Hearing the news, with speed the noble prince
drove forth from town towards Mount Paṇḍava; [417]

and when no further he could ride, on foot [418]
the monarch made his way till him he reached.

Then, seated, after courteous exchange [419]
of seemly greetings, thus the monarch spoke:

'Thou'rt young,—a stripling still in early bloom! [420]

Thy goodly mien bespeaks a gallant prince
his host arraying, elephants in van. [421]

Lo! Here I offer wealth to spend thereon,
and ask thee to disclose thy lineage.'

The Lord: Flanking Himālaya, in Kosalā, [422]
yonder extends a land both rich and brave.

By lineage 'the Kinsmen of the Sun'
are we, and Sākiyans by family. [423]

—Such was the stock I left behind me, sire,
having no appetite for pleasure's toys.

Alive to all the perils pleasure brings, [424]

and finding in Renunciation peace,
I'll struggle onward.—Thus my mind finds bliss.

Sutta 2. Gotama's Struggle

As, purged of self by struggles stern, I sat [425]
in Reverie beside Nerāñjarā,
resolved to win by insight perfect peace,

came Māra, breathing words of ruth, to say [426]
how lean and ill I looked, how nigh to death.

'Death owns' (said he) 'a thousand parts of thee, [427]
and life can claim but one. Hold fast to life!
Life's best; for, living, thou'lt store merit up.

If thou wilt lead a pious life and tend [428]
the fires of sacrifice, much merit will
accrue. By struggles what wilt thou achieve?

Rough is the road, the struggle desperate.' [429]
(Thus Māra, standing by the Buddha's side.)

6. Taṃ tathā-vādināṃ Māraṃ Bhagavā etad abravi:—[430]
Pamattabandhu pāpima, yen' atthena idhāgato,
7. aṇumattena pi puññaena attho mayhaṃ na vijjati.[431]
Yesaṃ ca attho puññaṇaṃ, te Māro vattum arahati.
8. Atthi saddhā, tato viriyaṃ, paññā ca mama vijjati![432]
Evaṃ maṃ pahitattaṃ [pi] kiṃ jīvaṃ anupucchasi?
9. Nadānaṃ api sotāni ayaṃ vāto visosaye,[433]
kiṃ ca me pahitattassa lohitaṃ n' upasussaye?
10. Lohite sussamānamhi pittaṃ semhaṃ ca sussati;[434]
maṃsesu khiyamānesu bhiyyo cittaṃ paṣidati,
bhiyyo sati ca paññā ca samādhī mama tiṭṭhati.
11. Tassa mēvaṃ viharato, pattassa uttamavedanaṃ,[435]
kāmesu nāpekkhate cittaṃ.—Passa sattassa suddhataṃ!
12. Kāmā te paṭhamā senā, dutiyā arati vuccati,[436]
tatiyā khuppiṇā te, catutthī taṇhā pavuccati,
13. pañcamī thīnamiddhan te, chaṭṭhā bhīrū pavuccati,[437]
sattamī vicikicchā te, makkho thambho te aṭṭhamo,
14. lābho siloko sakkāro micchāladdho ca yo yaso,[438]
yo c' attānaṃ samukkaṃse pare ca avajānati;
15. —esā, Namuci, te senā Kaṇhasābhīppahāraṇī;[439]
na naṃ asūro jināti, jetvā ca labhate sukhaṃ.
16. Esa muñjaṃ parihare? Dhi-r-atthu idha jīvitaṃ![440]
Sangāme me mataṃ seyyo, yañce jīve parājito!
17. Pagālhā ettha na dissanti eke samaṇabrāhmaṇā[441]
taṃ ca maggaṃ na jānanti yena gacchanti subbatā.
18. Samantā dhaṇiṇiṃ disvā yuttaṃ Māraṃ savāhanaṃ[442]
yuddhāya paccuggacchāmi. Mā maṃ thānā acāvayi.
19. Yaṃ te taṃ na-ppasahati senaṃ loko sadevako,[443]
taṃ te paññāya vecchāmi, āmaṃ pattaṃ va asmanā.

To Māra's words the Lord made answer thus:—

[430]

The Lord: Thou Evil One! Thou congener of sloth!

I lack no peddling rudiments like these;
no jot of suchlike 'merit' profits me!
Māra should speak to those who 'merit' lack.

[431]

Seeing that faith and energy and lore
have purged all Self away, why talk of 'life'?

[432]

The wind dries rivers up;—shall this my blood
still course when Self is dead, when Self has gone?

[433]

While blood is drying up, the humours too
dry up; and with decay of flesh my mind
grows calmer; stronger grows its watchfulness,
its garner'd Lore, its concentration rapt.

[434]

As thus I dwell, who've braved and borne pain's worst,
my heart for pleasure feels no zest at all.
Behold then, Māra, how a man is cleansed.

[435]

Pleasures of sense compose thy foremost ranks;
dislikes thy second; thirst and hunger form
thy third array; cravings come fourth; the fifth

[436]

is sloth and torpor; sixth faintheartedness;
doubts make the seventh; th' eighth,—pretence, hard heart,

[437]

and pelf, repute, the pride of place, with fame
ill-gotten, scorn of others, praise of self.

[438]

Black Māra, such is thine attacking force,
which only heroes overcome in fight,
and in their conquest find abiding Weal.

[439]

Shall I cry craven? Nay; a pest on life!
I'd sooner die than brook defeat—and live.

[440]

(Engulfed in this world's bogs, some anchorites
and brahmins wholly sink from sight and view,
and never come to know the path saints tread.)

[441]

Seeing this host arrayed, with Māra there
riding his elephant of war, I go
to fight him. May he never beat me back!

[442]

Thy hosts—which neither men nor gods can rout—
with Lore I'll crush, as pebbles smash a bowl.

[443]

20. Vasimkaritvā samkappaṃ satīṃ ca sūpatitṭhitaṃ
raṭṭhā raṭṭhaṃ vicariissaṃ sāvake vinayaṃ puthu. [444]
21. Ty-appamattā pahitattā mama sāsana-kārakā
akāmassa, te gamissanti yattha gantvā na socare. [445]
22. “Satta vassāni Bhagavantam anubandhim padā padam,
otāraṃ nādhigacchissaṃ Sambuddhassa satimato. [446]
23. Medavaṇṇaṃ va pāsānaṃ vāyaso anupariyagā:
‘Ap’ ettha mudu vindema, api assādanā siyā?” [447]
24. Aladdhā tattha assādaṃ vāyas’ etto apakkami. [448]
—Kāko va selaṃ āsajja nibbijjāpema Gotamaṃ.”
25. Tassa sokaparetassa viṇā kacchā abhassatha;
tato so dummano yakkho tatth’ ev’ antaradhāyatha. [449]

3. SUBHĀSITASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvattthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane
—pe—Bhagavā etad avoca:—Catūhi, bhikkhave, angehi samannāgatā vācā
subhāsītā hoti na dubbhāsītā, anavajjā ca ananuvajjā ca viññūnaṃ. Katamehi
catūhi? Idha, bhikkhave, bhikkhu subhāsitaṃ ñeva bhāsati no dubbhāsitaṃ,
Dhammaṃ ñeva bhāsati no adhammaṃ, piyaṃ ñeva bhāsati no appiyaṃ,
saccaṃ ñeva bhāsati no alikaṃ. Imehi kho, bhikkhave, catūhi angehi saman-
nāgatā vācā subhāsītā hoti no dubbhāsītā, anavajjā ca ananuvajjā ca viññūnaṃ ti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā; idaṃ vatvā Sugato athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

1. Subhāsitaṃ uttamam āhu santo; [450]
dhammaṃ bhaṇe nādhammaṃ,—taṃ dutiyaṃ;
piyaṃ bhaṇe nāppiyaṃ,—taṃ tatiyaṃ;
saccaṃ bhaṇe nālikaṃ,—taṃ catutthān ti.

Atha kho āyasmā Vangiso utthāyāsanaṃ ekamsaṃ cīvaraṃ katvā yena
Bhagavā ten’ añjaliṃ paṇāmetvā Bhagavantam etad avoca: ‘Paṭibhāti maṃ,
Sugatāti.’ ‘Paṭibhātu taṃ, Vangīsāti’ Bhagavā avoca. Atha kho āyasmā
Vangiso Bhagavantam sammukhā sārūppāhi gāthāhi abhiththavi:—

2. Tam eva vācaṃ bhāseyya yāy’ attānaṃ na tāpaye,
pare ca na vihimseyya;—sā ve vācā subhāsītā. [451]
3. Piyaṇācam eva bhāseyya, yā vācā patinanditā,
yaṃ anādāya pāpāni paresaṃ bhāsate piyaṃ. [452]

As Captain of my thoughts, with set resolve, [444]
from realm to realm I'll find me followers

zealous and purged of Self, whom loyalty [445]
to my commandments and their lust-free Lord,
shall bring where sorrows find no place at all.

Māra: 'For seven years I might keep dogging him, [446]
yet with the watchful Buddha get no chance!

To see if it was soft and good to eat, [447]
a crow hopped round a stone that looked like fat;

but, disappointed, flew away again. [448]
—In like disgust I give up Gotama!

The Lord: In grief, the sprite then let his lute slip down, [449]
as, sick at heart, he vanished out of sight.

Sutta 3. Apt words

Thus have I heard. Once while staying at Sāvattṭhī in Jeta's grove (Śc.), the Lord spoke as follows:—There are four respects which characterize words apt and not inapt, words irreproachable and beyond reproach from the discerning. And what are the four? Take the case, Almsmen, of an Almsman who always speaks aptly and never inaptly, whose discourse is of the Doctrine only and not of vain matters, whose words are always kindly and never unkind, always truthful and never false. These four respects characterize apt speech. Thus spoke the Lord; and when the Blessed One had thus spoken, he, as Master, went on to say:—

Apt speech the good rank first, [450]
and, second, Doctrine's themes,
the third is kindly speech,
and fourth is truthfulness.

Here the reverend Vangīsa rose from his seat and, with his right shoulder bared and with folded palms outstretched, said to the Lord that a thought had struck him. Being bidden to express it, Vangīsa extolled the Lord to his face in suitable verses, saying:—

Speak thou what neither breeds thyself remorse [451]
nor hurts another.—Suchlike speech is apt.

Speak only kindly words, welcome to hear; [452]
avoid all railing; kindly be thy words.

4. 'Saccam ve amatā vācā', esa dhammo sanantano; [453]
 'sacce atthe ca Dhamme ca', āhu, 'santo patit̐hita'.
5. Yam Buddhō bhāsati vācam khemaṃ nibbānapattiyā, [454]
 dukkhass' antakiriyyāya,—sā ve vācānam uttamā.

4. SUNDARIKABHĀRADVĀJASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Kosalesu viharati Sundarikāya nadiyā tīre. Tena kho pana samayena Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Sundarikāya nadiyā tīre aggim̐ juhati aggihuttaṃ paricarati. Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo aggim̐ juhitaṃ aggihuttaṃ paricaritvā ut̐thāyāsanaṃ samantā catuddisā anuvilokesi: Ko nu kho imaṃ havyasesaṃ bhuñjeyyāti? Addasā kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantam̐ avidūre aññatarasmiṃ rukkhamūle sasīsaṃ pārutaṃ nisinnam̐, disvāna vāmena hatthena havyasesaṃ gahetvā dakkhiṇena hatthena kamaṇḍalum̐ gahetvā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkama. Atha kho Bhagavā Sundarikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa padasaddena sīsaṃ vivari. Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo 'Muṇḍo ayaṃ bhavaṃ! Muṇḍako ayaṃ bhavaṃ ti', tato va puna nivattitukāmo ahosi. Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa etad ahosi: Muṇḍā pi hi idh' ekacce brāhmaṇā bhavanti; yaṃ nūnāhaṃ upasaṃkamitvā jātīm pucchey-
 yaṃ ti?

Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkama, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantam̐ etad avoca: Kim̐jacco bhavaṃ ti?

Atha kho Bhagavā Sundarikabhāradvājaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Na brāhmaṇo no 'mhi, na rājaputto, [455]
 na vessāyano, uda koci no 'mhi.
 Gottam̐ pariññāya puthujjanānaṃ
 akiccano manta carāmi loke.

2. Saṃghātivāsī agiho carāmi [456]
 nivuttakeso abhinibbutatto,
 alippamāno idha mānavehi.
 Akalla' maṃ pucchasi gotta-paṇhaṃ.

3. 'Pucchanti ve, bho, brāhmaṇā brāhmaṇehi saha: Brahmaṇo no [457]
 bhavaṃ ti?'
 'Brāhmaṇo [hi] ce tvaṃ brūsi, maṃ ca brūsi abrahmaṇaṃ,
 taṃ taṃ Sāvittim̐ pucchāmi tipadaṃ catuvīsatakkharam̐.'

'Truth is Nirvāna's speech' (the adage runs); [453]
truth, weal, and Doctrine (so 'tis said) make saints.

The Buddha's words of peace, which show the way [454]
to win Nirvāna and to end all Ill,
rank far above all other spoken words.

Sutta 4. Offerings

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying among the Kosalans on the banks of the river Sundarikā, the brahmin Sundarika-Bhāradvāja was busy there with fire offerings and with ministering to the sacrificial fire; and when all was over and done, he rose up and was looking round in all the four directions to find on whom to bestow what remained over from his sacrifice, when he became aware of the Lord seated close by at the foot of a tree, enveloped—head and all—in his cloak. So, taking in his left hand the remains from the sacrifice and the waterpot in his right hand, the brahmin moved towards the Lord. At the sound of the brahmin's approaching footsteps, the Lord uncovered his head. 'Why, it's only a shaveling, a wretched shaveling!'—said the brahmin to himself and he was minded to turn back. But he bethought him that there were some brahmins too who shaved their heads, and that he might ask the Lord about his descent. So the brahmin came up and asked the Lord what he was by birth.

The Lord: No brahmin I, no prince, [455]
no farmer, or aught else.
All worldly ranks I know,
but, knowing, go my ways
as—simply nobody.

Homeless, in Pilgrim garb, [456]
with shaven crown, I go
my way alone, serene.
—To ask my birth is vain.

The Brahmin: Nay, sir; when brahmins meet they never fail to ask if 'tis a brahmin they address.

The Lord: If you deny to me the brahminhood [457]
you claim, I ask you then of Sāvitti,
with clauses three, two dozen syllables.

4. 'Kiṃ nissitā isayo manujā khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṃ yaññaṃ
akappayimsu puthū idha loke?' [458]

'Ya-d-antagū vedagū yaññaṃkāle
yassāhutim labhe, tass' ijjhe ti brūmi.'

5. 'Addhā hi tassa hutam ijjhe (ti brāhmaṇo) [459]
yaṃ tādisaṃ vedaguṃ addasāma;
tumhādisānaṃ hi adassanena
añño jano bhuñjati pūraḷāsaṃ.'

6. 'Tasmātiha tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, atthena atthiko upasaṃkamma puccha.

Santaṃ vidhūmaṃ anighaṃ nirāsaṃ [460]
appev' idha abhivinde sumedhaṃ.'

7. 'Yaññe ratāhaṃ, bho Gotama, yaññaṃ yitṭhukāmo nāhaṃ pajānāmi,
anusāsatu maṃ bhavaṃ; [461]
yattha hutam ijjhate, brūhi me taṃ.'

'Tena hi tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, odahassu sotaṃ, Dhammaṃ te desessāmi:—

8. Mā jātim puccha, caraṇaṃ ca puccha. [462]
Kaṭṭhā have jāyati jātavedo;
nicākulino pi munī dhitimā
ājāniyo hoti hirinisedho,

9. saccena danto, damasā upeto, [463]
vedantagū, vusitabrahmacariyo;
kālena tamhi havyaṃ pavecche,
yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.

10. Ye kāme hitvā agihā caranti, [464]
susaṃyatattā tasaraṃ va ujju
kālena tesu havyaṃ pavecche
yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.

The Brahmin: What moved so many sages—brahmins, nobles, and others—to make oblations to deities here on earth? [458]

The Lord: If saints partake (say I),
the donor's thereby blest.

The Brahmin: A blessing sure is mine [459]
who find a saint in thee.
Had I not found thy like,
my cake had gone elsewhere.

The Lord: Well, brahmin, since you are in quest of Weal, draw near and question me.

You'll find in me a sage [460]
good, taint-less, want-less, calm.

The Brahmin: My delight, Gotama, is in offerings; I am anxious to make offerings; but know not how.

Pray, teach me, sir,— [461]
what offerings will bless.

The Lord: Hearken, then, brahmin; and I will expound the Doctrine to you:—

Judge not by birth, but life. [462]
As any chips feed fire,
mean birth may breed a sage
noble and staunch and true.

Let brahmins 'merit' seek [463]
by offerings where truth
and self-control hold sway,
with lore and holy life;

and where the homeless, dead [464]
to pleasure, temperate,
press—shuttle-wise—straight on;

11. Ye vītarāgā susamāhitindriyā [465]
cando va Rāhugahaṇā pamuttā,
kālena tesu—pe—
12. Asajjamānā vicaranti loke [466]
sadā satā, hitvā mamāyitāni,
kālena tesu
13. Yo kāme hitvā abhibhuyyacārī, [467]
yo vedi jātimaṇassa antaṃ
parinibbuto udakarahado va sīto,
Tathāgato arahatī pūraḷāsaṃ.
14. Samo samehi, visamehi dūre, [468]
Tathāgato hoti anantapaṇiṇo;
anūpalitto idha vā huram vā,
Tathāgato arahatī pūraḷāsaṃ.
15. Yamhi na māyā vasati na māno, [469]
yo vītalobho amamo nirāso,
panuṇṇakodho abhinibbutatto,
so Brāhmaṇo sokamalaṃ ahāsi;
Tathāgato—pe—
16. Nivesanaṃ yo manaso ahāsi, [470]
pariggahā yassa na santi keci,
anupādiyāno idha vā huram vā,
Tathāgato
17. Samāhito yo udatāri oghaṃ [471]
Dhammaṃ ca ñāsi paramāya diṭṭhiyā,
khīṇāsavo, antimadehadhārī,
Tathāgato
18. Bhavāsavā yassa vacī kharā ca [472]
vidhūpitā, atthagatā, na santi,
sa vedagū sabbadhi vippamutto,
Tathāgato
19. Saṅgātigo, yassa na santi saṅgā, [473]
yo mānasattesu amānasatto,
dukkhaṃ pariññāya sakhettavatthum,
Tathāgato
20. Āsaṃ anissāya, vivekadassī, [474]
paravediyaṃ diṭṭhim upātivatto,
ārammaṇā yassa na santi keci,
Tathāgato

and where the passion-free
in peace have found Release,
—like moons from Rāhu's jaws;

[465]

and where th' emancipate
in ceaseless vigilance
move, calling nothing theirs.

[466]

Victor by quelling lusts,
Ender of birth and death,
calm, cool as is a lake,
Truth's Finder claims your gifts;
to former Buddhas peer,
remote from lesser men,
stainless, of boundless Lore;

[467]

[468]

who, void of guile and pride,
cares not to get or have,
true Brahmin, wrathless, spent;

[469]

whose mind, from errors freed,
retains no hankerings,
who clings to naught at all;

[470]

who stoutly crossed the Flood,
whose vision saw the Truth,
whose Cankers now are gone,
whom clay shall clothe no more;

[471]

the sage of full Release,
from whom the lust to live
(and biting tongue) have gone
and left no smould'ring trace;

[472]

who, bursting ties, is free,
who, pride-less 'mong the proud,
has plumbed Ill's cause and range;

[473]

who, craving nothing, soars
to heights no others knew,
with naught to cause rebirth;

[474]

21. Parovarā yassa samecca dhammā
vidhūpitā, atthagatā, na santi;
santo, upādānakhaye vimutto,
Tathāgato [475]
22. Saṃyojanamjātikhayantadassī
yo 'pānudi rāgapatham asesam,
suddho niddoso vimalo akāco,
Tathāgato [476]
23. Yo attanā 'Attānam' nānupassati,
samāhito ujjugato t̥hitatto,
sa ve anejo akhilo akankho,
Tathāgato [477]
24. Mohantarā yassa na santi keci,
sabbesu dhammesu ca ñāpadassī,
sarīrañ ca antimam dhāreti,
patto Sambodhim anuttaram sivaṃ
(ettāvataṃ yakkhassa suddhi),
—Tathāgato arahati pūrañāsam.' [478]
25. 'Hutañ ca mayham hutam atthu saccam,
yam tādisaṃ vedagunam alattham. [479]
- Brahmā hi sakkihi! Patigaṇhātu me Bhagavā, bhuñjatu me Bhagavā,
pūrañāsam!'
26. 'Gāthābhigitaṃ me abhojaneyyam.
Sampassataṃ, brāhmaṇa, n' esa dhammo;
gāthābhigitaṃ panudanti buddhā;
Dhamme sati, brāhmaṇa, vuttir esā. [480]
27. Aññena ca kevalinaṃ mahesim,
khīṇāsavaṃ kukkucavūpasantaṃ
annena pānena upaṭṭhahassu;
khettaṃ hi taṃ puññapekhaṃ hoti.' [481]
28. 'Sādhāham, Bhagavā, tathā vijaññaṃ
yo dakkhiṇaṃ bhuñjeyya mādisassa,
yam yaññaṃ pariyesamāno,
pappuyya tava sāsanam.' [482]
29. 'Sārambhā yassa vigatā, cittaṃ yassa anāvilam,
vippamutto ca kāmehi, thīnaṃ yassa panūditam, [483]

beneath whose gaze all 'creeds',
consumed to ashes, die;
who, being spent, is freed;

[475]

who saw how bonds and birth
could be destroyed and cease;
who—passion swept away—
is cleansed, unmarred, and pure;

[476]

who finds no inward 'Self';
who—fixed, unswerving, sure—
is schooled, craves not, nor doubts;

[477]

he who with mind unwarped
fathoms each mental state,
whose body is his last,
who in Enlightenment
won bliss which crowns the pure;
—Truth's Finder claims your gifts.

[478]

The Brahmin: May mine prove off'ring true,
who find a sage like thee.

[479]

Brahmā be witness! Lord, vouchsafe to take my cake.

The Lord: I touch no chanter's fee!
Seers countenance it not;
th' enlighten'd scout such fees;
and while the Doctrine lasts,
this practice must obtain.

[480]

Provide with other fare
a sage of holy peace,
consummate, Canker-less.
—Merit to reap, sow *there!*

[481]

The Brahmin: Who, Lord, should have my cake?
Whom would'st thou bid me seek,
at time of sacrifice,
to eat a cake of mine?

[482]

The Lord: Seek him who's done with strife, unmarred of heart,
lust-free, and roused from crass stolidity;

[483]

30. *simantānaṃ vinetāraṃ, jātimaṇṇakovidāṃ, [484]
muniraṃ moneyyasampannaṃ, tādisaṃ yaññaṃ āgataṃ*
31. *bhakuṭṭiṃ vinayitvāna paññalikaṃ namassatha, [485]
pūjetha annapānena;—evaṃ ijjhanti dakkhiṇā.*
32. *'Buddho bhavaṃ arahati pūraḷāsaṃ, puññaakkhettaṃ anuttaraṃ, [486]
āyāgo sabbalokassa; bhoto dinnāṃ mahapphalānaṃ ti.'*

Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca:
Abhikkantaṃ . . . (&c. as at page 24) . . . arahataṃ ahosi.

5. MĀGHASUTTA

Evam me sutaṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Rājagahe viharati Gijjhakūṭe pabbate. Atha kho Māgho māṇavo yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodi, sammodaniyaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinna kho Māgho māṇavo Bhagantaṃ etad avoca:—Ahaṃ hi, bho Gotama, dāyako dānapati vadaññū yācayogo; dhammena bhoge pariyesāmi; dhammena bhoge pariyesitvā, dhammaladdhehi bhogehi dhammādhigatehi ekassa pi dadāmi, dvinnam pi dadāmi, tiṇṇam pi dadāmi, catunnam pi dadāmi, pañcannam pi dadāmi, channam pi dadāmi, sattannam pi dadāmi, aṭṭhannam pi dadāmi, navannam pi dadāmi, dasannam pi dadāmi, vīsāya pi dadāmi, tiṃsāya pi dadāmi, cat-tārisāya pi dadāmi, paññāsāya pi dadāmi, satassa pi dadāmi, bhiyyo pi dadāmi. Kaccāhaṃ, bho Gotama, evaṃ dadanto, evaṃ yajanto, bahūṃ puññaṃ pasavāmīti?

Taggha tvaṃ, māṇava, evaṃ dadanto evaṃ yajanto bahūṃ puññaṃ pasavasi. Yo kho, māṇava, dāyako dānapati . . . ekassa pi dadāti—pe—satassa pi dadāti, bhiyyo pi dadāti, bahūṃ so puññaṃ pasavatīti.

Atha kho Māgho māṇavo Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:—

1. *Puccāhaṃ' ahaṃ bho Gotamaṃ vadaññaṃ (iti Māgho [487]
kāśāyavāsiṃ agihaṃ carantaṃ:— māṇavo)
Yo yācayogo dānapati gahaṭṭho
puññaṭṭhiko yajati puññapekho
dadaṃ paresaṃ idha annapānaṃ,
—kathaṃ hutaṃ yajamānassa sujje?*

who teaches folk the bounds of rectitude
and, versed in birth and death, is 'perfect sage'. [484]
When such a one draws near the sacrifice,

scorn not but welcome him; entreat him well. [485]
'Tis thus that offerings a blessing bring.

The Brahmin: Th' Enlighten'd Lord is chief recipient; [486]
for, he is merit's richest field, a shrine
for all the world's oblations;—gifts to him
bring forth abundant fruit in rich return!

Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again . . . (*Œc.*, as at p. 25) . . . Sundarika-Bhāradvāja was numbered among the Arahats.

Sutta 5. Largesse

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying near Rājagaha at Vulture's Peak, a young brahmin named Māgha came to him and after courteous greetings took his seat to one side, saying to the Lord:—I am generous, Gotama, accessible and openhanded. I seek my substance aright, and from what I thus get and obtain I give away to a single individual, or to two or more recipients—up to a hundred or more. Now tell me, Gotama, do I by all these doles and oblations store up much merit?

Certainly you do, young brahmin; so would anyone who is generous, accessible and openhearted,—seeking his substance aright and, from what he has thus got and obtained, giving away to a single individual, or to two or more recipients, up to a hundred or more.

Thereupon, Māgha addressed the Lord in these stanzas:—

Māgha: Skilled judge of men's requests, [487]
who goest, yellow-robed,
thy homeless way,—I ask
thee, Gotama, to whom
should open-handed folk,
who merit seek, do well
to offer food and drink?

2. Yo yācayogo dānapatī gahaṭṭho (*Māghāti Bhagavā*) [488]
 puññatthiko yajati puññapekho
 dadam̐ paresam̐ idha annapānam̐,
 ārādhaye dakkhiṇeyyehi tādi.
3. Yo yācayogo dānapatī gahaṭṭho (*iti Māgho māṇavo*) [489]
 puññatthiko yajati puññapekho
 dadam̐ paresam̐ idha annapānam̐,
 —akkhāhi me, Bhagavā, “dakkhiṇeyye”?
4. Ye ve asattā vicaranti loke, [490]
 akiñcanā kevalino yatattā,
 kālena tesu havyam̐ pavecche
 yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.
5. Ye sabbasaṃyojanabandhanacchidā, [491]
 dantā vimuttā anighā nirāsā,
 kālena tesu havyam̐ pavecche
 yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.
6. Ye sabbasaṃyojanavippamuttā, [492]
 dantā vimuttā anighā nirāsā,
 kālena—pe—
7. Rāgañ ca dosañ ca pahāya moham̐ [493]
 khīṇāsavā vusitabrahmacariyā,
 kālena
8. Yesu na māyā vasatī, na māno, [494]
 ye vītalobhā amamā nirāsā,
 kālena
9. Ye ve na taṇhasu upātippannā, [495]
 vitareyya ogham̐, amamā caranti
 kālena
10. Yesam̐ taṇhā na ’tthi kuhiñci loke, [496]
 bhavābhavāya idha vā huram̐ vā,
 kālena
11. Ye kāme hitvā agihā caranti, [497]
 susaṃyatattā, tasaram̐ va ujju,
 kālena

The Lord: Success will crown their gifts
if he who takes has worth.

[488]

Māgha: In what consists that worth?

[489]

The Lord: When 'merit' is the aim,
let brahmins give to saints
who walk in self-control,
without belongings, freed;

[490]

—to those who, bursting Bonds,
are schooled, free, want-less, calm;

[491]

—to those who, loosed from Bonds,
are schooled, free, want-less, calm;

[492]

—to those, from passion, hate,
and error purged, who live
th' uncanker'd, holy life;

[493]

—to those in whom no guile
nor pride abides; who care
neither to get nor have;

[494]

—to those who—cravings quelled—
unburthened cross the Flood;

[495]

—to those who nowise crave
a future term of life,
on earth or anywhere;

[496]

—to those who, rid of lusts,
pursue their homeless way
straight onward, shuttle-wise,
in perfect self-control;

[497]

12. Ye vītarāgā susamāhitindriyā,
cando va Rāhugahaṇā pamuttā,
kālena [498]
13. Samitāvino vītarāgā akopā
yesaṃ gatī na 'tthi idha vippahāya,
kālena [499]
14. Jahetvā jātimaṇaṃ asesam,
kathamkatham sabbaṃ upātivattā,
kālena [500]
15. Ye attadipā vicaranti loke,
akiñcana sabbadhi vippamuttā,
kālena [501]
16. Ye h' ettha jānanti yathātathā idam:
'Ayaṃ antimā, na 'tthi punabbhavo' ti,
kālena [502]
17. Yo vedagū jhānarato satimā,
sambodhipatto, saraṇaṃ bahunnaṃ,
kālena tamhi havyaṃ pavecche,
yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha. [503]
18. Addhā amoghā mama pucchanā ahu;
akkhāsi me Bhagavā "dakkhiṇeyye".
'Tvaṃ h' ettha jānāsi yathātathā idam,
tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo. [504]
19. Yo yācayo dānapatī gahaṭṭho (*iti Māgho māṇavo*) [505]
puññatthiko yajati puññapekho
dadaṃ paresaṃ idha annapānaṃ,
—akkhāhi me, Bhagavā, "yaññasampadaṃ".
20. 'Yajassu; yajamāno, Māghā, (*ti Bhagavā*) [506]
sabbattha ca vippasādehi cittaṃ;
ārammaṇaṃ yajamānassa yañño,
ettha patiṭṭhāya jahāti dosaṃ.
21. So vītarāgo, pavineyya dosaṃ, [507]
mettaṃ cittaṃ bhāvayaṃ appamāṇaṃ,
rattindivaṃ satataṃ appamatto
sabbā disā pharate appamaññaṃ.'

—to those, to passion dead,
with pow'rs in leash, Released
(like moons from Rāhu's jaws),

[498]

at peace, meek, passionless,
who've barred all further births,

[499]

who've done with birth and death,
and overcome all doubts;

[500]

—to those who're their own light,
unburthened, wholly freed;

[501]

—to those who realize:—
'This life's my last! my last!'

[502]

—to Him, the watchful seer,
whose Lore and Reveries
won him Enlightenment
to shelter multitudes;
—on Him let brahmins gifts
bestow, who merit seek.

[503]

Māgha: Not vainly did I ask.
For now the Lord (who knows
and clearly sees it all)
has shown to whom to give.

[504]

When open-handed folk
who merit seek to win,
bestow their food and drink
on others as a gift,
—does that a 'blessing' bring?

[505]

The Lord: In giving, purge thy heart,
till giving fills thy thought
and Blemishes depart.

[506]

Thus, shalt thou,—calm, benign,
zealous by night and day—
breed limitless goodwill
embracing all the worlds.

[507]

22. Ko sujjhati?—muccati?—bajjhātī ca? [508]
 Ken' attanā gacchati Brahmaloḥam?
 Ajānato me, Muni, brūhi puṭṭho!
 (Bhagavā hi me sakkhi, Brahm' ajja diṭṭho;
 tvaṃ hi no Brahmasamo ti saccaṃ!)
 Kathaṃ upapajjati Brahmaloḥam, jutimā?

23. Yo yajati tividhaṃ yaññasampadaṃ [509]
 (Māghāti Bhagavā)
 ārādhaṃ dakkhiṇeyyehi tādi,
 evaṃ yajitvā sammā yācayogo
 upapajjati Brahmaloḥam ti brūmīti.

Evaṃ vutte Māgho māṇavo Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: 'Abhikkantaṃ bho Gotama—pe—ajjtagge paṇupetaṃ saraṇaṃ gataṃ ti.'

6. SABHIYASUTTA

Evaṃ me sutāṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Rājagahe viharati Veḷuvane Kalandakanivāpe. Tena kho pana samayena Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa purāṇasālohitāya devatāya pañhā uddiṭṭhā honti:—'Yo te, Sabhiya, samaṇo vā brāhmaṇo vā ime pañhe puṭṭho vyākaroṭi, tassa santike brahmacariyaṃ careyyāsīti.' Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako, tassā devatāya santike te pañhe uggahetvā, ye te samaṇabrāhmaṇā saṃghino gaṇino gaṇācariyā ñātā yasassino tithakaraṃ sādhusammataṃ bahujaṇassa, seyyathidaṃ: Pūraṇo Kassapo, Makkhali Gosālo, Ajito Kesakambali, Pakudho Kaccāyano, Saṅjayo Belaṭṭhiputto, Nigaṇṭho Nātaputto,—te upasaṃkamitvā te pañhe pucchati. Te Sabhiyena paribbājakena pañhe puṭṭhā na sampāyanti; asampāyantā kopaṇi ca dosaṇi ca appaccayaṇi ca pātukaronti; api ca Sabhiyaṃ yeva paribbājakaṃ paṭipucchanti. Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahosi:—'Ye kho te bhonto samaṇabrāhmaṇā saṃghino gaṇino gaṇācariyā ñātā yasassino tithakaraṃ sādhusammataṃ bahujaṇassa, seyyathidaṃ: Pūraṇo Kassapo—pe—Nigaṇṭho Nātaputto, te mayā pañhe puṭṭhā na sampāyanti; asampāyantā kopaṇi ca dosaṇi ca appaccayaṇi ca pātukaronti; api ca maṃ yev' ettha paṭipucchanti. Yan nūnāhaṃ hināy' āvattitvā kāme paribhujeyyan ti?'

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahosi:—'Ayam pi samaṇo Gotamo saṃghī c' eva gaṇi ca gaṇācariyo ca ñāto yasassī tithakaro sādhusammato bahujaṇassa. Yan nūnāhaṃ samaṇaṃ Gotamaṃ upasaṃkamitvā ime pañhe puccheyyan ti?'

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahosi:—'Ye pi kho te bhonto samaṇabrāhmaṇā jīṇṇā vuddhā mahallakā addhagatā vayo anuppattā therā

Māgha: Who's cleansed, or freed, or bound?

[508]

Whereby can one secure
passage to Brāhmā's realms?
I know not; tell me, Sage,
—thou Brāhmā manifest!
I vow thee Brāhmā's peer!
How, Lord of light, can man
pass hence to Brāhmā's realms?

The Lord: Let him whose gifts are graced

[509]

by gifts' three virtues, find
recipients of worth;
—Such openhandedness
admits to Brāhmā's realms.

Hereon, the young brahmin Māgha said to the Lord:—Wonderful, Gotama, quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again . . . (*Śc.*, as at p. 35) . . . from this day forth while life lasts.

Sutta 6. Sabhiya's Questions

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Rājagaha in the Bamboo grove where the squirrels were fed, a certain deity who in life on earth had been a relation of Sabhiya the Wanderer, propounded certain questions, with the injunction to Sabhiya to follow any anchorite or brahmin who could answer them. After learning these questions from the deity, Sabhiya betook him to anchorites and brahmins who had confraternities and schools, and were known and famed as heads of schools and founders of saving creeds and were held in high popular repute,—such as Pūraṇa Kassapa, Makkhali Gosāla, Ajita Kesa-Kambali, Pakudha Kaccāyana, Sañjaya Belaṭṭhi-putta, and Nāta-putta the Jain; and to each of these six he put those questions. But not one of them could furnish the answers; each and all of them, on being questioned by Sabhiya, showed temper and irritation and resentment, and put counter-questions of their own to Sabhiya, till he was tempted to abandon the higher life for a life of pleasure.

But the thought came to him that, over and above these six, there was the anchorite Gotama, who equally had a confraternity and a school of his own, and was known and famed as the head of a school and the founder of a saving creed, and was held in high popular repute. Why not ask Gotama?

Then followed the thought that all those personages whom he had already asked without success, were old and venerable men of long standing as

rattaññū cirapabbajitā saṃghino gaṇino . . . mañ yev' ettha paṭipucchanti. Kiṃ pana me samaṇo Gotamo ime pañhe puṭṭho vyākariṣṣati? Samaṇo hi Gotamo daharo c' eva jātiyā navo ca pabbajjāyāti.'

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahoṣi:—'Samaṇo kho daharo ti na uññātabbo, na paribhotabbo; daharo pi ce samaṇo hoti, so ca hoti mahiddhiko mahānubhāvo. Yan nūnāhaṃ samaṇaṃ Gotamaṃ upasaṃkamitvā ime pañhe puccheyyan ti?'

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako yena Rājagahaṃ tena cārikaṃ pakkāmi, anupubbena cārikaṃ caramāno yena Rājagahaṃ, Veḷuvanaṃ, Kalandakaniṇvāpo, yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkamaṃ, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodi, sammodaniyaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajiha-bhāsi:—

1. Kamkhī vecikicchī āgamaṃ (iti Sabhiyo) [510]
pañhe pucchituṃ abhikaṃkhamāno;
tes' antakaro bhavāhi me, pañhe me puṭṭho
anupubbaṃ anudhammaṃ vyākaroḥi me.
2. Dūrato āgato si (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [511]
pañhe pucchituṃ abhikaṃkhamāno;
—tes' antakaro bhavāmi te, pañhe te puṭṭho
anupubbaṃ anudhammaṃ vyākaroṃi te.
3. Puccha maṃ, Sabhiya, pañhaṃ yaṃ kiñci manas' icchasi, [512]
tassa tass' eva pañhassa ahaṃ antaṃ karomi te ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahoṣi:—'Acchariyaṃ vata bho; abbhutaṃ vata bho! yaṃ vatāhaṃ aññesu samaṇabrāhmaṇesu okāsamattam pi nālatthaṃ, tam me idaṃ samaṇena Gotamena okāsakammaṃ katan ti', attamaṇo pamodito udaggo pītisomanassajāto Bhagavantaṃ pañhaṃ pucchi:—

4. Kiṃpattinaṃ āhu 'bhikkhunaṃ?' (iti Sabhiyo) [513]
'Sorataṃ' kena? Kathaṃ ca 'dantaṃ' āhu?
'Buddho' ti kathaṃ pavuccati?
Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi.
5. Pajjena katena attanā (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [514]
parinibbānagato vitiṇṇakamkho,
vibhavaṃ ca bhavaṃ ca vippahāya,
vusitavā khīṇapunabbhavo,—sa "bhikkhu".

anchorites, and that, as they had all failed to answer the questions, how could answers be expected from Gotama,—who was so junior in years and had only become an anchorite so recently?

But here came the thought to Sabhiya that an anchorite was not to be despised and scorned on grounds of youth, and that if a young man became an anchorite, he attained great potency and powers. So why not ask Gotama the questions?

Thereupon, Sabhiya the Wanderer set out on an alms-pilgrimage to Rājagaha and at last found the Lord in the Bamboo grove where the squirrels were fed and, after courteous greetings sat down to one side, addressing the Lord in these stanzas:—

Sabhiya: Doubt and perplexity
bring me with questions here;
I pray you make all clear;
expound their full import
as I put each in turn. [510]

The Lord: Thou comest from afar
with questionings; and I
will answer each in turn
and show its full import. [511]

So ask me what thou wilt
and I will answer it. [512]

Thought Sabhiya to himself:—It is wonderful, it is marvellous, how the anchorite Gotama has accorded me the hearing which all those other anchorites and brahmins refused me! So in gladness and joy, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya asked the Lord the following question:—

What stamps 'the Almsman true'? [513]
What makes him 'meek' and 'schooled'?
What marks 'Enlightenment'?
Answer me, Lord, I pray.

The Lord: The 'Almsman true' is he [514]
who treads his chosen path
up to Nirvāṇa, quit
of doubts, not troubling if
life closes or runs on,
—the man who greatly lived
and now hath slain rebirth.

6. Sabbattha upekhako satīmā,
na so hīmsati kañci sabbaloke,
tiṇṇo samaṇo anāvilo,
ussadā yassa na santi, “sorato” so. [515]
7. Yass’ indriyāni bhāvitāni,
ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke;
nibbijja imaṃ paraṃ ca lokam
kālaṃ kaṃkhati bhāvito, sa “danto”. [516]
8. Kappāni viceyya kevalāni,
saṃsāraṃ dubhayaṃ cutūpapātaṃ,
vigataraṇaṃ anagaṇaṃ visuddhaṃ,
pattaṃ jātikkhayaṃ,—tam āhu “buddhan” ti. [517]

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavato bhāsitaṃ abhinanditvā anumoditvā attamano pamodito udaggo pītisomanassajāto Bhagavantaṃ uttarim pañhaṃ apucchi:—

9. Kimpattinaṃ āhu “brāhmaṇaṃ”?
“samaṇaṃ” kena? kathaṃ ca “nhātaṃ” ti?
“nāgo” ti kathaṃ pavuccati?
—Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi. (iti Sabhiyo) [518]
10. Bāhetvā sabbapāpakāni,
vimalo sādhusamāhito ṭhitatto,
saṃsāraṃ aticca kevali so
asito tādī pavuccate “brahmā”. (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [519]
11. Samitāvi, pahāya puñṇapāpaṃ,
virajo, ñatvā imaṃ paraṃ ca lokam,
jātimaraṇaṃ upātivatto,
“samaṇo” tādī pavuccate tathattā. [520]

The man of watchful poise
who harms no living thing,
the stainless anchorite
—beyond life's Flood, devoid
of arrogance,—is 'meek'.

[515]

He's 'schooled' who drills each thought
—self-bred or from without—,
whom scrutiny of this
and other worlds has taught
calmly to wait death's call.

[516]

'Enlightenment' is his
whose piercing eye surveys
all ages, and perceives
how creatures come and go
to tramp their dismal round;
who—spotless, stainless, pure—
has done with birth and death.

[517]

Thereon, in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant
Sabhiya asked his next question:—

What stamps a 'Brahmin', Lord?
—an 'Anchorite'?—a 'Saint'?
What makes a 'Paragon'?
Answer me, Lord, I pray.

[518]

The Lord: 'Brahmin' is he who—quit
of evil, steadfast, rapt—
has left rebirth behind
for calm, consummate Peace.

[519]

True 'Anchorite' is he
who, finding anchorage
beyond works good or bad,
by faultlessness has plumbed
both this and other worlds,
and vanquished birth and death.

[520]

12. Ninhāya sabbapāpakāni,
ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke,
devamanussesu kappiyesu
kappaṃ n' eti, tam āhu "nhātako" ti. [521]

13. Āgum na karoti kiñci loke,
sabbasaṃyoge visajja bandhanāni
sabbattha na sajjati vimutto,
—"nāgo" tādi pavuccate tathattā ti. [522]

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako—pe—Bhagavantam uttarim pañham
apucchi:—

14. Kaṃ "khettajinam" vadanti buddhā?
"kusalam" kena? kathaṃ ca "paṇḍito" ti?
"muni" nāma katham pavuccati?
—Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi. (iti Sabhiyo) [523]

15. Khetṭāni viceyya kevalāni
divyaṃ mānusakāṃ ca brahmakhettaṃ
sabbakhettaṃ mālabandhanā pamutto,
"khettajino" tādi pavuccate tathattā. (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [524]

16. Kosāni viceyya kevalāni
dibbaṃ mānusakāṃ ca brahmakosam,
sabbakosam mālabandhanā pamutto,
"kusalo" tādi pavuccati tathattā. [525]

17. Dubhayāni viceyya paṇḍarāni
ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca suddhipañño,
kaṇhasukkaṃ upātivatto,
"paṇḍito" tādi pavuccate tathattā. [526]

18. Asataṃ ca sataṃ ca ñatvā dhammaṃ
ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke,
devamanussehi pūjiyo so,
sangam jālaṃ aticca,—so "munīti". [527]

The 'Saint' has washed away
all evil, inly bred
or from without; no more
he'll enter time—like gods
and men, the brood of time.

[521]

He who lives guiltless here,
who, bursting bonds and ties,
hugs naught, but wins Release,
—is therefore 'Paragon'.

[522]

Hereupon, in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya asked his next question:—

Whom do th' enlighten'd term
'field's conqueror'? What makes
a 'skilled' man?—what a 'sage'?
and what proclaims the 'seer'?
Answer me, Lord, I pray.

[523]

The Lord: When thought on fields to grow
bliss—human or divine—
uproots all zest for fields,
a man has 'conquer'd fields'.

[524]

When thought on barns to store
bliss—human or divine—
uproots all zest for barns,
a man attains to 'skill'.

[525]

When thought on senses' range
(internal or without)
has left conviction clear
—above all hopes or fears—,
that makes a man a 'sage'.

[526]

A 'seer' is he who knows
all outlooks good or bad,
selfbred or from without;
whom gods and men revere;
who bursts all ties and snares.

[527]

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako—pe—Bhagavantam uttarim pañham apucchi:—

19. Kimpattinaṃ āhu “vedagum”? (iti Sabhiyo) [528]
 “Anuviditam” kena? kathaṃ ca “viriyavā” ti?
 “Ājāniyo” kin ti nāma hoti?
 —Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi.

20. Vedāni viceyya kevalāni (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [529]
 samañānaṃ yāni p’ atthi brāhmaṇānaṃ
 sabbavedanāsu vitarāgo
 sabbaṃ vedam aticca,—“vedagū” so.

21. Anuvicca papañca-nāmarūpaṃ, [530]
 ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca rogamūlaṃ,
 sabbarogamūlabandhanā pamutto,
 “anuvidito” tādi pavuccate tathattā.

22. Virato idha sabbapāpakhe, [531]
 nirayaḍukkhā aticca, viriyavāso,
 so “viriyavā” padhānavā
 dhīro tādi pavuccate tathattā.

23. Yass’ assu lūtāni bandhanāni [532]
 ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sangamūlaṃ,
 sabbasangamūlabandhanā pamutto,
 “ājāniyo” tādi pavuccate tathattā ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako—pe—Bhagavantam uttarim pañham apucchi:—

24. Kimpattinaṃ āhu “sottiyaṃ” (iti Sabhiyo) [533]
 “ariyaṃ” kena? Kathaṃ ca “caraṇavā” ti?
 “Paribbājako” kin ti nāma hoti?
 Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi.

25. Sutvā sabbadhammaṃ abhiññāya loka (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [534]
 sāvajjānavajjaṃ yad atthi kiñci
 abhibbuṃ, akathaṃkathim, vimuttaṃ,
 anigamaṃ, sabbadhi-m-āhu “sottiyo” ti.

Hereon, in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya asked his next question:—

What stamps 'th' adept in lore'? [528]
 What makes him 'come to know'?
 How gets he 'zeal'? And what
 is termed a 'scion', Lord?
 Answer me, Lord, I pray.

The Lord: He who surveying lore [529]
 (brahmins' and anchorites'),
 and, losing zest for things
 of sense, outgrows all lore,
 —'tis he is 'lore's adept'.

He who detects the curse [530]
 of 'personality'
 (disease's root!), and plucks
 out all that bound him fast,
 —'tis he has 'come to know'.

He who, eschewing wrong, [531]
 prevails o'er pains of hell,
 shews 'zeal' by battling on
 in staunch persistency.

He who snaps bonds within [532]
 and stubs all roots without,
 till he is free from roots
 and bonds,—a 'scion' is.

Hereon in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya put his next question:—

What stamps man 'Erudite'? [533]
 What makes him 'Noble'?—What
 'Upright'?—What 'Anchorite'?
 Answer me, Lord, I pray.

The Lord: He who has learned and plumbed [534]
 all outlooks, till—beyond
 all praise and blame—doubts pass,
 and with Release comes calm,
 —he's wholly 'Erudite'.

26. Chetvā āsavāni, ālayāni [535]
vidvā, so na upeti gabbhaseyyam;
saññānaṃ tividdhaṃ panujja paṇaṃ
kappaṇaṃ n' eti, tam āhu "ariya" ti.
27. Yo idha caraṇesu pattipatto [536]
kusalo sabbadā ajāni Dhammaṃ,
sabbattha na sajjati, vimutto,
paṭighā yassa na santi, "caraṇavā" so.
28. Dukkhaveppakkaṃ yad atthi kammaṃ [537]
uddhaṃ adho ca tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe
paribbājayitvā pariññācārī
māyaṃ mānaṃ atho pi lobhakodhaṃ
pariyantaṃ akāsi nāmarūpaṃ,
tam "paribbājakaṃ" āhu pattipattantaṃ ti.'

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavato bhāsitaṃ abhinanditvā anu-
moditvā attamaṇo pamodito udaggo pītisomaṇassajāto uṭṭhāyāsanaṃ ekaṃsaṃ
uttarāsangaṃ karitvā yena Bhagavā ten' añjalim paṇāmetvā Bhagavantaṃ
sammukhā sārūppāhi gāthāhi abhithavi:—

29. Yāni ca tīṇi yāni ca saṭṭhi [538]
samaṇappavādasitāni, bhūripaṇṇā,
saññānakkhara-saññānissitāni
osaraṇāni vineyya oghataṃ agā.
30. Antagū si pāragū si dukkhassa! [539]
Arahā si! Khīṇāsavaṃ taṃ maññe!
Jutimā mutimā pahūtapañño,
dukkhassa' antakara, atāresi maṃ!
31. Yaṃ me kankhitam aññāsi, [540]
vicikicchāṃ maṃ atāresi, namo te!
Muni monapathesu pattipatta,
akhila Ādiccabandhu, sorato si!
32. Yā me kankhā pure āsi, taṃ me vyākāsi, cakkhumā. [541]
Addhā Muni si Sambuddho; na 'tthi nīvaraṇā tava.
33. Upāyāsā ca te sabbe viddhastā vinalīkatā; [542]
sītibhūto damappatto dhitimā saccaṇikkamo.
34. Tassa te Nāgaṇāgassa, Mahāvīrassa, bhāsato [543]
sabbe devā anumodanti ubho Nārada-Pabbatā.

He who tracks Cankers down
and hacks them out, to know
rebirth no more but sweep
aside, as filth, all things
of sense and banish Time,
—'tis he is 'Noble' styled.

[535]

He who on earth walks sure,
with skill to grasp the Truth,
—ensnared, repelled, by nought,
but free,—'Upright' is he.

[536]

The pilgrim who discerns
what acts have Ills for fruit,
and, comprehending, sloughs
guile, pride of life, wants, wrath,
and personality,
—is perfect 'Anchorite'.

[537]

Hereon, in gladness at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya rose up from his seat and, with his right shoulder bared, stretched forth his folded palms towards the Lord, as he addressed him to his face in stanzas fit:—

Great sage, who didst reject
the sense-based sophistries
of three and sixty sects,
thou soarest o'er life's gloom!

[538]

Ending, transcending, Ills,
Cankerless Arahāt,
thy insight, light, and lore
have brought me safe 'Across'!

[539]

For marking my distress,
for freeing me from doubt,
I laud thee, sage benign,
consummate master-mind,
great Kinsman of the Sun!

[540]

The doubts I had are solved by thee, O Seer,
O All-Enlighten'd sage immaculate!

[541]

With ev'ry perturbation rooted up,
unfever'd, tranquil, strong in Truth art thou!

[542]

Great Victor! Paragon! Thy words rejoice
all gods, all Nārādās, all Pábbatās.

[543]

35. Namo te, purisājañña! Namo te, purisuttama! [544]
Sadevakasmim lokasmim na 'tthi te paṭipuggalo.
36. Tvaṃ Buddho; tvaṃ Satthā; tvaṃ Mārābhibhū Muni; [545]
tvaṃ anusaye chetvā tiṇṇo tāres' imaṃ paṇaṃ.
37. Upadhī te samatikkantā; āsavā te padālītā; [546]
siho 'si anupādāno pahīnabhayabheravo.
38. Puṇḍarikāṃ yathā vaggu toye na upalippati, [547]
evaṃ puññe ca pāpe ca ubhaye tvaṃ na lippasi!
—Pāde, vīra, pasārehi. Sabhiyo vandati Satthuno ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavato pādesu sirasā nipatitvā, Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Abhikkantaṃ, bhante,—pe—dhammañ ca bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca. Labheyyāhaṃ, bhante, Bhagavato santike pabbajjaṃ, labheyyaṃ upasampadan ti.

Yo kho, Sabhiya, aññatitthiyapubbo imasmim Dhammavinaye ākaṃkhati pabbajjaṃ ākaṃkhati upasampadam, so cattaro māse parivasati, catunnaṃ māsānaṃ accayena ārad dhacittā bhikkhū pabbājenti upasampādentī bhikkhubhāvāya. Api ca m' ettha puggalavemattatā vidiṭā ti.

Sace, bhante, aññatitthiyapubbā imasmim Dhammavinaye ākaṃkhantā pabbajjaṃ ākaṃkhantā upasampadam cattāro māse parivasanti, catunnaṃ māsānaṃ accayena ārad dhacittā bhikkhū pabbājenti upasampādentī bhikkhubhāvāya,—ahaṃ cattāri vassāni parivasissāmi; catunnaṃ vassānaṃ accayena ārad dhacittā bhikkhū pabbājentu upasampādentu bhikkhubhāvāyā ti.

Alattha kho Sabhiyo Bhagavato santike pabbajjaṃ, alattha upasampadam—pe—aññataro kho pan' āyasmā Sabhiyo arahataṃ aho si.

7. SELASUTTA

Evam me sutarā. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Ang-uttarāpesu cārikaṃ caramāno mahatā bhikkhusaṃghena saddhīm aḍḍhatelasehi bhikkhusatehi yena Āpaṇaṃ nāma Anguttarāpānaṃ nigamo tad avasari. Assosi kho Keniyo jaṭilo:—Samaṇo khalu, bho, Gotamo Sakyaputto Sakyakulā pabbajito Anguttarāpesu cārikaṃ caramāno mahatā bhikkhusaṃghena saddhīm aḍḍhatelasehi bhikkhusatehi Āpaṇaṃ anuppatto; taṃ kho pana bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ evaṃ kalyāṇo kittisaddo abbhuggato 'Iti pi so Bhagavā araham Sammasambuddho vijjācaraṇasampanno sugato lokavidū anuttaro purisadammasārathi satthā devamanussānaṃ Buddho Bhagavā; so imaṃ lokarā sadevakarā samārakarā

I hail thee noblest, foremost of mankind;
nor earth nor heaven holds thy counterpart! [544]

Enlighten'd Master! Over Māra's hosts
triumphant! Sage, who, wrong propensities
uprooting, for thyself salvation found
and taught mankind to find salvation too! [545]

Thou hast surmounted all that breeds rebirth
and extirpated Canker-growths within!
With naught to bind thee thrall to life, thou 'rt free
as forest lion from all fears and dread. [546]

E'en as a lotus fair to water gives
no lodgment, thou by good and bad alike
art unaffected. Stretch thou forth thy feet,
O Victor. I salute my Master's feet! [547]

Hereon, Sabhiya the Wanderer, bowing his head in homage at the Lord's feet, said :—It is wonderful, sir (*Ṭc.*, as at p. 25) confirmation as an Almsman with the Lord!

'Sabhiya, a former sectary of another school who seeks admission and confirmation in this Doctrine and Rule, first resides for four months, at the close of which period proved Almsmen admit and confirm him as an Almsman. I recognize a distinction between persons in this case.'

'If, sir, former sectaries of other schools have first to undergo a four months' probation before enrolment here, then I will reside for four years, at the close of which period let proved Almsmen admit and confirm me as an Almsman.'

So Sabhiya the Wanderer received admission and confirmation as an Almsman at the hands of the Lord. Nor was it long thereafter before the reverend Sabhiya, dwelling alone and aloof (*Ṭc.*, as at p. 25) was numbered among the Arahats.

Sutta 7. The Superman

Thus have I heard. Once when the Lord was on an alms-pilgrimage in the Anga country north of the Ganges, with a great train of Almsmen, numbering twelve hundred and fifty, he sojourned in the Anga township of Āpaṇa across the river.

It came to the ears of Keniya of the matted-hair that the anchorite Gotama, a Sakyan who had gone forth from home to homelessness as a Pilgrim, was reported to have arrived at Āpaṇa with this great train in the course of an alms-pilgrimage. Such, according to report, was the high repute noised

sabrahmakam sassamaṇabrāhmaṇim pajam sadevamanussam sayam abhiññā sacchikatvā pavedeti; so Dhammam deseti ādikalyāṇam majjhe kalyāṇam pariyoṣānakalyāṇam sāttham savyañjanam; kevalaparipuṇṇam parisuddham brahmacariyam pakāseti; sādhu kho pana tathārūpānam arahataṃ dassanaṃ hoti’.

Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo yena Bhagavā ten’ upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhim sammodi, sammodaniyam katham sārāṇiyam vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinnam kho Keniyam jaṭilaṃ Bhagavā dhammiyā kathāya sandassesī samādapesi samuttejesi sampahaṃsesi. Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavatā dhammiyā kathāya sandassito samādapito samuttejito sampahaṃsito Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca:—Adhivāsetu me bhavaṃ Gotamo svātanāya bhattaṃ saddhim bhikkhusaṃghenāti. Evaṃ vutte, Bhagavā Keniyam jaṭilaṃ etad avoca: Mahā kho, Keniya, bhikkhusaṃgho, adḍhatelasāni bhikkhusatāni; tvaṃ ca kho brāhmaṇesu abhippasanno ti. Dutiyam pi kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Kiñcāpi, bho Gotama, mahā bhikkhusaṃgho adḍhatelasāni bhikkhusatāni ahaṃ ca brāhmaṇesu abhippasanno, adhivāsetu me bhavaṃ Gotamo . . . bhikkhusaṃghenāti. Dutiyam pi kho Bhagavā Keniyam jaṭilaṃ etad avoca: Mahā kho . . . abhippasanno ti. Tatiyam pi kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Kiñcāpi, bho Gotama, . . . adhivāsetv-eva me bhavaṃ Gotamo . . . bhikkhusaṃghenāti.

Adhivāsesi Bhagavā tuṇhībhaveṇa.

Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo, Bhagavato adhivāsanaṃ viditvā, utthāyāsanaṃ yena sako assamo ten’ upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā mittāmacce ñātisālohite āmantesi:—Suṇantu me bhonto mittāmaccā ñātisālohitā. Samaṇo me Gotamo nimantito svātanāya bhattaṃ saddhim bhikkhusaṃghena. Yena me kāya-veyyāvatikam kareyyāthāti.

Evaṃ bho ti kho Keniyassa jaṭilassa mittāmaccā ñātisālohitā Keniyassa jaṭilassa paṭissutvā app-ekacce uddhanāni khaṇanti, app-ekacce kaṭṭhāni phāḷenti, app-ekacce bhājanāni dhovanti, app-ekacce udakamaṇikam patiṭṭhāpenti, app-ekacce āsanāni paññāpenti; Keniyo pana jaṭilo sāmaṃ yeva maṇḍalamālaṃ paṭiyādeti.

Tena kho pana samayena Selo brāhmaṇo Āpape paṭivasati, tiṇṇam vedānaṃ pāragū, sanighaṇḍukeṭubhānaṃ sākkharappabhedānaṃ; itihāsapañca-mānaṃ padako veyyākaraṇo; lokāyatamahāpurisalakkhaṇesu anavayo; tīṇi māṇavakasatāni mante vāceti. Tena kho pana samayena Keniyo jaṭilo Sele brāhmaṇe abhippasanno hoti.

Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo tīhi māṇavakasatehi parivuto janghāvihāraṃ anu-cankamamāno anuvicaramāno yena Keniyassa jaṭilassa assamo ten’ upasaṃkami. Addasā kho Selo brāhmaṇo Keniyassamiye jaṭile app-ekacce uddhanāni khaṇante—pe—app-ekacce āsanāni paññāpente, Keniyam pana jaṭilaṃ sāmaṃ yeva maṇḍalamālaṃ paṭiyādentam; disvāna Keniyam jaṭilaṃ etad avoca: Kin nu kho bhoto Keniyassa āvāho vā bhāvissati, vivāho vā bhavissati,

abroad concerning this Gotama that he was said to be:—‘The Lord, Arahāt All-Enlightened, walking by knowledge, blessed, understanding all worlds, the matchless tamer of the human heart, teacher of gods and men, the Lord Buddha; this universe—with its gods, its Māras, its Brahmās, its anchorites and brahmins, embracing all deities and mankind—all this he has discerned and realized for himself and makes known to others; he preaches a Doctrine which is so fair in its outset, its middle, and its close, with both text and import; he propounds a higher life that is wholly complete and pure;—it is good to go and visit men of worth like him.’

So Keniya came to the Lord and, seating himself after greetings, was by the Lord instructed, roused, fired, and cheered onwards with a doctrinal discourse, at the close of which Keniya invited the Lord, with his Community, to take to-morrow’s meal with him. Said the Lord:—‘There are no less than twelve hundred and fifty Almsmen with me;—and you are an adherent of the brahmins, Keniya!’

A second time did Keniya tender his invitation, saying this made no difference; and a second time did he receive the same answer. But when the invitation was repeated for the third time, with the words: ‘You have only to assent’, the Lord, by his silence, accepted it. Then Keniya got up and went off to his own hermitage, where he told his friends and kinsfolk who was coming, and asked them to help. Readily enough, they set to work, some digging earth-ovens, some splitting firewood, some scouring pans, and others setting out water-jars, and placing seats ready,—while Keniya with his own hands prepared a round pavilion.

Now at that time there was living at Āpaṇa the brahmin Sela, who was versed in all three Vedas, was accomplished in ritual with the glosses thereon, in phonetics, and in etymology, as also in legends, which he could recite and explain; and he was not unversed in the world’s duration and in the signs that mark a Superman; he had three hundred young brahmins to whom he taught the runes. At this time, moreover, Keniya of the matted-hair was an adherent of this brahmin Sela.

Accompanied by his three hundred pupils, the brahmin came in the course of a stroll to Keniya’s hermitage and saw all Keniya’s adherents busy with their several tasks, while Keniya with his own hands was preparing a round pavilion. At the sight, the brahmin said to Keniya:—‘What is all this? Is it a wedding-feast for a bridegroom or for a bride? Or is there a great oblation afoot? Or have you invited to a repast to-morrow Seniya Bimbisāra, king of Magadha, with all his host?’

Said Keniya: It is no wedding-feast, Sela; nor is the king coming with all

mahāyañño vā paccupaṭṭhito, rājā vā Māgadho, Seniyo Bimbisāro, nimantito svātānāya saddhiṃ balakāyenāti?

Na me, Sela, āvāho bhavissati, na pi vivāho bhavissati, na pi rājā Māgadho, Seniyo Bimbisāro, nimantito svātānāya saddhiṃ balakāyena. Api ca kho me mahāyañño paccupaṭṭhito atthi. Samaṇo Gotamo Sakyaputto Sakyakulā pabbajito Anguttarāpesu cārikaṃ caramāno mahatā bhikkhusaṃghena saddhiṃ adḍhateḷasehi bhikkhusatehi Āpaṇaṃ anuppatto. Taṃ kho pana bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ—pe—Buddho Bhagavā ti;—so me nimantito svātānāya saddhiṃ bhikkhusaṃghenāti.

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Keniya, vadesi?

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Sela, vadāmi.

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Keniya, vadesi?

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Sela, vadāmi.

Atha kho Selassa brāhmaṇassa etad ahoṣi:—Ghoso pi kho eso dullabho lokasmiṃ yadidaṃ ‘Buddho’ ti. Āgatāni kho pana asmākaṃ mantesu dvattimsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni, yehi samannāgatassa Mahāpurisassa dve va gatiyo bhavanti, anaññā. Sace agāraṃ ajjhāvasati, rājā hoti cakkavattī dhammiko dhammarājā cāturato vijitāvī janapadattāvāriyapatto sattaratanasamannāgato; tass’ imāni satta ratanāni bhavanti, seyyathidaṃ: cakkaratanam, hatthiratanam, assaratanam, maṇiratanam, itthiratanam, gahapati-ratanam, pariṇāyakaratanam eva sattamaṃ; parosahassaṃ kho pan’ assa puttā bhavanti—sūrā virangarūpā parasenappamaddanā. So imaṃ paṭhavim sāgara-pariyantaṃ, adaṇḍena asatthēna, dhammena abhivijjiya ajjhāvasati. Sace kho paṇāgarasmā anagāriyaṃ pabbajati, arahaṃ hoti Sammāsambuddho loke vivattacchaddo.—Kahaṃ pana, bho Keniya, etarahi so bhavaṃ Gotamo viharati, arahaṃ Sammāsambuddho ti?

Evam vutte, Keniyo jaṭilo dakkhiṇaṃ bāhaṃ paggaheṭvā Selaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ etad avoca: Yen’ esā, bho Sela, nīlavanarājī ti.

Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo tihi māṇavakasatehi saddhiṃ yena Bhagavā ten’ upasaṅkami. Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo te māṇavake āmantesi:—Appasaddā bhonto āgacchantu pade padaṃ nikkhipantā,—durāsadā hi te Bhagavanto, sihā va ekacarā; yadā cāhaṃ, bho, samaṇena Gotamena saddhiṃ manteyyaṃ, mā me bhonto antarantarākathaṃ opātetha; kathāpariyosānaṃ me bhavanto āgamentūti. Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo yena Bhagavā ten’ upasaṅkami, upasaṅkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodi, sammodaniyaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ vitisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato kāye dvattimsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni samannesi. Addasā kho Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato kāye dvattimsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni yebhuyyena ṭhapetvā dve;—dvīsu Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇesu kaṃkhati vicikicchati nādhimuccati na sampasīdati,—kosohite ca vatthaguyhe pahūtajivhatāya ca.

Atha kho Bhagavato etad ahoṣi: Passati kho me ayaṃ Selo brāhmaṇo dvattimsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni yebhuyyena ṭhapetvā dve; dvīsu Mahā-

his host; but I have got a great oblation afoot. For the anchorite Gotama, who left his Sakyan home to be a Pilgrim, has arrived at Āpaṇa in the course of an alms-pilgrimage, with twelve hundred and fifty Almsmen in his train. Now, such, according to report, is the high repute noised abroad concerning this Gotama that he is said to be . . . (*Ec.*, as p. 135) . . . the Lord Buddha. He it is who has been invited for to-morrow, he and his Community.

Do you say 'Buddha', Keniya?

Yes, I do, Sela.

Do you really say 'Buddha'?

Yes, I do, Sela.

Thought the brahmin to himself:—Rarely indeed is the title of 'Buddha' heard in the world. In our runes there have been handed down the two and thirty marks of a Superman, for whom, if he bears those marks, there awaits one of two careers and no third. Should he live a home life, he becomes Emperor over the four quarters of the earth, righteous in himself and ruling righteously, victorious abroad, enforcing law and order at home, and possessing the Seven Jewels, to wit,—wheel, elephant, charger, gem, queen-consort, treasurer, and counsellor. More than a thousand sons has he, heroes of might who trample down the enemy's host before them. Over all this earth to the shores of ocean he extends his sway by sheer righteousness alone and not by cudgel or sword. But, if, instead, he goes forth from home to homelessness as a Pilgrim, he becomes the Arahat All-Enlightened who lifts the veil from the world.

Said Sela aloud:—Where, Keniya, is Gotama now staying, this Arahat All-Enlightened?

In answer, Keniya stretched out his right arm and said:—Yonder, Sela, in that stretch of dark trees.

Then the brahmin proceeded to the Lord, attended by his three hundred young brahmins, to whom he gave the following instructions:—Move forward in silence, noiselessly in one another's footsteps; for, these Lords are hard of access, like solitary lions. And, while I am conferring with the anchorite Gotama, keep silent till my talk with him is over, and do not interrupt.

Arrived in the Lord's presence, the brahmin, seating himself after courteous greetings, scanned the Lord's body for the two and thirty marks of a Superman; and in time observed them all save two, namely the privities hidden in a sheath and the big tongue, concerning which two he was in doubt and perplexity, not feeling certain or sure.

Realizing precisely the brahmin's uncertainty of mind, the Lord put forth such a manifestation of psychic power that Sela could see the Lord's privities

purisa-lakkhaṇesu kaṁkhati vicikicchati nādhimuccati na sampasīdati, koso-hite ca vatthaguyhe pahūtajivhatāya cāti. Atha kho Bhagavā tathārūpaṁ iddhābhisamkhāraṁ abhisamkhāsi yathā addasa Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato kosohitaṁ vatthaguyhaṁ. Atha kho Bhagavā jivhaṁ ninnāmetvā ubho pi kaṇṇasotāni anumasi paṭimasi, ubho pi nāsikasotāni anumasi paṭimasi, kevalam pi nalāṭamaṇḍalaṁ jivhāya chādesi. Atha kho Selassa brāhmaṇassa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇehi paripuṇṇehi, no aparipuṇṇehi. No ca kho naṁ jānāmi 'Buddho vā no vā'. Sutaṁ kho pana mētaṁ brāhmaṇānaṁ vuddhānaṁ mahallakānaṁ ācariyapācariyānaṁ bhāsamānānaṁ: 'Ye te bhavanti arahanto Sammāsambuddhā, te sake vaṇṇe bhaññamāne attānaṁ pātūkarontīti; yannūnāhaṁ samaṇaṁ Gotamaṁ sammukhā sārūppāhi gāthāhi abhithhaveyyan ti?' Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṁ sammukhā sārūppāhi gāthāhi abhiththavi:—

1. Paripuṇṇakāyo suruci sujāto cārudassano [548]
suvaṇṇavaṇṇo 'si, Bhagavā, susukkadātho 'si, viriyavā.
2. Narassa hi sujātassa ye bhavanti viyañjana [549]
sabbe te tava kāyasmiṁ Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇā.
3. Pasannanetto, sumukho, brahā, uju, patāpavā, [550]
majjhe samaṇasaṁghassa, ādicco va, virocasi
4. kalyāṇadassano bhikkhu, kañcanasannibhattaco. [551]
Kin te samaṇabhāvena evaṁ uttamavaṇṇino?
5. Rājā arahasi bhavituṁ cakkavatti rathesabho, [552]
cāturato vijitāvī Jambusaṇḍassa issaro.
6. Khattiyā bhojarājāno anuyuttā bhavantu te! [553]
rājābhirājā, manujindo, rajjaṁ karehi, Gotama!
7. Rājāham asmi, Selāti, dhammarājā anuttaro, [554]
dhammena cakkam vatteṁi, cakkam appativattiyaṁ.
8. Sambuddho pañjānāsi 'dhammarājā anuttaro [555]
dhammena cakkam vatteṁi' iti bhāsasi, Gotama.
9. Ko nu senāpatī bho to sāvako Satthu-d-anvayo? [556]
Ko te imaṁ anuvatteti dhammacakkam pavattitaṁ?

within their sheath; and then, putting forth his tongue, he passed it up and down over the orifices of both ears and of both nostrils, and covered with it the whole expanse of his forehead.

Quite sure now about the presence of the two and thirty marks, Sela still did not know whether he possessed Enlightenment or not. But he remembered hearing from old and aged brahmins, teachers of teachers, that those who become Arahats All-Enlightened, reveal themselves when their praises are sung in their presence; and so he made up his mind to extol the Lord to his face in the following stanzas of eulogy:—

Perfect in body, goodly, Lord, art thou,
well-grown, well-liking, golden-hued, with teeth
agleam with lustre; vigour fills thy frame; [548]

thy body's full perfection manifests
each single sign that marks a Superman. [549]

Clear-eyed and handsome, tall, upright, art thou,
effulgent as a sun among thy train, [550]

—so debonair, so golden-hued! Why waste
thy beauty's prime as homeless anchorite? [551]

As world-wide monarch thou should'st ride in state;
and Ind from sea to sea should own thy sway. [552]

Proud princes should thy village-headmen be!
Rule thou mankind as sov'ran king of kings. [553]

The Lord: Know, Sela, know that king indeed am 'I,
—the peerless king of utter righteousness. [554]
In righteousness my sov'ran Wheel of Truth
I roll, that nevermore shall backwards turn.

Sela: If All-Enlighten'd thou dost claim to be,
the peerless king of utter righteousness,
rolling in righteousness thy sov'ran Wheel, [555]

—who ranks as Captain, next to thee, to keep
thy Wheel still rolling onward in its course? [556]

10. Mayā pavattitaṃ cakkhaṃ (Selāti Bhagavā) [557]
 dhammacakkhaṃ anuttaraṃ
 Sāriputto anuvatteti anujāto Tathāgataṃ.
11. Abhiññeyyaṃ abhiññātaṃ, bhāvetabbaṃ ca bhāvitaṃ, [558]
 pahātabbaṃ pahānam me. Tasmā Buddho 'smi, brāhmaṇa.
12. Vinayassu mayī kaṃkhaṃ; adhimuccassu, brāhmaṇa; [559]
 dullabhaṃ dassanaṃ hoti Sambuddhānaṃ abhiñhaso.
13. Yesaṃ vo dullabho loke pātubhāvo abhiñhaso, [560]
 so 'haṃ, brāhmaṇa, Sambuddho, sallakatto anuttaro.
14. Brahmabhūto atitulo Mārasenappamaddano [561]
 sabbāmitte vasikatvā modāmi akutobhaya.
15. 'Imaṃ, bhonto, nisāmetha, yathā bhāsati cakkhumā, [562]
 sallakatto, mahāvīro,—sīho va nadatī vane.
16. Brahmabhūtaṃ atitulaṃ Mārasenappamaddanaṃ [563]
 ko disvā na-ppasīdeyya,—api kaṇhābhijātiko?
17. Yo maṃ icchati anvetu; yo vā n' icchati, gacchatu. [564]
 Idhāhaṃ pabbajissāmi varapaññassa santike.'
18. 'Etaṃ ce ruccati bhoṭo Sammāsambuddhasāsanāṃ, [565]
 mayam pi pabbajissāma varapaññassa santike.'
19. 'Brāhmaṇā tisaṭā ime yācanti pañjalikatā: [566]
 brahmacariyaṃ carissāma, Bhagavā, tava santike.'
20. 'Svākkhātaṃ brahmacariyaṃ (Selāti Bhagavā) [567]
 sandiṭṭhikaṃ akālikaṃ
 yathā amoghā pabbajjā appamattassa sikkhato' ti.

Alattha kho Selo brāhmaṇo sapaṛiso Bhagavato santike pabbajjāṃ, alattha upasampadaṃ.

Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo tassā rattiyaṃ accayena sake assame paṇitaṃ khādaniyaṃ bhojaniyaṃ paṭiyādāpetva Bhagavato kālaṃ ārocāpesi: Kālo, bho Gotama; niṭṭhitaṃ bhattaṃ ti. Atha kho Bhagavā pubbaṇhasamayāṃ nivāsetvā pattacivaraṃ ādāya yena Keniyassa jaṭilassa assamo ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā paññatte āsane nisīdi saddhiṃ bhikkhusaṃghena. Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo Buddhapamukhaṃ bhikkhusaṃghaṃ paṇitena khādanīyena

The Lord: 'Tis Sāriputta, whom I bred and reared,
who keeps my Wheel still rolling on its course.

[557]

What mind should know, I know; I am what man
should be, and quit of all man should renounce;
—'tis thus that, brahmin, Buddhahood is mine.

[558]

All doubts of me dispel; place trust in me.
—To see a Buddha is a boon most rare;

[559]

but that rare boon thou may'st behold in me,
who All-Enlighten'd am, of Healers chief,

[560]

perfect and peerless, routing Māra's hosts,
all foes subduing;—fear clouds not my bliss.

[561]

Sela: Sirs, mark him! Mark how lion-like he speaks,
—this Seer, this Healer, this great Conqueror.

[562]

Lives there a man so base as not to trust
at sight fell Māra's matchless conqueror?

[563]

Let who will, follow; let the rest depart;
—be mine the Pilgrimage with Wisdom's Lord!

[564]

Sela's pupils: If you the All-Enlighten'd take as guide,
ours too be Pilgrimage with Wisdom's Lord.

[565]

Sela: Three hundred brahmins, Lord, with outstretched hands
here pray to lead the higher life with thee.

[566]

The Lord: That life, so fully preached, is here and now,
yet outside Time. No barren Pilgrimage
is his who lives that life persistently.

[567]

So the brahmin Sela and all his following were admitted to the Lord's Community, and confirmed therein.

Now, when night passed away, an excellent meal was prepared in his hermitage by Keniya, who sent to tell the Lord when everything was ready. Then the Lord, early that morning, duly robed and bowl in hand, proceeded to Keniya's hermitage and there sat down on the seat placed for him, accompanied by his train of Almsmen. With his own hands Keniya served the Lord and his Almsmen with that excellent meal without stint till all had

bhojanienena sahatthā santappesi sampavāresi. Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavantaṃ bhuttāviṃ onītapattappāṇiṃ upagantvā aññātaraṃ nīcaṃ āsanaṃ gahetvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinnaṃ kho Keniyaṃ jaṭilaṃ Bhagavā imāhi gāthāhi anumodi:—

21. Aggihuttamukhā yaññā; Sāvittī chandaso mukhaṃ; [568]
rājā mukhaṃ manussānaṃ; nadīnaṃ sāgaro mukhaṃ;

22. nakkhattānaṃ mukhaṃ cando; ādicco tapataṃ mukhaṃ; [569]
—puññaṃ ākaṃkhamānānaṃ saṃgho ve yajataṃ mukhaṃ ti.

Atha kho Bhagavā Keniyaṃ jaṭilaṃ imāhi gāthāhi anumoditvā, uṭṭhāyāsanaṃ pakkāmi.

Atha kho āyasmā Selo sapariso, eko vūpakaṭṭho appamatto ātāpī pahitatto viharanto, nacirass'eva . . . [Sc. as page 24] . . . abbhaññāsi. Aññātaro ca kho pan' āyasmā Selo sapariso arahataṃ ahoṣi.

Atha kho āyasmā Selo sapariso yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkamaṃ, upasaṃkamitvā ekaṃsaṃ cīvaraṃ katvā yena Bhagavā ten' añjalim paṇāmetvā Bhagavantaṃ gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:

23. Yan taṃ saraṇaṃ āgamha ito aṭṭhami, cakkhumā, [570]
sattarattena Bhagavā dant' amha tava Sāsane.

24. Tuvaṃ Buddho; tuvaṃ Satthā; tuvaṃ Mārābhibhū Muni; [571]
tuvaṃ anusaye chetvā tiṇṇo tāres' imaṃ pajaṃ.

25. Upadhī te samatikkantā; āsavā te padālītā; [572]
siho 'si anupādāno pahīnabhayabheravo.

26. Bhikkhavo tisatā ime tiṭṭhanti pañjalikatā; [573]
—Pāde, vīra, pasārehi, Nāgā vandantu Satthuno ti.

had their fill. When the Lord had eaten and had removed his hands from his alms-bowl, Keniya went to him and, taking a low seat, sat down to one side, and, so seated, was thanked by the Lord in these stanzas:—

In largesse, fire-oblations take first rank; [568]
 of Vedic metres Sāvitrī is first;
 the king ranks first 'mong men, the sea 'mong streams;
 the moon ranks first among the lamps of night; [569]
 and first of luminaries ranks the sun.
 —For those who merit seek by charities,
 gifts to the Order profit most of all.

Having thanked Keniya of the matted-hair in these stanzas, the Lord arose and departed.

Dwelling alone and aloof, strenuous, ardent, and purged of Self, the reverend Sela, with his following, was not long before he won the prize in quest of which young men go forth from home to homelessness as Pilgrims, that prize of prizes which crowns the higher life;—even this did he think out for himself, realize, and attain, and in this did he dwell here and now, convinced that for him rebirth was no more, that he had lived the highest life, that his task was done, and that now there was nothing left of what he once had been. And the reverend Sela, with his following, was numbered among the Arahats.

Then he came with his following to the Lord, and, with his right shoulder respectfully bared and with his folded palms outstretched, addressed the Lord in these stanzas:—

We who a week ago sought refuge, seer, [570]
 with thee, re-moulded by thy Doctrine come.
 Enlighten'd Master, Sage, o'er Māra's hosts [571]
 triumphant! Thou who, wrong propensities
 uprooting, for thyself salvation found
 and taught mankind to find salvation too!
 Thou hast surmounted all that breeds rebirth, [572]
 and extirpated Canker-growths within.
 With naught to bind thee thrall to life, thou 'rt free
 as forest lion from all fears or dread.
 Three hundred Almsmen, Lord, with outstretched hands [573]
 pray thee, great Victor, forth to stretch thy feet
 that these, thy saints, may bow before them here!

(*Note.*—This Sutta recurs verbatim as Sutta No. 92 of the Majjhima Nikāya. Cf. also Vin. i. 245.)

8. SALLASUTTA

1. Animittam anaññātaraṃ maccānaṃ idha jīvitaṃ [574]
kasiraṇi ca parittaṇi ca, taṇi ca dukkheṇa saṃyutaṃ.
2. Na hi so upakkamo hoti yena jātā na miyyare; [575]
jaram pi patvā maraṇaṃ; evaṃdhammā hi pāṇino.
3. Phalānaṃ iva pakkānaṃ pāto papatato bhayaṃ, [576]
evaṃ jātānaṃ maccānaṃ niccaṃ maraṇato bhayaṃ.
4. Yathā pi kumbhakārassa katā mattikabhājanā [577]
sabbe bhedanapariyantā, evaṃ maccāna' jīvitaṃ.
5. Daharā ca mahantā ca, ye bālā ye ca paṇḍitā, [578]
sabbe maccuvasaṃ yanti, sabbe maccuparāyaṇā.
6. Tesāṃ maccuparetānaṃ gacchataṃ paralokato [579]
na pitā tāyate puttaṃ, ñātī vā pana ñātaka.
7. Pekkhataṃ yeva ñātīnaṃ passa lālapataṃ puthu [580]
ekameko va maccānaṃ, go vajjho viya niyyati.
8. Evam abbhāhato loko maccunā ca jarāya ca; [581]
—tasmā dhīrā na socanti viditvā lokapariyāyaṃ.
9. Yassa maggaṃ na jānāsi, āgatassa gatassa vā, [582]
ubho ante asampassaṃ niratthaṃ paridevasi.
10. Paridevayamāno ce kañcid atthaṃ udabbahe [583]
sammūlho himsaṃ attānaṃ, kayira c'enaṃ vicakkhaṇo.
11. Na hi ruṇṇena sokena santiṃ pappoti cetaso, [584]
bhiyy' ass' uppajjate dukkhaṃ, sarīraṃ upahaññati,
12. Kiso vivaṇṇo bhavati himsaṃ attānaṃ attanā; [585]
na tena petā pārenti; niratthā paridevanā.
13. Sokaṃ appajahaṃ jantu bhiyyo dukkhaṃ nigacchati, [586]
anutthunanto kālakataṃ sokassa vasam anvagū.
14. Aññe pi passa gamine yathākammūpage nare [587]
maccuno vasam āgamma, phandante v' idha pāṇine.
15. Yena yena hi maññanti, tato taṃ hoti aññathā; [588]
—etādiso vinābhāvo; passa lokassa pariyāyaṃ.
16. Api ce vassasataṃ jīve, bhiyyo vā pana, māṇavo [589]
ñātisaṃghā vinā hoti; jahāti idha jīvitaṃ.
17. Tasmā arahato sutvā vineyya paridevitaṃ, [590]
petarṃ kālakataṃ disvā: 'na so labbhā mayā' iti.

Sutta 8. The Pangs of Grief

- Men cannot calculate, men cannot gauge,
this life's brief troublous span, by woes beset. [574]
- By no device can what is born not die,
or length of days annul life's primal law. [575]
- Like ripen'd fruits which threaten soon to drop,
the constant threat of death dogs man from birth. [576]
- As ev'ry earthen jar the potter shapes
will broken be, so shows the life of man. [577]
- Grown men and younglings, wise and simple,—all
are thralls of death, all death's predestin'd prey. [578]
- When they in death depart, no sire can save
his son, nor kith save kin, from passing hence. [579]
- Mark how—while kin stand round with loud laments—
like kine to slaughter, men are hauled away. [580]
- Since death and sure decay assail the world,
the wise, who know its laws, forbear to grieve. [581]
- Ye vainly weep, ye vainly wail, your dead,
whose 'Whence' and 'Whither' both elude your ken. [582]
- If wailing eased the mourner's self-made pangs,
then, and then only, let the wise wail too. [583]
- No; peace of mind comes not by grief and tears,
—which do but add to pain and bring men low. [584]
- Though self-sought pangs leave mourners pale and wan,
they succour not the dead;—laments are vain. [585]
- By hugging sorrow man to greater pain
proceeds; his mourning leaves him sorrow's slave. [586]
- Mark, too, how others, when their hour has come
to dree their mortal weird, in death's grip writhe. [587]
- Whate'er men plan, things turn out otherwise;
and so with human loss;—'tis nature's way. [588]
- What though life last a hundred years,—or more!
—Bereft of kin, man yields his life at last. [589]
- Therefore, give ear to saints;—weep not; reflect,
at sight of death, thou can'st not 'bring him back'. [590]

18. Yathā saraṇaṃ ādittaṃ vārinā parinibbaye,
evam pi dhiro sappañño paṇḍito kusalo naro
khippam uppatitaṃ sokaṃ, vāto tūlaṃ va, dhamṣaye [591]
19. paridevaṃ pajappaṇi ca domanassaṇi ca attano.
Attano sukham esāno abbahe sallam attano. [592]
20. Abbūlhasallo asito santiṃ pappuyya cetaso
sabbasokaṃ atikkanto asoko hoti nibbuto. [593]

9. VĀSEṬṬHASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Icchānaṃkale viharati Icchānaṃkalavanasaṇḍe. Tena kho pana samayena sambahulā abhiññātā abhiññātā brāhmaṇamahāsālā Icchānaṃkale paṭivasanti, seyyathīdam: Camkī brāhmaṇo, Tārukkho brāhmaṇo, Pokkharasāti brāhmaṇo, Jāṇussoṇi brāhmaṇo, Todeyya-brāhmaṇo, aññe ca abhiññātā abhiññātā brāhmaṇamahāsālā.

Atha kho Vāseṭṭha-Bhāradvājānaṃ māṇavaṇaṃ janghāvihāraṃ anucaṇṇakamamānānaṃ anuvicaramānānaṃ ayaṃ antarākathā udapādi:—Kathaṃ, bho, brāhmaṇo hotīti? Bhāradvājo māṇavo evam āha:—Yato kho, bho ubhato sujāto hoti mātito ca pitito ca saṃsuddhagahaṇiko yāva sattamaṃ pitāmahayugā, akkhitto anupakkuṭṭho jātivādena, ettavatā kho, bho, brāhmaṇo hotīti. Vāseṭṭho māṇavo evam āha:—Yato kho, bho, silavā ca hoti vatasampanno ca, ettavatā kho, bho, brāhmaṇo hotīti. N' eva kho asakkhi Bhāradvājo māṇavo Vāseṭṭhaṃ māṇavaṃ saññāpetuṃ, na pana asakkhi Vāseṭṭho māṇavo Bhāradvājaṃ māṇavaṃ saññāpetuṃ. Atha kho Vāseṭṭho māṇavo Bhāradvājaṃ māṇavaṃ āmantesi: Ayaṃ kho, Bhāradvāja, samaṇo Gotamo Sakyaputto Sakyakulā pabbajito Icchānaṃkale viharati Icchānaṃkalavanasaṇḍe. Taṃ kho pana bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ evaṃ-kalyāṇo kittisaddo abbhuggato—pe—Buddho Bhagavā ti. Āyāma, bho Bhāradvāja, yena samaṇo Gotamo ten' upasaṃkamissāma, upasaṃkamitvā samaṇaṃ Gotamaṃ etaṃ atthaṃ pucchissāma; yathā no samaṇo Gotamo vyākariṣṣati, tathā naṃ dhāressāmāti. Evaṃ bho ti kho Bhāradvājo māṇavo Vāseṭṭhassa māṇavassa paccassosi.

Atha kho Vāseṭṭha-Bhāradvājā māṇavā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkaminṃsu, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodinṃsu, sammodanīyaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇīyaṃ vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdinṃsu. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Vāseṭṭho māṇavo Bhagavantaṃ gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Anuññātā-paṭiññātā tevijjā mayam asm' ubho,
—ahaṃ Pokkharasātissa, Tārukkhassāyaṃ māṇavo. [594]
2. Tevijjānaṃ yad akkhātāṃ, tatra kevalino 'smase,
padak' asma veyyakaraṇā jappe ācariyasādisā. [595]

As with their house on fire, men quench the flames
with water, let the stedfast sage be quick
(as wind wafts cotton-down) to banish grief,

[591]

wails, cravings, pangs. For his own weal, let him
pluck out the shafts he plants in his own breast.

[592]

Those shafts pluck'd out, at ease, with heart at rest,
he grieves not, but, o'ercoming grief, finds Peace.

[593]

Sutta 9. What is a Brahmin?

Thus have I heard. Once when the Lord was staying at Icchānankala, in the forests there, a large number of very well-known and wealthy brahmins were also at Icchānankala,—such as Cankī, Tārukkha, Pokkharasāti, Jāpussoni, and Todeyya, with other very well-known and wealthy brahmins.

Now, as the young brahmins Vāseṭṭha and Bhāradvāja were walking and strolling up and down, they fell to discussing what makes a brahmin.

Bhāradvāja maintained that what made a brahmin was pure descent on both sides right back for seven successive generations of forbears, with no break or blemish in his lineage; whereas Vāseṭṭha contended that it was virtue and moral conduct which made a brahmin.

As neither could convince the other, Vāseṭṭha proposed, and Bhāradvāja agreed, to refer the matter to 'the anchorite Gotama', who was now staying in the forests of Icchānankala, and of whom the high repute noised abroad was that he was said to be:—'The Lord, Arahat All-Enlightened . . . (Cf. *as at p. 135*) . . . the Lord Buddha.' Let us go to the anchorite Gotama, my good Bhāradvāja, said Vāseṭṭha; and, when we have found him, let us lay the matter before him and accept whatever he shall decide.

So be it, replied Bhāradvāja.

So together the two young brahmins went to the Lord, and, when they were seated after courteous greetings, Vāseṭṭha addressed the Lord in the following stanzas:—

Pokkhārasāti's pupil I; my friend
had Tārukkhā for master; both of us
in Threefold Lore have passed and so profess;

[594]

in all the Threefold Lore adepts are we,
in text and import, each his master's peer.

[595]

3. Tesan no jātivādasmiṃ vivādo atthi, Gotama; [596]
'Jātiyā brāhmaṇo hoti' Bhāradvājo iti bhāsati,
ahañ ca 'kammanā' brūmi :—Evaṃ jānāhi, cakkhuma.
4. Te na sakkoma saṇyattum aññamaññaṃ mayam ubho; [597]
bhavantaṃ puṭṭhum āgamhā, 'Sambuddham' iti vissutaṃ.
5. Candaṃ yathā khayāṭṭitaṃ pecca pañjalikā janā [598]
vandamaṇā namassanti, evaṃ lokasmiṃ Gotamaṃ.
6. Cakkhum loke samuppannaṃ mayam pucchāma Gotamaṃ: [599]
—Jātiyā brāhmaṇo hoti? udāhu bhavati kammanā?
Ajānataṃ no pabrūhi yathā jānemu 'brāhmaṇam'.
7. Tesam vo 'haṃ vyakkhissam anupubbaṃ yathātathaṃ [600]
(Vāseṭṭhāti Bhagavā)
jātivibhangaṃ pāṇānaṃ; aññamaññaṃ hi jātiyo.
8. Tiṇarukkhe pi jānātha, na cāpi paṭijānare, [601]
lingaṃ jātimayaṃ tesam; aññamaññaṃ hi jātiyo.
9. Tato kiṇe patange ca yāva kunthakipillike; [602]
lingaṃ jātimayaṃ tesam; aññamaññaṃ hi jātiyo.
10. Catuppade pi jānātha khuddake ca mahallake [603]
lingaṃ—pe—
11. Pādūdare pi jānātha urage dīghapittḥike; [604]
lingaṃ—pe—
12. Tato macche pi jānātha oḍake vārigocare; [605]
lingaṃ—pe—
13. Tato pakkhi pi jānātha pattayāne vihangame; [606]
lingaṃ—pe—
14. Yathā etāsu jātisu lingaṃ jātimayaṃ puthu, [607]
evaṃ na 'tthi manussesu lingaṃ jātimayaṃ puthu.
15. Na kesehi, na sīsena, na kaṇṇehi, nākkhihi, [608]
na mukhena, na nāsāya na oṭṭhehi bhamūhi vā,
16. na gīvāya, na amsehi, n' udarena, na piṭṭhiyā, [609]
na soṇiyā, na urasā, na sambādhe, na methune,
17. na hatthehi, na pādehi, n' angulīhi nakhehi vā, [610]
na janghāhi, na ūrūhi, na vaṇṇena sarena vā,
—lingaṃ jātimayaṃ n' eva yathā aññāsu jātisu.

On birth we differ. Bhāradvāja says
'tis 'birth' that makes a brahmin; I say 'life'.
'Tis thus we stand, O thou who seest all.

[596]

Agree we cannot, so an answer crave
from thee, for high Enlightenment renown'd.

[597]

For, as with hands in adoration raised
men hail the crescent moon, the world hails thee!

[598]

Of Gotama, who brought the seeing Eye,
we ask if *birth* or *life* the 'Brahmin' makes.
Tell us; we know not, but would fain feel sure.

[599]

The Lord: Types manifold of divers living things
in order'd sequence I must first unfold,
to show how nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[600]

Regard the grass and trees, which ne'er proclaim,
but prove, how nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[601]

Pass next to insects, pass from moths to ants;
and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[602]

regard four-footed creatures, great and small;
and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[603]

regard the snakes whose length on belly goes;
and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[604]

pass now to fish that dwell in water's depths;
and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[605]

then pass to birds that wing their airy way;
—all show how nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[606]

While these thus widely differ, men alone
show not that nature stamps them diverse breeds.

[607]

They differ not in hair, head, ears, or eyes,
in mouth or nostrils, not in eyebrows, lips,

[608]

throat, shoulders, belly, buttocks, back, or chest,
nor in the parts of shame, female or male,

[609]

nor yet in hands or feet, in fingers, nails,
in calves or thighs; in hue, or sound of voice;

[610]

—naught shows men stamped by nature diverse breeds;

18. Paccattarāṃ sasarīresu manussesv etaṃ na vijjati;
vokāraṃ ca manussesu samaññāya pavuccati. [611]
19. Yo hi koci manussesu gorakkhaṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Kassako' so, na brāhmaṇo. [612]
20. Yo hi koci manussesu puthusippaṇa jīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Sippiko' so, na brāhmaṇo. [613]
21. Yo hi koci manussesu vohāraṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Vāpijo' so, na brāhmaṇo. [614]
22. Yo hi koci manussesu parapessena jīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Pessiko' so, na brāhmaṇo. [615]
23. Yo hi koci manussesu adinnaṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Coro' eso, na brāhmaṇo. [616]
24. Yo hi koci manussesu issatthaṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Yodhājīvo', na brāhmaṇo. [617]
25. Yo hi koci manussesu porohiccena jīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Yājako' so, na brāhmaṇo. [618]
26. Yo hi koci manussesu gāmaṃ raṭṭhaṃ ca bhuñjati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Rājā' eso, na brāhmaṇo. [619]
27. Na cāhaṃ 'Brāhmaṇaṃ' brūmi yoniṃ mattisambhavaṃ;
'Bhovādi' nāma so hoti, sa ve hoti sakiñcano;
—akiñcanaṃ, anādānaṃ, tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'. [620]
28. Sabbasaṃyojanaṃ chetvā yo ve na paritassati,
saṅgātigaṃ, viśaṃyuttaṃ,—tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'. [621]
29. Chetvā nandhiṃ varattaṃ ca sandānaṃ sahanukkamaṃ
ukkhattapalighaṃ buddhaṃ,—tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'. [622]
30. Akkosarā vadhahandhaṃ ca aduṭṭho yo titikkhati,
khantibalaṃ balānikaṃ,—tam [623]
31. Akkodhanaṃ vatavantaṃ silavantaṃ anussadaṃ
dantaṃ antimaśāriraṃ,—tam [624]
32. Vāri pokkharapatte va, āragge-r-iva sāsapo,
yo na lippati kāmesu, tam [625]
33. Yo dukkhassa pajānāti idh' eva khayam attano,
pannabhāraṃ viśaṃyuttaṃ,—tam [626]

nature's diversities leave man untouched;
—except in names, no difference exists. [611]

The man that lives by keeping herds of cows,
—know him as farmer, not as brahmin true. [612]

The man that lives by divers handicrafts,
—know him as tradesman, not as brahmin true. [613]

The man that lives by selling merchandise,
—know him as merchant, not as brahmin true. [614]

The man that lives by service done for hire,
—know him as hireling, not as brahmin true. [615]

The man that lives by taking things not his,
—know him as robber, not as brahmin true. [616]

The man that lives by warlike sword and bow,
—know him as soldier, not as brahmin true. [617]

The man that lives by sacrificial rites,
—know him as chaplain, not as brahmin true. [618]

The man whom realms and broad domains support,
—know him as monarch, not as brahmin true. [619]

Not birth, not parentage, a 'Brahmin' makes;
—birth fosters hauteur, fosters worldliness.
Th' unworldly, trammel-free, is 'Brahmin' true. [620]

True 'Brahmin' call I him who, shackle-free,
by bonds and ties untroubled, lives his life; [621]

—whom yoke and harness, straps and pin, no more
can hamper, since Enlightenment is his; [622]

—who, guiltless, bears abuse and stripes and chains,
with patient meekness armed, in meekness strong; [623]

—who, wrathless, meekly dutiful, and good,
in stainless self-control wears his last clay; [624]

—in whom low pleasure finds no resting-place,
—as off the lotus-leaf the raindrop rolls,
nor rests the mustard-seed on needle's point; [625]

—who knows that, here and now, all Ill is o'er;
whose pack is off his shoulders; who is freed; [626]

34. Gambhīrapaññaṃ medhāviṃ maggāmaggaṃ kovidaṃ
uttamatthaṃ anuppattaṃ,—tam [627]
35. Asaṃsaṭṭhaṃ gahaṭṭhehi anāgārehi cūbhayaṃ
anokasāriṃ appicchaṃ,—tam [628]
36. Nidhāya daṇḍaṃ bhūtesu, tasesu thāvaresu ca,
yo na hanti, na ghāheti,—tam [629]
37. Aviruddhaṃ viruddhesu, attadaṇḍesu nibbutaṃ,
sādānesu anādānaṃ,—tam [630]
38. Yassa rāgo ca doso ca, māno makkho ca, pātito
sāsapor iva āraggā,—tam [631]
39. Akakkasaṃ viññapaniṃ giriṃ saccaṃ udīraye
yāya nābhisaṇe kañci,—tam [632]
40. Yo ca dīghaṃ va rassaṃ vā aṇumthūlaṃ subhāsubhaṃ
loke adinnaṃ nādiyati,—tam [633]
41. Āsā yassa na vijjanti, asmiṃ loke paramhi ca,
nirāsayaṃ, viśaṃyuttaṃ,—tam [634]
42. Yassālayā na vijjanti—aññāya akathaṃkathī—
amatogadhaṃ anuppattaṃ,—tam [635]
43. Yo 'dha puññaṃ ca pāpaṃ ca ubho sangāṃ upaccagā,
asokaṃ virajaṃ suddhaṃ,—tam [636]
44. Candam va vimalaṃ suddhaṃ vipprasannaṃ anāvilāṃ
nandibhavaparikkhīṇaṃ,—tam [637]
45. Yo imaṃ palipathaṃ duggaṃ saṃsāraṃ moham accagā
tiṇṇo pāragato jhāyī, anejo akathaṃkathī,
anupādāya nibbutaṃ,—tam [638]
46. Yo 'dha kāme pahatvāna anāgāro paribbaje,
kāmaḥbhavaparikkhīṇaṃ,—tam [639]
47. Yo 'dha taṇhaṃ pahatvāna anāgāro paribbaje,
taṇhābhavaparikkhīṇaṃ,—tam [640]
48. Hitvā mānusaṃ yogaṃ, dībaṃ yogaṃ upaccagā,
sabbayogavisarṃyuttaṃ,—tam [641]
49. Hitvā ratiṃ ca aratiṃ ca, sītibhūtaṃ nirūpadhiṃ,
sabbalokābhībhūṃ vīraṃ,—tam [642]

- whose Lore is deep, whose wit is quick, who knows [627]
right paths from wrong, whose feet have reached the goal;
- who mixes not with lay, or homeless, folk; [628]
who has no habitation, scanty wants;
- who shows no violence to weak or strong, [629]
nor kills nor orders death of aught that lives;
- who, raging not when others rage, and calm [630]
'midst turbulence, discards what others clutch;
- from whom lusts, hate, and pride, and spite are fled [631]
—as from the needle's tip the mustard-seed;
- whose gentle, helpful, utterances preach [632]
the Truth, but never wound the list'ner's ear;
- who takes—ungiven—nothing great or small, [633]
or fine or coarse, or fair or foul to view;
- who yearns for nothing here or after death; [634]
without a longing and without a tie;
- who, craving naught, and purged by vision clear [635]
from haunting doubts, has plunged in Deathlessness;
- who, having passed beyond 'works'—good and bad— [636]
is freed from sorrow, inly cleansed, and pure;
- who, calm and pure as is the spotless moon, [637]
has now no longings left to live again;
- who, safe across th' engulfing bogs and sloughs [638]
of rebirth's round and error's trackless maze,
doubt-free on th' Other Shore, in Reverie,
has 'passed away', because life's stuff is spent;
- who, quitting pleasures for the Pilgrim's way, [639]
deems it no pleasure now to live anew;
- who, quitting cravings for the Pilgrim's way, [640]
has now no craving left to live anew;
- who, casting off his human yoke, transcends [641]
all yokes divine,—from ev'ry yoke unyoked;
- who, casting off dislikes and likes, abides [642]
calm and unfever'd, quit of what feeds life,
—hero triumphant o'er the universe;

50. Cutim̐ yo vedī sattānaṃ upapattiṃ ca sabbaso [643]
asattaṃ sugataṃ buddhaṃ,—tam . . .
51. Yassa gatiṃ na jānanti devā gandhabbamānusa, [644]
khīṇāsavaṃ arahantaṃ,—tam . . .
52. Yassa pure ca pacchā ca majjhe ca na 'tthi kiñcanaṃ, [645]
akiñcanaṃ anādānaṃ,—tam . . .
53. Usabhaṃ pavaraṃ vīraṃ mahesiṃ vijitāvinaṃ [646]
anejaṃ nahātakaṃ buddhaṃ,—tam . . .
54. Pubbenivāsaṃ yo vedī, saggāpāyaṃ ca passati, [647]
atho jātikkhayaṃ patto,—tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'.
-
55. Samaññā h' esā lokasmiṃ nāmagottaṃ pakappitaṃ, [648]
sammuccā samudāgataṃ tattha tattha pakappitaṃ,
56. dīgharattam anusayitaṃ diṭṭhigataṃ ajānataṃ; [649]
ajānantā no pabrūvanti:—'Jātiyā hoti brāhmaṇo'.
57. Na jaccā 'Brāhmaṇo' hoti, na jaccā hoti abrahmaṇo; [650]
—kammanā 'Brāhmaṇo' hoti; kammanā hoti abrahmaṇo.
58. Kassako kammanā hoti; sippiko hoti kammanā; [651]
vāṇijo kammanā hoti; pessiko hoti kammanā;
59. coro pi kammanā hoti; yodhājīvo pi kammanā; [652]
yājako kammanā hoti; rājā pi hoti kammanā.
60. Evam etaṃ yathābhūtaṃ kammaṃ passanti paṇḍitā, [653]
paṭiccasamuppādasā, kammavipākakovidā:—
61. Kammanā vattati loko, kammanā vattatī pajā; [654]
kammanibandhanaṃ sattā, rathassa' āṇiya yāyato.
62. Tapena, brahmacariyena, saṃyamena, damena ca, [655]
—etena 'Brāhmaṇo' hoti; etaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ uttamaṃ.
63. Tīhi vijjāhi sampanno, santo, khīṇapunabbhavo [656]
(evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi), Brahmā, Sakko, vijānataṃ.

Evam vutte, Vāseṭṭha-Bhāradvājā māṇavā Bhagavantaṃ etad avocum:—
Abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama,—pe—ete mayaṃ bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ
gacchāma, dhammaṃ ca, bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca; upāsake no bhavaṃ Gotamo
dhāretu ajjatagge paṇupete saraṇāgate ti.

- who knows whence creatures come and whither pass, [643]
 —from all attachments freed, Enlighten'd, blest;
 —whose bourn no gods, no men, no quire on high, [644]
 can tell,—the Arahāt from Cankers purged;
 —whose present, future, past, are swept and clean; [645]
 who harbours naught, and hankers after naught;
 —who's first in prowess, hero, victor, sage, [646]
 th' unruffled Lord of All-Enlightenment;
 —within whose ken are lives he lived long since; [647]
 whose vision takes in paradise and hell;
 for whom rebirth is dead. *He's 'Brahmin true'.*
 By general consent men's names and clans [648]
 as useful designations current passed;
 'twas long ere time evolved the novel view, [649]
 till then unknown, that birth a 'Brahmin' makes.
 —Birth neither Brahmin, nor non-Brahmin, makes; [650]
 'tis life and conduct moulds the Brahmin true.
 Their lives mould farmers, tradesmen, merchants, serfs; [651]
 their lives mould robbers, soldiers, chaplains, kings. [652]
 'Tis thus the wise life's causal outcome see, [653]
 discern what went before, what follows thence.
 Their past decides how men shall fare,—like carts [654]
 that needs must travel in the linchpin's wake.
 'Tis self-denial, holy life, control, [655]
 which make my Brahmin's perfect Brahminhood.
 He who has won the Threefold Lore, the Saint [656]
 who ne'er shall see rebirth,—*He Brāhmā* is
 (to them that know) and Sakka manifest.

Hereupon, the young brahmins Vāsetṭha and Bhāradvāja said to the Lord:—
 Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! . . . (*&c., as at p. 25*) . . . accept us
 as disciples who have found an abiding refuge, from this day forth whilst
 life shall last.

(*Note.*—This Sutta recurs verbatim as Sutta No. 98 of the Majjhima
 Nikāya.)

10. KOKĀLIYASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārame. Atha kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Pāpicchā, bhante, Sāriputta-Moggallānā, pāpikānaṃ icchānaṃ vasaṃgatā ti.

Evaṃ vutte Bhagavā Kokāliyaṃ bhikkhum etad avoca:—Mā h' evaṃ, Kokāliya; mā h' evaṃ, Kokāliya; pasādehi, Kokāliya, Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṃ; pesalā Sāriputta-Moggallānā ti.

Dutiyam pi kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu Bhagavantam etad avoca: Kiñcāpi me, bhante, Bhagavā saddhāyiko paccayiko, atha kho pāpicchā va Sāriputta-Moggallānā, pāpikānaṃ icchānaṃ vasaṃgatā ti.

Dutiyam pi kho Bhagavā Kokāliyaṃ bhikkhum etad avoca: Mā h' evaṃ ... pesalā Sāriputta-Moggallānā ti.

Tatiyaṃ pi kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu Bhagavantam etad avoca: Kiñcāpi me, bhante, Bhagavā ... vasaṃgatā ti.

Tatiyaṃ pi kho Bhagavā Kokāliyaṃ bhikkhum etad avoca: Mā h' evaṃ ... pesalā Sāriputta-Moggallānā ti.

Atha kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu utthāyāsanaṃ Bhagavantam abhivādetvā padakkhiṇaṃ katvā pakkāmi. Acirapakkantassa ca Kokāliyassa bhikkhuno sāsa-pamattīhi piḷakāhi sabbo kāyo phuṇo ahoṣi, sāsapamattīyo hutvā muggamattīyo ahesuṃ, muggamattīyo hutvā kaḷāyamattīyo ahesuṃ, kaḷāyamattīyo hutvā kolaṭṭhimattīyo ahesuṃ, kolaṭṭhimattīyo hutvā kolamattīyo ahesuṃ, kolamattīyo hutvā āmalakamattīyo ahesuṃ, āmalakamattīyo hutvā beḷuvasalāṭṭukamattīyo ahesuṃ, beḷuvasalāṭṭukamattīyo hutvā billimattīyo ahesuṃ, billimattīyo hutvā pabhijjimsu, pubbaṇ ca lohitaṇ ca paggharimsu. Atha kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu ten' eva ābādhena kālam akāsi; kālakato ca Kokāliyo bhikkhu Padumanirayaṃ upapajji Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṃ āghātevā.

Atha kho Brahmā Sahampati abhikkantāya rattiyā abhikkantavaṇṇo kevalakappaṃ Jetavanam obhāsetvā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ aṭṭhāsi. Ekamantaṃ ṭhito kho Brahmā Sahampati Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Kokāliyo, bhante, bhikkhu kālakato; kālakato ca, bhante, Kokāliyo bhikkhu Padumanirayaṃ upapanno Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṃ āghātevā ti. Idam avoca Brahmā Sahampati, idam vatvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā padakkhiṇaṃ katvā tatth' ev' antaradhāyi.

Atha kho Bhagavā tassā rattiyā accayena bhikkhū āmantesi:—Imaṃ, bhikkhave, rattim Brahmā Sahampati abhikkantāya rattiyā—pe—idam avoca Brahmā Sahampati, idam vatvā maṃ abhivādetvā padakkhiṇaṃ katvā tatth' ev' antaradhāyīti.

Sutta 10. Slander's doom

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure-ground, the Almsman Kokāliya came to the Lord and after salutations took his seat to one side, saying to the Lord:—Sāriputta and Moggallāna, sir, harbour evil desires and are fallen a prey to evil desires.

To this the Lord made answer:—Nay, Kokāliya; do not entertain this feeling against Sāriputta and Moggallāna,—who are good men.

The second time, Kokāliya said:—Although the Lord personally inspires me with trust and confidence, yet Sāriputta and Moggallāna do harbour evil desires and are fallen a prey to evil desires.

A second time the Lord repeated his answer.

A third time Kokāliya made his charge and received the same answer.

Then the Almsman Kokāliya rose up and departed, after saluting the Lord with deep reverence. He had not been gone long before pustules the size of a mustard-seed broke out all over his body, pustules which grew and grew to the size first of a lentil, then of a chick-pea, then of a jujube's kernel, then of a jujube, then of a myrobalan, then of a vilva fruit, and then of a quince;—then they broke, exuding pus and blood. That disease killed the Almsman Kokāliya, who passed hence to the Paduma Purgatory, all because he hardened his heart against Sāriputta and Moggallāna.

As night was waning, Brahmā Sahampati—in surpassing splendour, which flooded the whole of Jeta's grove with radiance—drew nigh to the Lord, saluted him and stood to one side, saying:—'Sir, the Almsman Kokāliya is dead and has passed to the Paduma Purgatory, all because he hardened his heart against Sāriputta and Moggallāna.' So saying, Brahmā Sahampati saluted the Lord with deep reverence and vanished.

When the night had gone, the Lord, addressing the Almsmen, told them of Brahmā Sahampati's visit and of his report of Kokāliya's death and rebirth in the Paduma Purgatory, all because of his animosity against Sāriputta and

Evam vutte aññataro bhikkhu Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca:—Kīvaḍiḥamaṃ nu kho, bhante, Padume niraye āyuppaṃāṇaṃ ti?

Diḥamaṃ kho, bhikkhu, Padume niraye āyuppaṃāṇaṃ; taṃ na sukaraṃ saṃkhātum 'ettakāni vassāni' iti vā, 'ettakāni vassasatāni' iti vā, 'ettakāni vassasahassāni' iti vā, 'ettakāni vassasatasahassāni' iti vā ti.

Sakkā pana, bhante, upamaṃ kātun ti?

Sakkā bhikkhūti, Bhagavā avoca:—Seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati khāriko Kosalako tilavāho, tato puriso vassasatassa vassasatassa accayena ekam ekaṃ tilaṃ uddhareyya;—khippataraṃ kho so, bhikkhu, vīsati khāriko Kosalako tilavāho iminā upakkamaṇa parikkhayaṃ pariyādānaṃ gaccheyya, na tveva eko Abbudo nirayo. Seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Abbudā nirayā, evam eko Nirabbudo nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Nirabbudā nirayā, evam eko Ababo nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Ababā nirayā, evam eko Ahaho nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Ahahā nirayā, evam eko Aṭaṭo nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Aṭaṭā nirayā, evam eko Kumudo nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Kumudā nirayā, evam eko Sogandhiko nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Sogandhikā nirayā, evam eko Uppalako nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Uppalakā nirayā, evam eko Puṇḍariko nirayo; seyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Puṇḍarikā nirayā, evam eko Padumo nirayo. Padumaṃ kho pana, bhikkhu, nirayaṃ Kokāliyo bhikkhu upapanno Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṃ āghātetvā ti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā; idaṃ vatvā Sugato athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

1. Purisassa hi jātassa kuṭhāri jāyate mukhe [657]
yāya chindati attānaṃ bālo dubbhāsitaṃ bhaṇaṃ.
2. Yo nindiyaṃ paraṃsati, taṃ vā nindati yo paraṃsiyo, [658]
vicināti mukhena so kalira, kalinā tena sukhaṃ na vindati.
3. Appamatto ayaṃ kali, [659]
yo akkhesu dhanaparājayo
sabbassāpi sahāpi attanā;
ayaṃ eva mahattaro kali
yo sugatesu manāṃ padosaye.
4. Sataṃ saḥassānaṃ Nirabbudānaṃ, [660]
chattiriṃsa ca pañca ca Abbudāni
yaṃ ariyagarahī nirayaṃ upeti
vācaṃ manaṃ ca paṇidhāya pāpakaraṃ.
5. Abhūtavādī nirayaṃ upeti, [661]
yo vā pi katvā 'Na karomi' ce āha;
ubho pi te pecca samā bhavanti
nīhinakammā manujā parattha.

Moggallāna. Thereupon, a certain Almsman asked the Lord how long a term of durance had to be spent in the Paduma Purgatory.

A term so long, answered the Lord, that it is not easy to express it in years, or in hundreds, or thousands, or even hundreds of thousands of years.

Could you give some idea of its duration, sir?

Yes, Almsman, answered the Lord. Imagine a Kosalan cartload of twenty measures of sesamum seed, and suppose that at the close of every century one single seed at a time were removed. Well, by this method, the cartload would be exhausted sooner than the term in a One-æon Purgatory,—a score of which last one Nirabbuda Purgatory, and a score of these one Ababa Purgatory, and a score of these one Ahaha Purgatory, and a score of these one Aṭaṭa Purgatory, and a score of these one Kumuda Purgatory, a score of these one Sogandhika Purgatory, a score of these one Uppalaka Purgatory, a score of these one Puṇḍarika Purgatory,—a score of which last one Paduma Purgatory. Now it was to Paduma that the Almsman Kokāliya passed hence, all because he hardened his heart against Sāriputta and Moggallāna.

Thus spake the Lord; and when the Blessed One had thus spoken, he went on, as Teacher, to say:—

In each man's mouth at birth there grows an axe, [657]
wherewith fools gash themselves by speaking ill.

The tongue which lauds blameworthy folk, or blames [658]
the laudable, ne'er wins felicity.

A trifling doom it is to lose [659]
one's all, and liberty, at dice;
a doom far greater is a heart
at enmity with blessed saints.

An evil tongue, an evil mind, [660]
condemn to hell whoso maligns
the saintly, till full tale is told
of æons spent in Paduma.

False witness leads, like perjury, [661]
to hell; one equal doom awaits
both villainies when this life ends.

6. Yo appaduṭṭhassa narassa dussati
suddhassa posassa anangaṇassa,
tam eva bālāṃ pacceti pāpaṃ,
—sukhumo rajo paṭivātaṃ va khitto. [662]
7. Yo lobhaguṇe anuyutto
so vacasā paribhāsati aññe
assaddho kadariyo avadaññū
macchari pesuṇiyasmiṃ anuyutto. [663]
8. Mukhadugga, vibhūta-m-anariya,
bhūnahu, pāpaka, dukkatakāri,
purisanta, kali, avajāta,
mā bahu bhāṇ' idha; nerayiko 'si. [664]
9. Rajam ākisasi ahitāya,
sante garahasi kibbisakāri;
bahūni ca duccaritāni caritvā
gañchisi kho papataṃ cirarattaṃ. [665]
10. Na hi nassati kassaci kammaṃ.
Eti ha taṃ, labhat' eva suvāmī;
dukkhaṃ mando paraloke
attani passati kibbisakāri. [666]
11. Ayosaṃku-samāhata-ṭṭhānaṃ
tiṇhadhāraṃ ayasūlam upeti;
atha tatta' ayoguḷasannibhaṃ
bhojanaṃ atthi tathā patirūpaṃ. [667]
12. Na hi vaggu vadanti vadantā;
nābhijavanti; na tāṇam upenti,
angāre santhate senti,
aggini-samaṃ jalitaṃ pavisanti. [668]
13. Jālena ca onahiyānā
tattha hananti ayomayakūṭehi.
Andhaṃ va timisaṃ āyanti,
taṃ vitataṃ hi yathā mahikāyo. [669]
14. Atha lohamayaṃ pana kumbhiṃ
aggini-samaṃ jalitaṃ pavisanti;
paccanti hi tāsu cirarattaṃ,
aggini-samāsu samuppilavāso. [670]

If wrong be done to meek and pure
and good, the wickedness and guilt
recoils—like dust that's flung up-wind—
upon the fool who did that wrong.

[662]

Reviling goes with covetise,
—with unbelief and stinginess,
with churlishness and avarice,
and acrimonious calumny.

[663]

O foul-mouthed, false, ignoble wretch!
Black-hearted, blighting villain, vile,
degraded, infamous! Forbear
to vent words here, thou spawn of hell!

[664]

Thou flingest mud malignantly,
decrying virtue, child of sin!
But, after thy career of guilt,
limbo shall be thine age-long doom!

[665]

For, no man's deeds are blotted out;
each deed comes home; the doer finds
it waiting him; in worlds to come
the purblind dree their weird of woe.

[666]

They pass to where with pegs of steel
they're trussed; to ease their hunger's pangs,
they're fed (meet nutriment for such!)
with red-hot balls of flaming steel.

[667]

No words of cheer reach these; no zest
impels them forward; shelter's none;
their bed is embers, their abode
one sheer expanse of blazing fire.

[668]

Hell's warders fling a net o'er them,
and with steel hammers pound them sore.
To blinding, murky realms they go,
realms vast as earth's wide-flung expanse.

[669]

The Brazen Cauldron's molten fires,
receive them next, in torrid foam
to seethe, as up and down they bob.

[670]

15. Atha pubbalohitamisse [671]
 tattha kiṃ paccati kibbisakārī.
 Yaṃ yaṃ disataṃ adhiseti,
 tattha kilissati samphusamāno.
16. Puḷavāvasathe salilasmim̃ [672]
 tattha kiṃ paccati kibbisakārī.
 Gantuṃ na hi tūram ap' atthi;
 sabbasamā hi samantakapallā.
17. Asipattavanaṃ pana tiṇhaṃ [673]
 taṃ pavisanti samacchidagattā;
 jivhaṃ baḷisena gahetvā
 ārajayārajayā vihananti.
18. Atha Vetaraṇiṃ pana duggaṃ [674]
 tiṇhadhāraṃ khuradhāraṃ upenti;
 tattha mandā papatanti
 pāpakarā pāpāni karitvā.
19. Khādanti hi tattha rudante [675]
 sāmā sabalā kākoḷagaṇā ca
 soṇā sigālā paṭigijjhā,
 kulalā vāyasā ca vitudanti.
20. Kicchā vatāyaṃ idha vutti [676]
 yaṃ jano passati kibbisakārī.
 Tasmā idha jīvitasese
 kiccakaro siyā naro, na pamajje.
21. Te gaṇitā vidūhi tilavāhā [677]
 ye Padume niraye upanītā;
 nahutāni hi koṭiyo pañca bhavanti,
 dvādasa koṭisatāni pun' aññā.
22. Yāva-dukkhā nirayā idha vuttā, [678]
 tattha pi tāva-ciraṃ vasitabbaṃ.
 Tasmā sucīpesalasādhugūṇesu
 vācaṃ manam̃ satataṃ parirakkhe.

Then in a brew of blood and pus
the malefactor's put to stew;
turn where he may, on ev'ry side
he wallows still in filth and slime.

[671]

In water next which teems with worms
the malefactor stews afresh.
He cannot land; he's vaulted in
beneath that limbo's domed expanse.

[672]

They enter next the Sword-leaf Wood,
wherein their limbs are lopped away.
The wardens hook them by the tongue
and slash them sore with whirling strokes.

[673]

The Caustic Stream, Vetāraṇī,—
whose waters rive and rip,—comes next;
and purblind evil-doers plunge
therein, because of evil done.

[674]

They howl as they a banquet make
for hungry ravens, jackals, dogs,
and vultures dusky-hued or pied,
while stabbed by beaks of kites and crows.

[675]

This woeful doom awaits in hell
the malefactor! So while yet
men live on earth, let them fulfil
their duties here unflinchingly.

[676]

The experts calculate
the term in Paduma
which represents the loads
of seeds of sesamum
to be five myriads
twelve hundred crores of years.

[677]

Such are the griding pains
and such the term in hell!
—Wherefore in purity
and love and virtue keep
both mind and tongue alway.

[678]

11. NĀLAKASUTTA

1. Ānandajāte tidasagaṇe patite [679]
Sakkañ ca Indaṃ sucivasane ca deve
dussaṃ gahetvā atiriva thomayante
Asito isi addasa divāvihāre.
2. Disvāna deve muditamane udagge [680]
cittiṃ karitvā idam avocāsi tattha:
'Kiṃ devasaṃgho atiriva kallarūpo?
Dussaṃ gahetvā bhamayatha kiṃ paṭicca?
3. Yadā pi āsi asurehi sangamo, [681]
jayo surānaṃ, asurā parājītā,
tadā pi n' etādiso lomahaṃsano.
Kim abbhutaṃ daṭṭhu marū pamoditā?
4. Seḷanti gāyanti ca vādayanti ca [682]
bhujāni poṭhenti ca naccayanti ca.
Pucchāmi vo 'haṃ, Merumuddhavāsine;
dhunātha me saṃsayaṃ khippa, mārisā.'
5. 'So Bodhisatto ratanavaro atulyo [683]
manussaloke hitasukhatāya jāto
Sakyāna' gāme janapade Lumbhineyye!
—Ten' amha tuṭṭhā atiriva kallarūpā.
6. So sabbasattuttamo aggapuggalo [684]
narāsabho sabbapajānam uttamo
vattessati cakkam Isivhaye vane,
nadaṃ va siho balavā migādhibhū.'
7. Taṃ saddaṃ sutvā turitam avaraṃsari so, [685]
Suddhodaṇassa tada bhavanaṃ upāgami.
Nisajja tattha idam avocāsi Sake:
Kuiṃ kumāro? aham api daṭṭhukāmo.
8. Tato kumāraṃ, jalitam iva suvaṇṇam [686]
ukkāmukhe va sukusalasampahaṭṭhaṃ
daddallamānaṃ siriya anomavaṇṇam
dassesu' puttaṃ Asitavhayassa Sakyā.
9. Disvā kumāraṃ, sikhim iva pajjalantaṃ, [687]
tārāsabhaṃ va nabhasigamaṃ visuddhaṃ,
suriyaṃ tapantaṃ saradar iv' abhamuttaṃ,
ānandajāto vipulam alatta pītiṃ.

Sutta 11. *Asita's Nunc Dimittis*

At noontide Asita the Sage [679]
 beheld the joyous Thrice-ten gods
 and Sakka-Indra at their head,
 waving their spotless robes in glee.

Asita: At sight of their triumphant joy, [680]
 he reverently spoke these words:—
 What gladdens thus th' assembled gods?
 Say why ye wave your garments so.

Not even when the war with fiends [681]
 crushed fiends and gave gods victory,
 was such excitement shown as now.
 What marvel cheers the gods to-day?

They shout and sing to music's strains; [682]
 they toss their arms and dance around.
 Ye denizens of Meru's peaks,
 quick! tell me why; dispel my doubts.

Deities: 'The future Buddha, pearl of pearls, [683]
 for peace and weal is born as man,
 a Sákýán in Lumbinī.
 —And thence our jubilation springs.

This matchless being, chief of men, [684]
 hero, supreme o'er beings all,
 as with a kingly lion's roar
 in Sages' Wood shall start Truth's Wheel.'

When Asita heard this, straight down he went [685]
 till he drew nigh Suddhódana's abode,
 and, seated there, addressed the Sákýáns:—
 Where is the prince? I too would gaze on him.

Thereon, to Asita, that swarthy sage, [686]
 the Sákýans shewed the newborn babe, who shone
 with golden sheen, like gold by craftsmen wrought,
 fresh from the furnace, and exceeding fair.

In joy and zest abounding, Asita [687]
 beheld th' effulgent babe,—bright as a flame,
 pure as the riding moon, and radiant
 as shines the sun in cloudless autumn skies.

10. Anekaśākhāñ ca sahaśsamāṇḍalañ
chattarñ marū dhārayuñ antalikkhe,
suvaṇṇadaṇḍā vītipatanti cāmarā;
na dissare cāmarachattagāhakā. [688]
11. Disvā jaṭī Kaṇhasirivhaya isi,
suvaṇṇanekkharñ viya paṇḍukambale,
setañ ca chattarñ dhariyanta' muddhani,
udaggacitto sumano paṭiggahe. [689]
12. Paṭiggahetvā pana Sakyapungavañ
jigimsako lakkhaṇamantapāragū
pasannacitto girarñ abbhudirayi:—
'Anuttarāyañ, dipadānam uttamo'. [690]
13. Ath' attano gamanañ anussaranto
akalyarūpo gaḷayati assukāni.
Disvāna Sakyā isirñ avocurñ rudantañ:—
'No ce kumāre bhavissati antarāyo?' [691]
14. Disvāna Sakyē isi-m-avoca akalye:—
'Nāharñ kumāre ahitam anussarāmi,
na cāpi-m-assa bhavissati antarāyo,
na orakāyam. Adhimanasā bhavātha. [692]
15. Sambodhiyaggarñ phusissatāyañ kumāro;
so dhammacakkarñ paramavisuddhadassī
vattessatāyañ bahujanahitānukampī;
vitthārik' assa bhavissati brahmacariyañ. [693]
16. Mamañ ca āyu na cirarñ idhāvaseso,
ath' antarā me bhavissati kālakiriya.
So 'harñ na sussaṇṇa asamadhurassa Dhammañ;
ten' amhi aṭṭo vyasanagato aghāvi'. [694]
17. So Sākiyānañ vipula' janetvā pīṭirñ
antepuramhā niragama brahmacārī.
—So bhāgineyyaṇṇa sayarñ anukampamāno
samādapesi asamadhurassa Dhamme:— [695]
18. " 'Buddho' ti ghosañ yada parato suṇāsi
'sambodhipatto vicarati Dhammamaggarñ',
gantvāna tattha samayañ paripucchiyaṇṇo
carassu tasmirñ Bhagavati brahmacariyañ." [696]

A canopy aloft the gods
upheld, with ribs of gold to spread
the thousand widths of its expanse,
while fans were waved on wands of gold;
—yet none could see who held, or waved.

[688]

Beneath that canopy so white
there lay—like gold on samite laid—
the babe, whom that swart anchorite,
with matted locks, took up with joy.

[689]

He took him up; and when his gaze
found marks and signs his lore knew well,
he lifted up his voice and cried:—
'He has no peer! He's mankind's best!'

[690]

Here, rising thoughts of his approaching end
reduced the sage to tears, whereat alarmed
the Sâkyans asked the weeping sage to say
if danger would beset the new-born child.

[691]

Seeing the Sâkyans so disquieted,
the sage made answer thus:—No harm to him
can I foresee; no danger threatens him;
no common clay is he;—give heed to me.

[692]

To All-Enlightenment this child shall grow;
in Utter Holiness, by pity moved,
Truth's Wheel a-rolling he shall set, and spread
his Saving Rule abroad both far and wide.

[693]

But few are my remaining days of life,
and meantime death will end my dwindling span,
nor shall I hear his weighty Doctrine preached.
'Tis only this that saddens me the while.

[694]

Cheering the Sâkyans with his heart'ning words
the sage from out the precincts passed, to lead
the Higher Life. By pity moved, he bade
his sister's son embrace the matchless Truth:—

[695]

"Nephew (said he), when, later, thou shalt hear
that: 'Th' All-Enlighten'd Buddha treads the Path
his Doctrine shows',—go, seek him out, explore
his gospel, lead the higher life with Him."

[696]

19. Tenānusiṭṭho hitamanasena tādinaṁ [697]
 anāgate paramavisuddhadassinā
 so Nālako upacitapuññasāṇicayo
 'Jinam' patikkhamṁ parivasi rakkhitindriyo.

20. Sutvāna ghosaṁ 'Jinavaracakkavattane' [698]
 gantvāna disvā isinisaḥṣaṁ pasanno
 moneyyaseṭṭhaṁ munipavaṇṇaṁ apucchi,
 samāgate Asitavhayassa sāsane.

(*Vatthugāthā niṭṭhiṭṭā.*)

21. "Aññātaṁ etaṁ vacanaṁ Asitassa yathātatham, [699]
 taṁ taṁ, Gotama, pucchāma sabbadhammāna' pāraguṁ:—

22. Anagāriy' upetassa bhikkhācariyaṁ jigimsato, [700]
 Muni, pabrūhi me puṭṭho moneyyaṁ uttamaṁ padaṁ."

23. Moneyyan te upaṇṇissaṁ (ti Bhagavā) [701]
 dukkaraṁ durabhisambhavaṁ.
 Handa te naṁ pavakkhāmi:—
 'Santhambhassu, daḥho bhava'.

24. Samānabhāgaṁ kubbetha gāme akkuṭṭhavanditaṁ; [702]
 manopadosaṁ rakkheyya; santo anuṇṇato care.

25. Uccāvacaṁ niccharanti dāye aggisikhūpamā; [703]
 nariyo muniraṁ palobhenti;—tā su taṁ mā palobhayuṁ.

26. Virato methunā dhammā, hitvā kāme parovare, [704]
 aviruddho asāratto pāṇesu tasathāvare,

27. 'yathā ahaṁ tathā ete, yathā ete tathā ahaṁ' [705]
 attānaṁ upamaṁ katvā na haneyya na ghātaye.

28. Hitvā icchaṇā ca lobhaṇā ca, yattha satto puthujjano, [706]
 cakkhumā paṭipajjeyya; tareyya narakam imam.

29. Ūnūdaro mitāhāro appicch' assa alolupo; [707]
 sa ve icchāya nicchāto, aniccho hoti nibbuto.

Thus counsell'd by that kindly, helpful saint
 (the destined heir of utter holiness)
 this Nālaka lived on, in affluence
 of garner'd merit, keeping watch o'er Sense,
 till He, the future 'Conqueror', should come.

[697]

But when news came 'a Conqueror has set
 his Wheel of Truth a-rolling', straight he sought,
 and found Him,—found Him and, believing, asked
 that prince of seers (since now the time once set
 by Asita had come):—"What makes "a Sage"?"

[698]

(*End of the Introductory verses.*)

Nālaka: What Asita foretold (said Nālaka)
 has turned out true! So tell me, Gotama,
 (whose mind has fathom'd ev'ry mental state)—
 when home is left to lead the Almsman's life,
 expound, o Sage, a sage's perfect way.

[699]

[700]

The Lord: Learn then that perfect way (the Lord replied),
 'Tis hard to compass, hard to tread; but still
 its secret I'll impart:—"Stand firm; stand fast!"

[701]

Come praise, come blame,—still take it all as one.
 Let neither mar thine equanimity;
 let blame perturb thee not, nor praise inflate.

[702]

Though lone the wood, sense-objects great and small
 spring up, e'en there, like sudden tongues of fire;
 yea, women tempt the solitary sage;
 see thou to it that women tempt not thee!

[703]

Rejecting carnal joys, to pleasure dead,
 with naught that lives to crib or cabin thee

[704]

take pattern from thyself; Forbear to slay
 —with thine or other's hand—the strong or weak;
 but say: These are as I am, I as they!

[705]

By shedding all desires and covetise,
 pick thine appointed way where fools stick fast.
 Let insight guide thee through this hell on earth.

[706]

With empty belly, diet spare, few wants,
 live temperate. When once desires are quelled,
 their passing ushers in the calm of Peace.

[707]

30. Sa piṇḍacāraṃ caritvā vanantam abhihāraye
upaṭṭhito rukkhamūlasmiṃ āsanūpagato muni. [708]
31. Sa jhānapasuto dhīro vanante ramito siyā,
jhāyetha rukkhamūlasmiṃ attānam abhitoṣayaṃ. [709]
32. Tato ratyā vivasane gāmantarā abhihāraye;
avhānarā nābhinandeyya abhihāraṇ ca gāmato. [710]
33. Na muni gāmam āgamma kulesu sahasā care,
ghāsesanarā chinnakatho na vācam payutarā bhaṇe. [711]
34. 'Alattharā yad, idarā sādhu; nālattharā, kusalāṃ iti';
ubhayen' eva so tādi rukkhārā va upanivattati. [712]
35. Sa pattapāṇi vicaranto, amūgo mūgasammato,
apparā dānarā na hiḷeyya, dātārā nāvajāniya. [713]
36. Uccāvacaḥ hi paṭipadā Samaṇena pakāsitā,
na pārāṇ diguṇarā yanti, na idarā ekaguṇarā mutarā. [714]
37. Yassa ca visatā na 'tthi chinnaṣotassa bhikkhuno,
kiccākiccapahīnassa pariḷāho na vijjati. [715]
38. Moneyyan te upaṇṇissarā:— (ti Bhagavā) [716]
Khuradhārūpamo bhava,
jivhāya tālurā āhacca
udare saṇyato siyā,
39. alinacitto ca siyā, [717]
na cāpi bahu cintaye,
nirāmagandho asito
brahmacariyaparāyano.
40. Ekāsanassa sikkhetha, [718]
Samaṇūpāsanassa ca.
Ekattarā monam akkhātārā.
Eko ce abhiramissasi,
41. atha bhāsihi dasa disā. [719]
Sutvā dhīrānarā nigghosarā jhāyīnarā kāmacāginarā
tato hiriṇ ca saddharā ca bhiyyo kubbetha māmako.
42. Tan nadihi vijānātha sobbhesu padaresu ca: [720]
—saṇantā yanti kussubbhā, tuṇhī yāti mahōdadhi.

- Thine alms-round o'er, within thy wood repair [708]
and take thy seat beneath a spreading tree.
- There, in those dear recesses, find thy bliss [709]
beneath thy tree in lonely Reverie.
- At morn thy village seek, but take no joy [710]
in invitations or in lavish gifts;
- race not from door to door; in quest of alms [711]
seal thou thy lips and proffer no request.
- '*They gave*;—'twas well! *Refused was I*;—'tis well!' [712]
—thus minded seek, in either case, thy tree.
- As—seeming dumb, but nowise dumb at all— [713]
thou goest bowl in hand, disdain no gift
however humble, nor the giver scorn.
- My Rule embraces all things great and small; [714]
its single path alone conducts to Peace;
but never once can senses Peace discern.
- But when an Almsman, from this welter freed, [715]
has shed his cravings, old anxieties
about behaviour cease; distress departs.
- Learn then this perfect way (the Lord went on); [716]
—be like the razor safe within its sheath;
clap tongue to palate, master appetite;
- alert of mind, keep random thoughts at bay; [717]
be redolent of virtue, quit of ties,
absorbed in nothing save the Higher Life;
- live like true anchorite alone, aloof; [718]
remember: 'Wisdom in Detachment lies'.
And, if in solitude thou takest joy,
north, south, and east, and west thy fame shall spread. [719]
- And when thou hearest eulogies of those
who steadfast prove, woo Reverie, and shun
pleasures of sense, let this but stimulate
thy faith and meekness, follower of mine.
- From rivers, cataracts, and deeps learn this: [720]
'Loud roar the cataracts; the deeps are dumb'.

43. Yad ūnakam, taṃ saṇati; yaṃ pūram, santam eva taṃ; [721]
adḍhakumbhūpamo bālo; rahado pūro va paṇḍito.
44. Yaṃ Samaṇo bahu bhāsati upetaṃ atthasamhitam, [722]
jānam so Dhammam deseti, jānam so bahu bhāsati.
45. Yo ca jānam saṃyatatto, jānam na bahu bhāsati, [723]
sa muni monam arahati, sa muni monam ajjhagā ti.

12. DVAYATĀNUPASSANĀSUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvattiyaṃ viharati Pubbārame Migāramātu pāsāde. Tena kho pana samayena Bhagavā tadahuposathe, pannarase puṇṇāya puṇṇamāya rattiya bhikkhusaṃghaparivuto abbhokāse nisinno hoti. Atha kho Bhagavā tuṇhībhūtaṃ tuṇhībhūtaṃ bhikkhusaṃghaṃ anuviloketvā bhikkhū āmantesi:—Ye te, bhikkhave, kusalā dhammā ariyā niyyānikā sambodhagāmino, tesam vo, bhikkhave, kusalanam dhammanam ariyanam niyyānikanam sambodhagaminam kā upanisā savanāyāti?—iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, te evam assu vacanīya: Yāvad eva dvayatānam dhammanam yathābhūtaṃ ñāṇāyāti. Kiñ ca dvayataṃ vadetha?—“Idaṃ dukkham, ayaṃ dukkhasamudayo” ti—ayam ekānupassanā; “Ayaṃ dukkhanirodho, ayam dukkhanirodhagāminī paṭipadā ti”—ayam dutiyanupassanā. Evaṃ sammādvayatānupassino kho, bhikkhave, bhikkhuno apamattassa ātāpino pahitattassa viharato dvinnam phalanam aññataram phalam paṭikamkham,—diṭṭhe va dhamme aññā; sati vā upādisese anāgāmitā ti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā, idaṃ vatvā Sugato, athāparam etad avoca Satthā:—

1. Ye dukkham na-ppajānanti atho dukkhassa sambhavam, [724]
yattha ca sabbaso dukkham asesam uparujjhati,
tañ ca Maggaṃ na jānanti dukkhūpasamagāminam,
2. cetovimuttihiṇā te atho paññāvimuttiyā; [725]
abhabbā te antakiriyā; te ve jātijarūpagā.
3. Ye ca dukkham pajānanti atho dukkhassa sambhavam, [726]
yattha ca sabbaso dukkham asesam uparujjhati,
tañ ca Maggaṃ pajānanti dukkhūpasamagāminam,
4. cetovimuttisampannā atho paññāvimuttiyā; [727]
bhabbā te antakiriyā; na te jātijarūpagā.

Yes; emptiness is loud, but fullness, calm;
the fool's a half-filled crock; the sage, a lake. [721]

Whene'er the Anchorite holds forth, his words
are apposite and fraught with deep import;
with knowledge he expounds the Doctrine's gist,
and from the amplitude of knowledge speaks. [722]

But he whose knowledge goes with self-control, [723]
the sage who, though he knows, eschews much speech,
'tis he has wisdom won,—and wisdom found.

Sutta 12. Pairs to grasp

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in the Old Pleasaunce in the palace of Migāra's Mother, he was sitting out, on the mid-month sabbath evening, among the Almsmen. Observing the Community of Almsmen around him to be wholly silent, the Lord addressed them, saying:—If you are asked, Almsmen, wherefore you listen to righteous, noble, saving, and all-enlightening homilies, your answer should be that you do so in order to comprehend to the full just a single pair of ideas. When asked to what pair you allude, you will reply that the first conception is Ill and its origin, and that the second is Ill's cessation and the path leading to that Cessation. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas, and if his life is earnest, ardent, and purged of Self, then you may anticipate for him one or other of two results,—either Illumination here and now, or else, if his stuff of existence be not wholly spent, no subsequent return to earth.

Thus spoke the Lord; and when he, the Blessed One, had thus spoken, he went on, as Master, to say:—

For, those who know not Ill and how Ill grows, [724]
who neither know how Ill is stilled and quenched
nor know the Way to lay all Ill to rest,

—those miss Release, alike of heart and mind; [725]
they cannot end it all and reach the goal;
they tramp the round of birth, decay, and death.

But they who know both Ill and how Ill grows, [726]
and also know how Ill is stilled and quenched
and know the Way that lays all Ill to rest;

—these win Release of heart, Release of mind; [727]
these surely end it all and reach the goal;
these nevermore shall know decay and birth.

Siyā aññena pi pariyāyena sammādvayatānupassanā ti?—iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, 'siyā' ti 'ssu vacanīyā. Kathaṇ ca siyā?—'Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ upadhipaccayā' ti—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; 'Upadhīnaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na 'tthi dukkhassa sambhavo' ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

5. Upadhīnidānā pabhavanti dukkhā [728]
 ye keci lokasmim anekarūpā.
 Yo ve avidvā upadhīm karoti,
 punappunāṃ dukkham upeti mando.
 Tasmā pajānaṃ upadhīm na kayirā
 dukkhassa jātippabhavānupassī ti.

Siyā aññena pi pariyāyena sammādvayatānupassanā ti?—iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, 'siyā' ti 'ssu vacanīyā. Kathaṇ ca siyā?—'Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ avijjāpaccayā' ti—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; 'Avijjāya tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na 'tthi dukkhassa sambhavo' ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

6. Jātimaraṇasaṃsāraṃ ye vajanti punappunāṃ [729]
 ithabhāv-aññiathābhāvaṃ avijjāy' eva sā gati.
 7. Avijjā h' ayaṃ mahāmoho, yen' idaṃ saṃsitaṃ ciraṃ; [730]
 vijjāgatā ca ye sattā, nāgacchanti punabbhavan ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṇ ca siyā?—'Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ saṃkhārapaccayā' ti—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; 'Saṃkhārānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na 'tthi dukkhassa sambhavo' ti—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

8. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ saṃkhārapaccayā; [731]
 saṃkhārānaṃ nirodhena na 'tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.
 9. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: 'Dukkhaṃ saṃkhārapaccayā', [732]
 sabbasāṃkhārasamathā, saññānaṃ uparodhanā,
 —evaṃ dukkhakkhayaṃ hoti;—etaṃ ñatvā yathātatham
 10. sammaddasā, vedaguno, samma-d-aññāya, paṇḍitā, [733]
 abhibhuyya Mārasaṃyogaṃ, nāgacchanti punabbhavan ti.

If you are asked whether there be yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that the first conception is, that all Ill which comes about is consequent on the Stuff of Existence, whilst the second is that, by the utter and passionless destruction of this underlying stuff, Ill cannot come about. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (*Œc., as above*) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Life's Stuff breeds ev'ry Ill, [728]
—breeds all the Ills there are.
The dolt who witlessly
creates this stuff, piles Ill
on Ill. Create it not,
since thence all Ills are born.

If you are asked whether there be yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that the first conception is, that all Ill which comes about is consequent on Ignorance, whilst the second is that, by the utter and passionless destruction of Ignorance, Ill cannot come about. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (*Œc., as above*) . . . , went on, as Master, to say:—

'Tis Ignorance entails the dreary round [729]
—now here, now there—of countless births and deaths.

'Tis Ignorance tricks purblind dolts to trudge [730]
th' inexorable round from life to life;
—but no hereafter waits for him who *knows*.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Plastic Forces . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Plastic Forces spring; [731]
if Plastic Forces cease, no Ill can grow.

Aware that Plastic Forces breed all Ill, [732]
and clear that Ill's destruction comes about
by stilling each and ev'ry Plastic Force
and breaking down perceptions utterly,

the wise—clear-eyed, equipped with Lore, who *know*— [733]
o'ercoming Māra's yoke, face birth no more.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ viññānapaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Viññānassa tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

11. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ viññānapaccayā; [734]
viññānassa nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.
12. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: ‘Dukkhaṃ viññānapaccayā’, [735]
viññānūpasamā bhikkhu nicchāto parinibbuto ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ phassapaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Phassassa tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

13. Tesāṃ phassaparetānaṃ bhavasotānusārīnaṃ [736]
kummaggapaṭiṭṭhānaṃ ārā saṃyojanakkhayo.
14. Ye ca phassaṃ pariññāya, aññāya upasame ratā, [737]
te ve phassābhisamayā nicchātā parinibbutā ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ vedanāpaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Vedanānaṃ tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

15. Sukhaṃ vā yadi vā dukkhaṃ adukkhamasukhaṃ saha, [738]
ajjhataṇṇaṃ ca bahiddhā ca yaṃ kiñci atthi veditaṃ,
16. —etaṃ ‘dukkhaṃ’ ti ñatvāna mosadhammaṃ palokinaṃ [739]
phussa phussa vayaṃ passaṃ, evaṃ tathā vijānāti
vedanānaṃ khayā bhikkhu nicchāto parinibbuto.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ taṇhāpaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Taṇhāya tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

17. Taṇhādutiyo puriso, dīgham addhāna’ saṃsāraṃ, [740]
itthabhāv-aññāthābhāvaṃ saṃsāraṃ nātivattati.
18. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: Taṇhā dukkhassa sambhavaṃ, [741]
vītatāṇho anādāno sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Consciousness . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Consciousness arise; [734]
no Ills can grow, if Consciousness be stilled.

Aware that Consciousness begets all Ills, [735]
and clear that Ill's destruction comes about
by stilling Consciousness, the Almsman, quit
of Consciousness, finds everlasting Peace.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Contact (between a sense and its object in perception) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Far, far, from bursting bonds are Contact's thralls, [736]
who drift along life's swirling stream, astray.

But they who Contact comprehend and know, [737]
who fathom all that Contact means,—these, quit
of Contact, find the everlasting Peace.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Feelings . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All Feelings, inly bred or from without, [738]
—with pain or pleasure, or with neither, fraught—

the Almsman knows as Ills,—vain fleeting things [739]
that come and go. From Feelings cleansed, he finds,
when feelings die, the everlasting Peace.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Cravings . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Wedded to Cravings, man perforce must pass [740]
from life to life, must trudge now here, now there,
yet never ends rebirth's exacting round.

Aware that Ills are Cravings' progeny, [741]
quell Cravings; clutch at nothing; watchful be,
O Almsman, as you go your homeless way.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṇ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ upādānapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Upādānānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

19. Upādānapaccayā bhavo; bhūto dukkhaṃ nigacchati; [742]
jātassa maraṇaṃ hoti; eso dukkhassa sambhavo.

20. Tasmā upādānakkhayā samma-d-aññāya paṇḍitā [743]
jātikkhayaṃ abhiññāya nāgacchanti punabbhavan ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṇ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ ārambhapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Ārambhānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

21. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ ārambhapaccayā; [744]
ārambhānaṃ nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.

22. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: ‘Dukkhaṃ ārambhapaccayā’, [745]
sabbārambhaṃ paṇinissajja anārambhe vimuttino

23. ucchinnabhavataṇhassa santacittassa bhikkhuno [746]
vitiṇṇo jātisaṃsāro; na ’tthi tassa punabbhavo ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṇ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ āhārapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Āhārānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

24. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ āhārapaccayā; [747]
āhārānaṃ nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.

25. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: ‘Dukkhaṃ āhārapaccayā’, [748]
sabbāhāraṃ pariññāya sabbāhāraṃ anissito,

26. ārogyaṃ samma-d-aññāya āsavānaṃ parikkhayā [749]
saṃkhāya sevī dhammaṭṭho saṃkhaṃ na upeti vedagū ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṇ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ iñjitapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Iñjitānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

27. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ iñjitapaccayā; [750]
iñjitānaṃ nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Life's Fuel . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Life's Fuel feeds existence; what exists [742]
meets Ills; what's born must die; and so springs Ill.

The wise, who see that Fuel's stoppage stops [743]
rebirth, are saved by insight from rebirth.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) toiling and moiling (at good works for 'merit's sake') . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from quest of 'merit' spring; [744]
if 'merit's' quest be stopped, no Ill can grow.

Marking how 'merit's' baleful quest breeds Ills, [745]
the Almsman who discards it all and wins

Release, who craves no more for life renewed [746]
but garners peace of heart, has passed beyond
rebirth and ne'er again shall be reborn.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Sustenance . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Sustenance proceed; [747]
if Sustenance be stopped, no Ills can grow.

Marking how baleful Sustenance breeds Ill, [748]
—plumb, comprehend, forswear all Sustenance!

Know inward Health by casting Cankers out; [749]
walk circumspectly; keep the faith; for, so,
by Lore the sage transcends the scheme of things.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Waverings . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Waverings proceed; [750]
if Waverings be stilled, no Ills can grow.

28. Etam ādinavaṃ ṇatvā: 'Dukkhaṃ iñjitapaccayā', [751]
tasmā ejaṃ ossajja, saṃkhāre uparundhiya,
anejo anupādāno sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṃ ca siyā?—'Nissitassa calitaṃ hotīti',—ayam ekānupassanā; 'Anissito na calatīti',—ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

29. Anissito na calati; nissito ca upādiyaṃ [752]
itthabhāvaññāthābhāvaṃ saṃsāraṃ nātivattati.
30. Etam ādinavaṃ ṇatvā: 'Nissayesu mahabbhayaṃ', [753]
anissito anupādāno sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṃ ca siyā?—'Rūpehi, bhikkhave, āruppā santatara' ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; 'Āruppehi nirodho santatara' ti,—ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

31. Ye ca rūpūpagā sattā ye ca āruppavāsino, [754]
nirodhaṃ appajānantā āgantāro punabbhavaṃ.
32. Ye ca rūpe pariññāya arūpesu susaṇṭhitā, [755]
nirodhe ye vimuccanti, te janā macchūhāyino ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṃ ca siyā?—Yaṃ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa lokassa samāraḥkassa sabrahmakassa sassamaṇabrāhminīyā pajāya sadevamanussāya: 'Idaṃ saccaṃ' ti upanijjhāyitaṃ, tadam ariyānaṃ: 'Etaṃ musā' ti yathābhūtaṃ sammappaññāya suddiṭṭhaṃ,—ayam ekānupassanā; 'Yaṃ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa—pe—sadevamanussāya: "Idaṃ musā" ti upanijjhāyitaṃ, tadam ariyānaṃ: "Etaṃ saccaṃ" ti yathābhūtaṃ sammappaññāya suddiṭṭhaṃ', ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

33. Anattani attamānaṃ passa lokaṃ sadevakaṃ [756]
niviṭṭhaṃ nāmarūpasmiṃ 'Idaṃ saccaṃ' ti maññati.
34. Yena yena hi maññanti, tato taṃ hoti aññāthā; [757]
taṃ hi tassa musā hoti, mosadhammaṃ hi ittaraṃ.
35. Aṃosadhammaṃ nibbānaṃ;—tad ariyā saccato vidū, [758]
te ve saccābhisamayā nicchātā parinibbutā ti.

Marking how baleful Waverings breed Ills,
banish distraction; quench each plastic force.
Still unperturbed, still passionless, alert,
and watchful, Almsman, go your homeless way.

[751]

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Quaking . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

No Quakings trouble independent minds;
but thralls must tramp life's rounds, now here now there.

[752]

Marking how baleful thralldom fosters Ills,
in independence, Almsman, unattached,
alert, and watchful, go your homeless way.

[753]

If you are asked whether there is yet another way of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that the first conception is that the Formless is calmer than what has Form, whilst the second is that Cessation is calmer than the Formless. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (*&c., as above*) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

The denizens of Form and Formless worlds
blind to Cessation, face rebirth anew.

[754]

But they who, versed in Form and Formlessness,
have in Cessation found Deliverance,
in triumph leave behind them Death's domain.

[755]

If you are asked whether there is yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that, first, what the world at large deems Truth has been rightly viewed as falsehood by the Noble through their consummate comprehension, whilst, secondly, the Noble hail as Truth what the world accounts falsehood. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (*&c., as above*) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

How pride of Self (where Self is none) inflates
the world of gods and men! How sure they feel
of personality's undoubted truth!

[756]

Picture it as they will, it's all a lie!
—A lie because all fleeting things are false.

[757]

No lie's Nirvana! This the Noble know,
—they whom from hankering the Noble Truths
have freed, and crowned with everlasting Peace.

[758]

Siyā aññena pi pariyāyena sammādvayatānupassanā ti?—Iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, 'siyā' ti 'ssu vacanīyā. Kathaṃ ca siyā?—Yaṃ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa—pe—sadevamanussāya 'Idaṃ sukhā' ti upanijjhāyitaṃ, tadā ariyānaṃ 'Etaṃ dukkhā' ti yathābhūtaṃ sammappaññāya suddiṭṭhaṃ;—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; Yaṃ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa—pe—sadevamanussāya 'Idaṃ dukkhā' ti upanijjhāyitaṃ, tadā ariyānaṃ 'Etaṃ sukhā' ti yathāpaññāya suddiṭṭhaṃ;—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammādvayatānupassano kho, bhikkhave, bhikkhuno appamattassa ātāpino pahitattassa viharato dvinnāṃ phalānaṃ aññataraṃ phalaṃ pāṭikamkhaṃ,—diṭṭhe va dhamme aññā; sati vā upādisese anāgāmitā ti.

Idaṃ avoca Bhagavā, idaṃ vatvā Sugato athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

36. Rūpā saddā rasā gandhā phassā dhammā ca kevalā [759]
iṭṭhā kantā manāpā ca, yāvat' 'atthīti' vuccati.
37. Sadevakassa lokassa ete vo sukhasammatā; [760]
yattha c' ete nirujjhanti, taṃ nesaṃ dukkhasammatānaṃ.
38. 'Sukha' ti diṭṭhaṃ ariyehi sakkāyass' uparodhanaṃ; [761]
paccanikam idaṃ hoti sabbalokena passatāṃ.
39. Yaṃ pare 'sukhato' āhu, tad ariyā āhu 'dukkhato'; [762]
yaṃ pare 'dukkhato' āhu, tad ariyā 'sukhato' vidū.
—Passa dhammaṃ durājanaṃ; sampamūl'h' ettha aviddasū.
40. Nivutānaṃ tamo hoti, andhakāro apassatāṃ; [763]
sataṃ ca vivaṭaṃ hoti, āloko passatāṃ iva;
santike na vijānanti magā Dhammass' akovidā.
41. Bhavarāgaparetehi bhavasotānusārihi [764]
Mārādheyyānupannehi nāyaṃ Dhammo susambudho.
42. Ko nu, aññatra-m-ariyehi, padaṃ sambuddhaṃ arahati, [765]
yaṃ padaṃ samma-d-aññāya parinibbanti anāsava ti?

Idaṃ avoca Bhagavā. Attamanā te bhikkhū Bhagavato bhāsitaṃ abhinandun. Imasmiṃ kho pana veyyākaraṇasmiṃ bhaññamāne satṭhimattānaṃ bhikkhūnaṃ anupādāya āsavehi cittāni vimuccimsu.

If you are asked whether there is yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that, first, what the world at large deems Weal has been rightly viewed as Ill by the Noble through their consummate comprehension, whilst, secondly, the Noble hail as Weal what the world accounts Ill. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas, and if his life is earnest, ardent, and purged of Self, then you may anticipate for him one or other of two results,—either Illumination here and now, or else—if his stuff of existence be not wholly spent—no subsequent return to earth.

Thus spake the Lord; and when he, the Blessed One, had thus spoken, he went on, as Master, to say:—

Forms, sounds, tastes, smell, touch, thoughts—please, charm, and [759]
cheer,
whilst deemed t' exist and have reality.

The world accounts them boons, them hails as Weal. [760]
But when they pass away, they 're ranked as Ills!

The Noble rank as Weal the utter rout [761]
of personality;—on this the Seer
joins issue with the purblind world at large.

The Noble count as 'Ill' the worldling's 'Weal'; [762]
the worldling's 'Ill' the Noble hail as 'Weal'.
—This puzzling thought perplexes empty pates.

Behind the veil is gloom; th' unseeing dwell [763]
in utter darkness. All is clear as day
to virtue's eye, but hid—though nigh at hand—
from brutish strangers to the Doctrine's truth.

This Truth eludes the ken of those who pine [764]
for life's continuance, who drift along
life's swirling stream in Māra's deadly grip.

Who, save the Noble, has a right to know [765]
how, Cankerless, men pass away—to Peace?

Thus spoke the Lord. Glad at heart, those Almsmen rejoiced in what the Lord had said. During this exposition, the hearts of some three score Almsmen were delivered from Cankers once for all.

End of the Long Book

IV. AṬṬHAKAVAGGA

1. KĀMASUTTA

1. Kāmaṃ kāmayaṃānassa tassa ce taṃ samijjhati, [766]
addhā pītimano hoti laddhā macco yad icchati.
2. Tassa ce kāmayaṃānassa chandajātassa jantuno [767]
te kāmā parihāyanti, sallaviddho va ruppati.
3. Yo kāme parivajjeti—sappassēva padā siro—, [768]
so imaṃ visattikaṃ loke sato samativattati.
4. Khettaṃ vatthuraṃ hiraṇṇaṃ vā gavāssaṃ dāsaporisaṃ [769]
thiyo bandhū puthū kāme yo naro anugijjhati,
5. abalā va naṃ baliyanti, maddante naṃ parissayā; [770]
tato naṃ dukkhaṃ anveti, nāvaṃ bhinnam ivôdakaṃ.
6. Tasmā jantu sadā sato kāmāni parivajjaye; [771]
te pahāya tare oghaṃ, nāvaṃ sitvā va, pārāgū ti.

2. GUHAṬṬHAKASUTTA

1. Satto guhāyaṃ bahunābhichanno [772]
tiṭṭhaṃ naro mohanasmiṃ pagāḷho
dūre vivekā hi tathāvidho so;
kāmā hi loke na hi suppahāyā.
2. Icchānidānā bhavasātabaddhā [773]
te duppamuñcā, na hi aññaṃ mokkhā,
pacchā pure vā pi apekkhamānā
ime va kāme purime va jappaṃ.
3. Kāmesu giddhā pasutā pamūḷhā [774]
avadāniyā te visame niviṭṭhā
dukkhūpanitā paridevayanti:—
Kiṃ su bhavissāma ito cutāse?

IV. THE BOOK OF OCTADS

Sutta 1. Desires

The man whose heart's desires are gratified [766]
is glad indeed to see success secured.

But, if his heart's desires and aims be foiled, [767]
he smarts as if a dart had wounded him.

Yet, should he shun desires as he would shun [768]
a snake's head underfoot, by vigilance
he overcomes the world's seductive lures.

Whoso with boundless appetite desires [769]
fields, lands, or gold, herds, horses, women, serfs,
and kinsfolk,—him tumultuous desires

(weak though they seem) o'ercome at last; they crush [770]
their victim. Hereon Ills come surging in,
like waves that flood some wrecked ship's crazy hold.

Therefore by watchfulness discard desires; [771]
expel them; bale your ship; and cross the Flood
to safety's haven on the Further Shore.

Sutta 2. The Octad of the Den

Cooped in a den of clay [772]
o'ergrown with growths and bogged
in crassness dense, a man
is far from inward peace.
For, hard indeed it is
to give up pleasures here.

The creatures of desire, [773]
mere slaves of mundane joys,
shall scarce be saved,—since none
by others can be saved,
who ask to live To-day
or Yesterday afresh.

Through pleasure's hot pursuit, [774]
its frenzied votaries
close-fisted grow and base,
till, plunged in Ills, they cry:—
'What shall we be, when dead?'

4. Tasmā hi sikkhetha idh' eva jantu: [775]
 yaṃ kiñci jaññā 'visamaṃ' ti loke
 na tassa hetu visamaṃ careyya;
 —appaṃ h' idaṃ jīvitam āhu dhīrā.
5. Passāmi loke pariphandamānaṃ [776]
 pajaṃ imaṃ taṇhagataṃ bhavesu;
 hīnā narā maccumukhe lapanti
 avītataphāse bhavābhavesu.
6. Mamāyite passatha phandamāne, [777]
 macche va appodake khīṇasote;
 etam pi disvā amamo careyya
 bhavesu āsattim akubbamāno.
7. Ubhosu antesu vineyya chandaṃ, [778]
 phassaṃ pariññāya anānugiddho,
 yad attagarahī tad akubbamāno
 na lippatī diṭṭhasutesu dhīro.
8. Saññaṃ pariññā vitareyya oghaṃ [779]
 pariggaheṣu muni nōpalitto
 abbūḥhasallo caraṃ appamatto
 nāsimsatī lokam imaṃ paraṃ ca.

3. DUṬṬHAṬṬHAKASUTTA

1. Vadanti ve duṭṭhamaṇā pi eke, [780]
 aññe pi ve saccamaṇā vadanti;
 vādaṃ ca jātaṃ muni no upeti,
 tasmā muni na 'tthi khilo kuhiñci.
2. Sakaṃ hi diṭṭhiṃ katham accayeyya [781]
 chandānuniṭo ruciya niviṭṭho
 sayam samattāni pakubbamāno?
 —Yathā hi jāneyya, tathā vadeyya.

So learn betimes, learn here
and now. Let nothing base
tempt thee to baseness here.
—This life is brief, say seers.

[775]

I see distracted folk
agog for lives to come,
—abjects who howl in face
of death, through lust to live.

[776]

Parting from cherished things
others distracts,—like fish
stranded when streams give out.
Mark this and self-less walk,
nor pine for lives to come.

[777]

When feelings tempt no more
—at start or close—because
all taste for them is dead,
—then, doing nothing which
his heart condemns, the sage
is proof 'gainst things of sense.

[778]

Aware of senses' scope,
and safe across the Flood,
unstained by hankerings,
the sage—his barb plucked out—
strides bravely on, nor craves
life here, or anywhere.

[779]

Sutta 3. The Octad of Malice

From spite, or honestly,
are charges spread abroad;
but, as all fail to hit
the sage, his heart is light.

[780]

When inclination prompts
and self-will reigns, shall men
desert their cherished views?
—Their outlook shapes their speech.

[781]

3. Yo attano sīlavatāni jantu
anānuputṭho ca paresa' pāvā,
'anariyadhammaṃ' kusalā tam āhu
yo ātumānaṃ sayam eva pāvā. [782]
4. Santo ca bhikkhu abhinibbutatto,
'iti 'han' ti sīlesu akatthamāno,
tam 'ariyadhammaṃ' kusalā vadanti,
yass' ussādā na 'tthi kuhiñci loke. [783]
5. Pakappitā saṃkhatā yassa dhammā
purakkhatā santi avivādātā;
yad attani passati ānisaṃsaṃ,
tan nissito kuppa-paṭicca-santiṃ. [784]
6. Diṭṭhīnivesā na hi svātivattā,
dhammesu niccheyya samuggahītāṃ.
Tasmā naro tesu nivesanesu
nirassati ādiyati-cca dhammaṃ. [785]
7. Dhonassa hi na 'tthi kuhiñci loke
pakappitā diṭṭhi bhavābhavesu;
māyaṇi ca māṇaṇi ca pahāya dhono
sa kena gaccheyya?—Anūpayo so. [786]
8. Upayo hi dhammesu upeti vādaṃ;
anūpayam kena katham vadeyya?
Attam nirattam na hi tassa atthi;
—adhosi so diṭṭhim idh' eva sabbam. [787]

4. SUDDHAṬṬHAKASUTTA

1. 'Passāmi suddham paramaṃ arogaṃ;
diṭṭhena saṃsuddhi narassa hoti'
—evābhijānaṃ 'paraman' ti ñatvā,
suddhānupassīti pacceti ñāṇaṃ. [788]

The man who sings, unasked,
his virtue's praise, is styled
'ignoble' by adepts
for talking of himself.

[782]

The Almsman true, at peace,
not vaunting virtues rare,
adepts as 'noble' hail,
because he's not puffed up.

[783]

When wrong conceptions fill
the mind with prejudice,
the man who looks to find
a blessing there, builds hopes
of Peace on shifting sands.

[784]

As rooted prejudice
is hard to quell, a man
should test ideas he holds,
discarding freely, till
he holds the Doctrine's truth.

[785]

The inly-washen saint,
now freed from fancies fond
of life hereafter, stripped
of pride and error,—how
place him? He stands apart!

[786]

Their mental states define
men with propensities.
But how define the man
with none?—who nought asserts
and naught denies, but waves
all theories aside?

[787]

Sutta 4. The Octad of Purity

'Lo! man pure, perfect, hale,
made pure by views he holds!'
—Convinced 'perfection's found'
through such imaginings,
'experts in purity'
expect to come to *know*!

[788]

2. Diṭṭhena ce suddhi narassa hoti,
ñāṇena vā so pajahāti dukkhaṃ,
aññena so sujjhati sôpadhiko;
—diṭṭhī hi naṃ pāva tathā vadānaṃ. [789]
3. Na Brāhmaṇo aññato suddhim āha,
—diṭṭhe sute silavate mute vā;
puññe ca pāpe ca anūpalitto
attañjaho na-y-idha pakubbamāno. [790]
4. Purimaṃ pahāya aparaṃ sitāse
ejānugā te na taranti sangaṃ;
te uggaḥāyanti nirassajanti
kapīva sākhaṃ pamukhaṃ gahāya. [791]
5. Sayam samādāya vatāni jantu
uccāvacaṃ gacchati saññasatto;
vidvā ca vedehi samecca Dhammaṃ
na uccāvacaṃ gacchati bhūripaṇño. [792]
6. Sa sabbadhammesu visenibhūto,
yaṃ kiñci diṭṭhaṃ va sutam mutam vā,
tam eva' dassim vivaṭaṃ carantaṃ,—
kenīdha lokasmiṃ vikappayeyya? [793]
7. Na kappayanti, na purekkharonti,
'accantasuddhīti' na te vadanti;
āḍānaganthaṃ gathitaṃ visajja
āsaṃ na kubbanti kuhiñci loke. [794]
8. Sīmātigo Brāhmaṇo; tassa na 'tthi
ñatvā ca disvā ca samuggahitaṃ;
na rāgarāgī, na virāgaratto;
tassīdaṃ na 'tthi param uggaḥitaṃ. [795]

If dogma makes men pure,
or if such lore ends Ill,
then something not the Path
makes pure an earthy man
whose views give him the lie.

[789]

'The Path—not things of sense—
alone brings purity,'
our self-less 'Brahmin' says,
by 'merit's' quest unsmirched,
aloof from mundane ends.

[790]

Chopping and changing fails
to calm distracted folk,
—who now hold fast to this,
and now to that, like apes
that skip from bough to bough.

[791]

Self-prompted, slaves of Sense
pursue austerities.
Not so the wise, who *know*,
who grasp the Doctrine's truth.

[792]

When once man's thought transcends
what sense-impressions bring,
when, thus inspired, he goes
his clear-eyed way,—what lure
can now unsettle him?

[793]

No idols these set up,
no 'final purity'
do they affirm, who burst
the chains of hankering
and yearn for nothing more.

[794]

Sinless, the Brahmin true,
through ken and vision, grasps
at nothing; passion-free,
he does not plume himself
on being passionless.
No more has he to learn.

[795]

5. PARAMATTHAKASUTTA

1. 'Paraman' ti diṭṭhīsu paribbasāno [796]
yad uttarimkurute jantu loke,
'hīnā' ti aññe tato sabba-m-āha.
Tasmā vivādāni avitivatto.
2. Yad attanī passati ānisaṃsaṃ [797]
diṭṭhe sute silavate mute vā,
tad eva so tattha samuggahāya
nihīnato passati sabbam aññaṃ.
3. Taṃ vāpi 'ganthaṃ' kusalā vadanti [798]
yaṃ nissito passati: Hīnam aññaṃ.
Tasmā hi diṭṭhaṃ va sutam mutam vā
silabbataṃ bhikkhu na nissayeyya.
4. Diṭṭhim pi lokasmiṃ na kappayeyya [799]
ñāṇena vā silavatena vā pi;
'samo' ti attānaṃ anūpaneyya,
'hīno' na maññetha 'visesi' vā pi.
5. Attaṃ pahāya anupādiyāno [800]
ñāṇe pi so nissayaṃ no karoti;
sa ve viyattesu na vaggasāri,
diṭṭhim pi so na pacceti kiñci.
6. Yassūbhayante paṇidhīdha na 'tthi [801]
bhavābhavāya idha vā huram vā,
nivesanā tassa na santi keci,
dhammesu niccheyya samuggahitaṃ;
7. tassīdha diṭṭhe va sute mute vā [802]
pakappitā na 'tthi apū pi saññā;
—taṃ Brāhmaṇaṃ diṭṭhim anādiyānaṃ
kenīdha lokasmiṃ vikappayeyya?
8. Na kappayanti na purekkharonti; [803]
dhammā pi tesam na paṭicchitāse;
na Brāhmaṇo silavatena neyyo;
pāraṃgato na pacceti tādi.

6. JARĀSUTTA

1. Appaṃ vata jīvitam idaṃ; [804]
oraṃ vassasatā pi miyyati;
yo ce pi aticca jīvati,
atha kho so jarasā pi miyyati.

Sutta 5. The Octad of Perfection

The partisan who hugs
the creed he fancies most,
brands rival creeds as 'stuff'.
And so strife dogs his days. [796]

Whatever good he finds
in works or things of sense,
on that he fastens, set
on scouting all things else. [797]

Adepts dismiss as 'clogs'
his claims and arrogance. [798]
So, Almsman, do not build
on works and things of sense;

nor rear on lore or works
a speculative view; [799]
nor claim to be 'as good'
or 'worse' or 'better far'.

Unprejudiced and free, [800]
not based on learning's stores,
owning no sect or school,
holding no theories;

when pray'rs for future life
—on earth, or elsewhere—cease, [801]
when scrutiny of 'creeds'
no dogmas leaves behind;

when things of sense all fail
to wake a conscious thought, [802]
—how place this Brahmin true,
who holds no theories?

Such frame, approve, adopt [803]
no theories at all.

Works prove no 'Brahmin true',
who—saved—returns no more.

Sutta 6. Vita Brevis

Man's years are few, [804]
less than a hundred;
should he drag on,
th' end still is certain.

2. Socanti janā mamāyite; [805]
na hi santi niccā pariggahā;
vinābhāvasantam ev' idam;
iti disvā nāgāram āvase.
3. Maraṇena pi taṃ pahīyati [806]
yaṃ puriso: Mama-y-idan ti maññati.
Evam pi viditvā paṇḍito
na mamattāya nametha māmako.
4. Supinena yathā pi sangataṃ [807]
paṭibuddho puriso na passati,
evam pi piyāyitaṃ janam
petam kālakataṃ na passati.
5. Diṭṭhā pi sutā pi te janā [808]
yesaṃ nāmam idaṃ pavuccati;
nāmam evāvasissati
akkheyyaṃ petassa jantuno.
6. Sokaparidevamaccharaṃ [809]
na jahanti giddhā mamāyite;
tasmā munayo, pariggahaṃ
hitvā, acarimsu khemadassino.
7. Patilīnacarassa bhikkhuno [810]
bhajamānassa vivittam āsanaṃ
sāmaggiyam āhu tassa taṃ,
yo attānaṃ bhavane na dassaye.
8. Sabbattha muni anissito [811]
na piyaṃ kubbatī, no pi appiyaṃ;
tasmiṃ paridevamaccharaṃ,
paṇṇe vāri yathā, na lippati.
9. Udabindu yathā pi pokkhare [812]
padume vāri yathā na lippati,
evaṃ muni nōpalippati
yadidaṃ diṭṭhasutaṃmutesu vā.
10. Dhono na hi tena maññati [813]
yadidaṃ diṭṭhasutaṃmutesu vā,
nāññena visuddhim icchati;
na hi so rajjati no virajjati.

Owning is grief;
belongings last not
but pass away.
Quit house and home then!

[805]

Death takes what men
deem their possessions.
Disciple mine,
lay claim to nothing.

[806]

As, when we wake,
dream faces vanish,
so pass from view
ghosts of man's dear ones.

[807]

We see and hear
friends, by their names known;
but, when they pass,
only their names stay.

[808]

Grief, grudging, wails
dog th' itch for owning,
sages find Peace
by owning nothing.

[809]

To live aloof
in contemplation,
befits the leal
whose journeys are done.

[810]

Detached, the sage
keeps down affections;
—grief, grudging, wails,
like raindrops, are shed.

[811]

Just as no splash
sullies the lotus,
so senses leave
sages unsullied;

[812]

Cleans'd, they build hopes
neither on senses
nor aught besides;
they're past all passion.

[813]

7. TISSAMETTEYYASUTTA

1. Methunam anuyuttassa vighātaṃ brūhi, mārisa; [814]
(icc-āyasmā Tisso Metteyyo)
sutvāna tava sāsanaṃ viveke sikkhisāmase.
2. Methunam anuyuttassa mussat' evāpi sāsanaṃ, [815]
(Metteyyāti Bhagavā)
micchā ca paṭipajjati;—etaṃ tasmim anāriyaṃ.
3. Eko pubbe caritvāna methunaṃ yo nisevati, [816]
yānaṃ bhantaṃ va, taṃ loke 'hīnaṃ' āhu 'puthujjanaṃ'.
4. Yaso kitti ca yā pubbe hāyat' evāpi tassa sā; [817]
etaṃ pi disvā sikkhetha methunaṃ vipphāṭave.
5. Saṃkappehi pareto so kapaṇo viya jhāyati; [818]
sutvā paresaṃ nigghosaṃ manku hoti tathāvidho.
6. Atha satthāni kurute paravādehi codito; [819]
esa khvassa mahāgedho, mosavajjaṃ pagāhati.
7. Paṇḍito ti samaññāto ekacariyaṃ adhiṭṭhito, [820]
athāpi methune yutto mando va parikkissati.
8. Etaṃ ādinavaṃ fiatvā muni pubbāpare idha [821]
ekacariyaṃ dāhaṃ kayirā, na nisevetha methunaṃ.
9. Vivekaṃ yeva sikkhetha; etad ariyānaṃ uttamaṃ; [822]
tena seṭṭho na maññetha; sa ve nibbānasantike.
10. Rittassa munino carato kāmesu anapekhino [823]
oghaṭṭhassa pihayanti kāmesu gadhitā pajā ti.

8. PASŪRASUTTA

1. 'Idh' eva suद्धim' iti vādiyanti, [824]
nāññesu dhammesu visuddhim āhu;
yaṃ nissitā, tattha subhā vadānā
paccekasaccesu puthū niviṭṭhā.

Sutta 7. Lechery

Tissa Metteyya: Tell us what harm befalls a lecher, sir,
that we, thus schooled by thee, in privacy
may put in practice what thou shalt enjoin. [814]

The Lord: In wickedness, outside my Doctrine's pale,
the lecher lives a base, ignoble life. [815]

'Low, headlong renegade!' is what they call
an anchorite who stoops to lechery. [816]

His old repute is gone; his fame departs. [817]
Be warned; with all your might shun lechery!

Lewd thoughts engross his abject 'reveries', [818]
—whom others' censure leaves morose and glum,

until, to arm his wrath when thus reproached, [819]
(his itch is such!) to lying he resorts.

Reputed wise—whilst upright anchorite— [820]
he's scouted as a dolt for lechery.

These perils known, a sage should straitly walk [821]
alone, aloof, eschewing lechery.

Live then aloof (no nobler life exists!) [822]
yet not puffed up.—Nirvāna's well-nigh won!

Emancipate, from passion freed, the sage [823]
in safety stands upon the Further Shore,
—envied by all whom passion's bonds enslave.

Sutta 8. Warring Sects

Each claims that Purity [824]
abides with him alone,
—but not in rival creeds;
and, though no two agree,
each vaunts his nostrum sound.

2. Te vādakāmā parisarṇ vigayha [825]
 bālaṃ dahanti mithu aññaṃaññaṃ;
 vadanti te aññasitā kathojjaṃ
 pasamsakāmā kusalā vadānā.
3. Yutto kathāyaṃ parisāya majjhe [826]
 pasamsam icchaṃ vinighāti hoti;
 apāhata-smiṃ pana manku hoti,
 nindāya so kuppati randhamesī.
4. Yam assa vādaṃ 'parihīnam' āhu [827]
 apāhataṃ pañhavimamsakāse,
 paridevati socati hīnavādo;
 'upaccagā man' ti anutthunāti.
5. Ete.vivādā 'samaṇesu' jātā; [828]
 etesu ugghātinighāti hoti;
 etam pi disvā virame kathojjaṃ;
 na h' aññadatth' atthi pasamsalābhā.
6. Pasamsito vā pana tattha hoti [829]
 akkhāya vādaṃ parisāya majjhe,
 so hassati upṇamati-cca tena
 pappuyya tam atthaṃ yathā mano ahu.
7. Yā upṇati sā 'ssa vighātabhūmi, [830]
 mānātimānaṃ vadate pan' eso;
 etam pi disvā na vivādayetha,
 na hi tena suddhiṃ kusalā vadanti.
8. Sūro yathā rājakhadāya puṭṭho [831]
 abhigajjam eti paṭisūram icchaṃ,
 yen' eva so, tena palehi, sūra;
 pubb' eva na 'tthi yadidaṃ yudhāya.
9. Ye diṭṭhim ugghayha vivādiyanti, [832]
 idam eva saccaṃ ti ca vādiyanti,
 te tvam vadassu : Na hi te 'dha atthi
 vādamhi jāte paṭisenikattā.
10. Visenikatvā pana ye caranti [833]
 diṭṭhihi diṭṭhim avirujjhamānā,
 tesu tvaṃ kiṃ labhetho, Pasūra,
 yesīdha na 'tthi param ugghātaṃ?

Hot for debate, they meet;
each dubs the other 'fool';
with party arguments
these 'experts' wrangle on,
posing for public praise.

[825]

Eager to win the day,
debaters dread defeat,
sit glum when posers come,
and writhe in shame when floored.

[826]

And if the judges find
against him and he fails,
in anguish and with tears
he sobs: 'He 's beaten me!'

[827]

Let outside anchorites
wage suchlike wordy wars,
to win or lose the day!
—Shun strife; scorn empty praise.

[828]

But should he win the day,
and praise be his, loud rings
his laugh; he swells with pride
to gain the prize he sought.

[829]

His triumph lays him low;
since pride now fills his talk.
—Learn then to shun debate;
not thence comes Purity.

[830]

As with defiant shout
the king's trained champion
goes forth to find his match,
so seek thy foe,—though thou
hast nothing left to quell!

[831]

But as for partisans
who deem truth theirs alone,
tell them, if wrangling starts,
you enter not their lists.

[832]

To Pasūra, With saints whose fight is won,
a Wanderer: who pit no theory
against your theories,
—how can you cope with minds
withdrawn from earthly things?

[833]

11. Atha tvaṃ pavitakkam āgamā
 manasā diṭṭhigatāni cintayanto,
 dhonena yugaṃ samāgamā,
 na hi tvaṃ sakkhasi sampayātave. [834]

9. MĀGANDIYASUTTA

1. Disvāna Tanhaṃ Aratīṃ ca Rāgaṃ
 nāhosi chando api methunasmiṃ.
 Kim ev' idaṃ muttakarīsapuṇṇaṃ?
 Pādā pi naṃ samphusituṃ na icche. [835]
2. Etādisaṃ ce ratanaṃ na icchasi
 —nāriṃ narindehi bahūhi patthitaṃ—,
 diṭṭhigataṃ silavatānujivitaṃ
 bhavūpapattiṃ ca vadesi kidisaṃ? [836]
3. Idaṃ vadāmīti na tassa hoti (Māgandiyāti Bhagavā) [837]
 dhammesu niccheyya samuggahitaṃ,
 passaṃ ca diṭṭhīsu anuggahāya
 ajjhattasantīṃ pacinaṃ adassaṃ.
4. Vinicchayā yāni pakappitāni (iti Māgandiyō) [838]
 te ve, muni, brūsi anuggahāya,
 'ajjhattasantīti' yam etaṃ atthaṃ
 kathaṃ nu dhīrehi paveditaṃ taṃ?
5. Na diṭṭhiyā na sutiyaṃ na ñāṇena (Māgandiyāti Bhagavā) [839]
 sīlabbatenāpi na suddhim āha,
 adiṭṭhiyā assutiyaṃ aññāṇā
 asīlatā abbatā no pi tena;
 ete ca nissajja anuggahāya
 santo anissāya bhavaṃ na jappe.
6. No ce kira diṭṭhiyā na sutiyaṃ na ñāṇena (iti Māgandiyō) [840]
 sīlabbatenāpi visuddhim āha,
 adiṭṭhiyā assutiyaṃ aññāṇā
 asīlatā abbatā no pi tena;
 —maññāmaṃ ahaṃ momuham eva dhammaṃ.
 Diṭṭhiyā eke paccenti suddhim.

Inspired by theories,
you came to controvert;
you sought to match the Cleansed,
but cannot compass it!

[834]

Sutta 9. Beauty Scorned

The Lord: If Māra's daughters three
could wake no carnal thought,
—what bag of excrements
is this?—I would not touch
her even with my foot!

[835]

Māgandiya: If you refuse this pearl
(a maid whom princes court),
declare your creed and rule,
your practices and life;
declare what stage you 've reached.

[836]

The Lord: I preach no dogmas drawn
from all the divers 'views'.
Study rejected these,
and Thought found Inward Peace.

[837]

Māgandiya: Scouting concocted views,
you speak of Inward Peace.
How would that form of Weal
by experts be described?

[838]

The Lord: Not 'views' or hearsay, lore
or works, give Purity;
—nor does the lack of them.
Discard all this; win calm;
be free; crave no rebirth.

[839]

Māgandiya: If you say Purity
proceeds from none of these,
nor from the lack of them,
'tis nonsense what you say.
—From 'views' some men get Light.

[840]

11. Atha tvaṃ pavitakkam āgamā
manasā diṭṭhigatāni cintayanto,
dhonena yugam samāgamā,
na hi tvaṃ sakkhasi sampayātave. [834]

9. MĀGANDIYASUTTA

1. Disvāna Taṇhaṃ Aratiṃ ca Rāgaṃ
nāhosi chando api methunasmiṃ.
Kim ev' idaṃ muttakarīsapuṇaṃ?
Pādā pi naṃ samphusituṃ na icche. [835]
2. Etādisaṃ ce ratanaṃ na icchasi
—nāriṃ narindehi bahūhi patthitaṃ—,
diṭṭhigataṃ sīlavatānujīvaṃ
bhavūpapattiṃ ca vadesi kīdisaṃ? [836]
3. Idaṃ vadāmīti na tassa hoti (*Māgandiyāti Bhagavā*) [837]
dhammesu niccheyya samuggahitaṃ,
passaṃ ca diṭṭhisu anuggahāya
ajjhattasantīṃ pacinaṃ adassaṃ.
4. Vinicchayā yāni pakappitāni (*iti Māgandīyo*) [838]
te ve, muni, brūsi anuggahāya,
'ajjhattasantīti' yam etam atthaṃ
kathaṃ nu dhīrehi paveditaṃ taṃ?
5. Na diṭṭhiyā na sutiyaṃ na ñāṇena (*Māgandiyāti Bhagavā*) [839]
sīlabbatenāpi na suddhim āha,
adiṭṭhiyā assutiyaṃ aññāṇā
asīlatā abbatā no pi tena;
ete ca nissajja anuggahāya
santo anissāya bhavaṃ na jappe.
6. No ce kira diṭṭhiyā na sutiyaṃ na ñāṇena (*iti Māgandīyo*) [840]
sīlabbatenāpi visuddhim āha,
adiṭṭhiyā assutiyaṃ aññāṇā
asīlatā abbatā no pi tena;
—maññāmaṃ' ahaṃ momuham eva dhammaṃ.
Diṭṭhiyā eke paccenti suddhiṃ.

Inspired by theories,
you came to controvert;
you sought to match the Cleansed,
but cannot compass it!

[834]

Sutta 9. Beauty Scorned

The Lord: If Māra's daughters three
could wake no carnal thought,
—what bag of excrements
is this?—I would not touch
her even with my foot!

[835]

Māgandiya: If you refuse this pearl
(a maid whom princes court),
declare your creed and rule,
your practices and life;
declare what stage you've reached.

[836]

The Lord: I preach no dogmas drawn
from all the divers 'views'.
Study rejected these,
and Thought found Inward Peace.

[837]

Māgandiya: Scouting concocted views,
you speak of Inward Peace.
How would that form of Weal
by experts be described?

[838]

The Lord: Not 'views' or hearsay, lore
or works, give Purity;
—nor does the lack of them.
Discard all this; win calm;
be free; crave no rebirth.

[839]

Māgandiya: If you say Purity
proceeds from none of these,
nor from the lack of them,
'tis nonsense what you say.
—From 'views' some men get Light.

[840]

7. Diṭṭhīsu nissāya anupucchamāno, (*Māgandiyāti Bhagavā*) [841]
 samuggahītesu pamoham āgā;
 ito ca nādakkhī aṇum pi saññāma;
 tasmā tuvaṃ momuhato dahāsi.
8. 'Samo visesī uda vā nihīno' [842]
 yo maññāti, so vivadetha tena;
 tīsu vidhāsu avikampamāno—
 'samo, visesīti' na tassa hoti.
9. 'Saccan' ti so Brāhmaṇo kiṃ vadeyya? [843]
 'Musā ti' vā so vivadetha kena?
 Yasmiṃ samaṃ visamaṃ cāpi na 'tthi,
 sa kena vādaṃ paṭisaṃyujeyya?
10. Okam pahāya aniketāsārī, [844]
 gāme akubbaṃ muni santhavāni,
 kāmehi ritto, apurakkharāno,
 kathaṃ na viggayha janena kayirā.
11. Yehi vivitto vicareyya loke, [845]
 na tāni uggayha vadeyya Nāgo.
 Elambujāṃ kaṇṭakavārijaṃ yathā
 jalena pankena c' anūpalittaṃ,
 evaṃ muni santivado agiddho
 kāme ca loke ca anūpalitto.
12. Na vedagū diṭṭhiyā na mutiyā [846]
 sa mānam eti, na hi tammayo so;
 na kammunā no pi sutena neyyo;
 anūpanīto so nivesanesu.
13. Saññāvirattassa na santi ganthā; [847]
 paññāvimuttassa na santi mohā;
 saññā ca diṭṭhi ca ye aggahesuṃ
 te ghaṭṭayantā vicaranti loke.

10. PURĀBHEDASUTTA

1. Kathaṃdassī kathaṃsīlo 'upasanto' ti vuccati? [848]
 Tam me, Gotama, pabrūhi pucchito uttamaṃ naraṃ.

The Lord: Pet views your questions prompt.

[841]

By prejudice misled,
you so mistake my point
that nonsense it appears.

'He's my inferior',
'my better' or 'as good',
—such thoughts breed strife. No strife
is his who knows no grades.

[842]

When this is meaningless,
how can a Brahmin true
dub this thing 'true', that 'false'?
or start a wordy war?

[843]

The homeless wanderer,
who makes no intimates
and scorns delights and grades,
steers clear of bickerings.

[844]

Nor will the sage profess
that which his life disowns.
As mud and water leave
unsoiled their denizen,
the lotus,—so the world
and pleasures cannot soil
the want-less sage's Peace.

[845]

No 'views', no things of sense,
inflate a sage with pride;
—'tis not his nature. Works
and lore are not his guides;
no errors cabin him.

[846]

When sense-impressions cease,
chains snap. Illusions pass
when comprehension brings
Release. But those who cling
to 'views' and things of sense,
spread discord all around.

[847]

Sutta 10. Ere Dissolution Comes

An Enquirer: What insight and what conduct make 'a saint'?
Pray, Gotama, portray the perfect man.

[848]

2. Vītataṇho purā bheda, pubbam antam anissito [849]
 (ti Bhagavā)
 vemajjhe n' upasamkheyyo, tassa na 'tthi purakkhataṃ;
3. akkodhano asantāsī avikatthī akukkuco [850]
 mantābhānī anuddhato,—sa ve vācāyato munī;
4. nirāsatti anāgate atitaṃ nānusocati, [851]
 vivekadassī phassesu diṭṭhīsu ca na niyyati,
5. patilīno akuhako apihālu amaccharī [852]
 appagabbho ajeguccho pesuṇeyye ca no yuto,
6. sātiyesu anassāvī atimāne ca no yuto [853]
 saṇho ca paṭibhāṇavā na saddho, na virajjati,
7. lābhakamyā na sikkhati, alābhe ca na kuppati, [854]
 aviruddho ca taṇhāya rase ca nānugijjhati;
8. upekkhako sadā sato na loke maññati samam, [855]
 na visesī na nīceyyo,—tassa no santi ussādā;
9. yassa nissayatā na 'tthi, ñatvā Dhammaṃ anissito, [856]
 bhavāya vibhavāya ca taṇhā yassa na vijjati,
10. —taṃ brūmi 'upasanto' ti kāmesu anapekkhinaṃ; [857]
 ganthā tassa na vijjanti; atāri so visattikaṃ.
11. Na tassa puttā pasavo khettaṃ vatthuṃ ca vijjati [858]
 attarṃ vā pi nirattaṃ vā na tasmīṃ upalabbhati.
12. Yena vajjuṃ puthujjanā atho samaṇabrāhmaṇā, [859]
 taṃ tassa apurakkhataṃ, tasmā vādesu n' ejati.
13. Vītagedho amaccharī na ussesu vadate muni [860]
 na samesu na omesu, kapparṃ n' eti akappiyo.
14. Yassa loke sakaṃ na 'tthi, asatā ca na socati, [861]
 dhammesu ca na gacchati, sa ve 'santo' ti vuccati.

11. KALAHAVIVĀDASUTTA

1. Kuto pahūtā kalahā vivādā [862]
 paridevasokā sahamaccharā ca
 mānātimānā sahapesuṇā ca?
 Kuto pahūtā te? Tad ingha brūhi.

The Lord: Ere dissolution comes, all cravings cease; [849]
 he recks not how of old the world began;
 he finds no present place in time to-day;
 he has no preference for which he sighs;
 devoid of wrath and dread, remorse and vaunts, [850]
 a preacher sane, a 'saint' controls his words;
 no future hopes has he, no past regrets; [851]
 no sense-impressions mar his inward life;
 aloof and guileless, freed from hankerings [852]
 and envy, meek, he scorns and slanders none;
 no joys allure him; pride is far away; [853]
 courtly, he shines; detached, not credulous;
 at gifts he aims not,—nor resents their lack; [854]
 he nothing craves; no dainty fare allures;
 poised, vigilant, he never ranks himself [855]
 as 'high', or 'low', or 'equal to the best';
 since self-assertion finds no place in 'saints';
 an independent man, whom grasp of Truth [856]
 makes independent, who gives harbourage
 to no desire to be or not to be;
 —him do I style the 'Saint at peace'; no chains [857]
 are his; he's safe beyond entanglements.
 No sons has he, no herds or fields or lands; [858]
 no 'yes' or 'no' has he for views on 'Self'.
 Ignoring what the world (nay, holy men!) [859]
 impute to them, 'saints' reckon not what folk say.
 Grasping not, grudging not, the saint, unmoved, [860]
 to 'high', or 'low', or 'equal' lays no claim;
 timeless, he whirls down grooves of time no more.
 Whoso owns nothing in the world, nor grieves [861]
 o'er what is transient, nor wanders off
 to sense-impressions,—*he* is hailed as 'saint'.

Sutta 11. Contentions

An Enquirer: Whence springs the seething mass [862]
 of bickerings and strife,
 tears, grief, and selfishness,
 conceit, pride, calumny?
 Explain whence these proceed.

2. Piṇḍapahūtā kalahā vivādā [863]
 paridevasokā sahamaccharā ca
 mānātimānā sahapesuṇā ca;
 maccherayuttā kalahā vivādā,
 vivādajātesu ca pesuṇāni.

3. Piṇḍa su lokasmiṃ kutonidānā, [864]
 ye vā pi lobhā vicaranti loke?
 Āsā ca niṭṭhā ca kutonidānā
 ye samparāyāya narassa honti?

4. Chandānidānāni piṇḍāni loke [865]
 ye vā pi lobhā vicaranti loke;
 āsā ca niṭṭhā ca itonidānā
 ye samparāyāya narassa honti.

5. Chando nu lokasmiṃ kutonidāno? [866]
 Vinicchayā vā pi kuto pahūtā,
 kodho mosavajjaṇi ca kathamkathā ca
 ye vā pi dhammā Samaṇena vuttā?

6. Sātamaṃ, asātaṃ ti yam āhu loke, [867]
 tam upanissāya pahoti chando;
 rūpesu disvā vibhavaṃ bhavaṃ ca
 vinicchayaṃ kūrute jantu loke.

7. Kodho mosavajjaṇi ca kathamkathā ca [868]
 ete pi dhammā dvaya-m-eva sante;
 kathamkathā nānapathāya sikkhe,
 nītvā pavuttā Samaṇena dhammā.

8. Sātamaṃ asātaṃ ca kutonidānā? [869]
 Kismim asante na bhavanti h' ete?
 Vibhavaṃ bhavaṃ cāpi, yam etam atthamaṃ,
 etam me pabrūhi yattonidānānaṃ.

9. Phassanidānaṃ sātamaṃ asātamaṃ; [870]
 phasse asante na bhavanti h' ete,
 vibhavaṃ bhavaṃ cāpi, yam etam atthamaṃ,
 etaṃ te pabrūmi itonidānaṃ.

The Lord: Affections breed the mass
 of bickerings and strife,
 tears, grief, and selfishness,
 conceit, pride, calumny.
 With selfishness there come
 all bickerings and strife,
 —which lead to calumny. [863]

The Enquirer: Say whence affections spring?
 What makes ambitions grow?
 What fosters hopes and fears
 in man for future life? [864]

The Lord: Affections spring from wants,
 which make ambitions grow
 and foster hopes and fears
 in men for future life. [865]

The Enquirer: Whence spring man's wants? Whence come
 all hard and fast beliefs?
 Whence wrath, lies, doubts, and all
 things else th' Recluse denounced? [866]

The Lord: Things viewed as 'good' or 'bad'
 originate man's wants.
 Seeing things wax and wane
 brought hard and fast beliefs. [867]

Wrath, doubts, and lies arose
 when things seemed 'good' or 'bad'.
 Let doubters plant their feet
 where knowledge guides;—th' Recluse
 denounced defects he knew. [868]

The Enquirer: Whence spring things 'good' or 'bad'?
 What, being absent, checks
 their rise? And tell me too
 why things must wax and wane? [869]

The Lord: Things 'good' or 'bad' are bred
 of Contact. Contact must
 be there, or they're not bred,
 nor would things wax and wane. [870]

10. Phasso nu lokasmim kutonidāno? [871]
 Pariggahā vā pi kuto pahūtā?
 Kismim asante na mamattam atthi?
 Kismim vibhūte na phusanti phassā?
11. Nāmañ ca rūpañ ca paṭicca phasso; [872]
 icchānidānāni pariggahāni;
 icchāy' asantiyā na mamattam atthi;
 rūpe vibhūte na phusanti phassā.
12. Kathamsametassa vibhoti rūpañ? [873]
 Sukhañ dukkhañ vā pi kathañ vibhoti?
 Etam me pabrūhi yathā vibhoti;
 tañ jāniyāma, iti me mano ahu.
13. Na saññasaññī, na visaññasaññī, [874]
 no pi asaññī, na vibhūtasaññī,
 —evamsametassa vibhoti rūpañ;
 saññānidānā hi papañcasamkhā.
14. Yan tam apucchimha akittayī no; [875]
 —aññañ tañ pucchāma; tad ingha brūhi:—
 Ettāvat' aggañ nu vadanti h' eke
 yakkhassa suddhim idha paṇḍitāse?
 Udāhu aññañ pi vadanti etto?
15. Ettāvat' aggañ pi vadanti h' eke [876]
 yakkhassa suddhim idha paṇḍitāse;
 tesam pun' eke samayañ vadanti
 anupādisese kusalā vadānā.
16. Ete ca ñatvā 'upanissitā' ti, [877]
 ñatvā munī nissaye so vimaṃsī,
 ñatvā vimutto na vivādam eti,
 bhavābhavāya na sameti dhīro.

The Enquirer: From what does Contact spring?
Whence comes the itch to own?
What, being absent, checks
the craze to deem things 'mine'?
And what must disappear
if Contacts are to end?

[871]

The Lord: Matter and Mind result
in Contact. Yearnings breed
the itch to have and hold;
without them is no 'mine'.—
End 'matter',— Contacts end.

[872]

The Enquirer: What stage is his for whom
'matter' has disappeared?
Fain would I hear how pain
and pleasure disappear.

[873]

The Lord: Matter will disappear
when consciousness (from which
obsessions all arise)
is neither usual,
nor crazed, nor numbed, nor lost.

[874]

The Enquirer: Though thou hast answer'd all
we asked, one question more
we raise for thy reply:—
Do thinkers hold this life
perfects man's Purity?
Or is there more to come?

[875]

The Lord: Some thinkers hold this life
perfects man's Purity;
but other 'experts' hold
the view that death ends all.

[876]

The sage knows such as 'thralls';
he knows their thralldom. Freed
by knowledge, he avoids
debate and wisely holds
no truck with theories
about an 'after-life'.

[877]

12. CŪLAVIYŪHASUTTA

1. Sakarṃ sakarṃ dīṭṭhiparibbasānā [878]
viggayha nānā kusalā vadanti:—
Yo evaṃ jānāti, sa vedi dhammaṃ;
idaṃ paṭikkosaṃ akevalī so.
2. Evam pi viggayha vivādiyanti, [879]
'bālo paro akusalo' ti cāhu.
Sacco nu vādo katamo imesaṃ?
Sabb' eva hīme kusalā vadānā.
3. Parassa ce dhammaṃ anānujānaṃ [880]
bālōmako hoti nihīnapañño,
sabb' eva bālā sunihīnapaññā,
sabb' ev' ime dīṭṭhiparibbasānā.
4. Sandīṭṭhiyā ce pana vivadātā [881]
saṃsuddhapaññā kusalā mutimā,
na tesam koci parihīnapañño;
—dīṭṭhī hi tesam pi tathā samattā.
5. Na vāham etaṃ 'tathivan' ti brūmi [882]
yāṃ āhu bālā mithu aññamaññā;
sakarṃ sakarṃ dīṭṭhiṃ akaṃsu saccam;
—tasmā hi 'bālo' ti paraṃ dahanti.
6. Yam āhu 'saccam tathivan' ti eke, [883]
tam āhu aññe pi 'tuccham musā' ti;
—evam pi viggayha vivādiyanti.
Kasmā na ekaṃ samaṇā vadanti?
7. Ekaṃ hi saccam na dutiyam atthi [884]
yasmīṃ pajā no vivade pajānaṃ;
nānā te saccāni sayam thunanti;
tasmā na ekaṃ samaṇā vadanti.
8. Kasmā nu saccāni vadanti nānā [885]
pavādiyāse kusalā vadānā?
Saccāni suttāni bahūni nānā?
Udāhu te takkam anussaranti?

Sutta 12. Rejoinders

The Enquirer: Fixed in their pet beliefs,
these divers wranglers bawl—
'Hold this, and truth is yours;'
'Reject it, and you're lost'. [878]

Thus they contend, and dub
opponents 'dolts' and 'fools'. [879]
Which of the lot is right,
when all as experts pose?

The Lord: Well, if dissent denotes [880]
a 'fool' and stupid 'dolt',
then all are fools and dolts,
—since each has his own view.

Or, if each rival creed [881]
proves lore and brains and wit,
no 'dolts' exist,—since all
alike are on a par.

I count not that as true [882]
which those affirm, who call
each other 'fools'.—They call
each other so, because
each deems his own view 'Truth'.

The Enquirer: What some style 'truth', the rest [883]
call empty lies;—strife reigns.
Pray, why do anchorites
not speak in unison?

The Lord: There's one sole 'Truth' (not two), [884]
to know which bars men's strife.
But such a motley crowd
of 'truths' have they evolved,
that anchorites, perforce,
speak not in full accord.

The Enquirer: What makes these 'experts' preach [885]
'truths' so diverse? Is each
inherited? or just
a view they've framed themselves?

9. Na h' eva saccāni bahūni nānā
aññatra saññāya niccāni loke,
takkañ ca diṭṭhīsu pakappayitvā
saccam musā ti dvayadhammam āhu. [886]
10. Diṭṭhe sute sīlavate mute vā
ete ca nissāya vimānadassī
vinicchaye thatvā pahassamāno
'bālo paro, akusalo' ti c' āha. [887]
11. Yen' eva 'bālo' ti param dahāti,
ten' ātumānam 'kusalo' ti c' āha;
sayam attanā so kusalo vadāno
aññam vimāneti, tath' eva pāvā. [888]
12. Atīsamandiṭṭhiyā so samatto
mānena matto paripunṇamānī,
sayam eva sāmam manasābhisitto,
diṭṭhi hi sā tassa tathā samattā. [889]
13. Parassa ce hi vacasā nihīno,
tumo sahā hoti nihīnapañño;
athavā sayam vedagū hoti dhīro,
na koci bālo samañesu atthi. [890]
14. Aññam ito yābhivadanti dhammam,
aparaddhā suddhim akevali te;
evam pi titthyā puthuso vadanti,
sandiṭṭhirāgena hi tyābhirattā. [891]
15. 'Idh' eva suddhim' iti vādiyanti,
nāññesu dhammesu visuddhim āhu,
evam pi titthyā puthuso niviṭṭhā
sakāyane tattha dāham vadānā. [892]
16. Sakāyane cāpi dāham vadāno
kam ettha 'bālo' ti param daheyya?
Sayam eva so medhagam āvaheyya
param vadam 'bālam asuddhidhammam'. [893]

The Lord: Apart from consciousness,
no diverse Truths exist.
—Mere sophistry declares
this 'true', and that view 'false'.

[886]

The senses' evidence,
and works, inspire such scorn
for others, and such smug
conviction *he* is right,
that all his rivals rank
as 'sorry, brainless fools'.

[887]

When he admits himself
to 'expert's' rank and style;
—this fires his scorn anew
and off he starts again.

[888]

Chock-full of error, drunk
with pride and arrogance,
he inly consecrates
himself a 'sage',—so grand
is his perfected 'view'.

[889]

When scorned opponents dub
him 'low' in turn, he too
joins the 'low intellects'.
If each can make himself
a 'sage', then anchorites
include no 'fools' at all.

[890]

Delight in their dear views
makes sectaries assert
that all who disagree
'miss Purity and err'.

[891]

These divers sectaries
—these sturdy advocates
of private paths to bliss—
claim Purity as theirs
alone, not found elsewhere.

[892]

Whom should the sturdiest
venture to call a 'fool',
when this invites the like
retort upon himself?

[893]

17. Vinicchaye thatvā sayam pamāya
uddharāṃ so lokasmiṃ vivādam eti. [894]
Hitvāna sabbāni vinicchayāni
na medhagaṃ kurute jantu loke.

13. MAHĀVIYŪHASUTTA

1. Ye kec' ime diṭṭhipariibbasānā [895]
'idam eva saccaṃ' ti pavādiyanti,
sabb' eva te nindam anvānayaṃti?
Atha pasamsam pi labhanti tattha?
2. Appaṃ hi etaṃ, na alaṃ samāya; [896]
duve vivādassa phalāni brūmi;
evam pi disvā na vivādiyetha
khemābhipassaṃ avivādabhummaṃ.
3. Yā kāc' imā sammutiyo puthujjā, [897]
sabbā va etā na upeti vidvā.
Anūpayo so upayaṃ kim eyya
diṭṭhe sute khantim akubbamāno?
4. Sīluttamā samyamen' āhu suddhiṃ [898]
vataṃ samādāya upaṭṭhitāse,
—idh' eva sikkhema, ath' assa suddhiṃ,
bhavūpanitā kusalā vadānā.
5. Sace cuto sīlavatāto hoti, [899]
sa vedhati kamma' virādhayitvā,
sa jappati patthayaṃti ca suddhiṃ,
—sattā va hīno, pavasaṃ gharamhā.
6. Sīlabbataṃ vāpi pahāya sabbaṃ [900]
kammaṃ ca sāvajjanavajjam etaṃ
suddhiṃ asuddhiṃ ti apatthayāno
virato care 'santim' anuggahāya.

Stubborn in theories
 which they themselves devised,
 these wrangle on through life.
 —Leave then dogmatic views
 and their attendant strife!

[894]

Sutta 13. More Rejoinders

The Enquirer: Take those who dogmatize
 and lay sole claim to Truth;
 —is blame their constant fate?
 Are they not praised as well?

[895]

The Lord: Yes;—though a trifling thing
 is all of this (I speak
 of both results of strife)
 and does not lead to Peace.
 Wherefore shun strife and aim
 at Peace,—which knows no strife.

[896]

No vulgar theories
 engage the wise. Why should
 the free seek bondage, when
 phenomena of sense
 appeal to them no more?

[897]

They that place practice first,
 deeming that regimen
 wins Purity, take vows
 to practise only what
 their 'master taught as pure',
 —experts self-styled, who cling
 to mere phenomena!

[898]

Should one depart from 'Rule',
 he quakes, and frets, and pines,
 like travellers astray
 who lose their caravan.

[899]

Scout then all formal codes
 of things 'unmeet' and 'meet';
 heed not their 'purity',
 —nor their impurity;
 but walk aloof; ensue
 no 'peace' they advocate.

[900]

7. Tamūpanissāya jigucchitaṃ vā,
athavā pi diṭṭhaṃ va suttaṃ mutaṃ vā,
uddhaṃsarā suddhim anutthunanti
avītataṃhāse bhavābhavesu. [901]
8. Patthayamānassa hi jappitāni
saṃvedhitaṃ vāpi pakappitesu.
Cutūpapāto idha yassa na 'tthi,
sa kena vedheyya? kuhiṃ pajappe? [902]
9. Yam āhu 'dhammaṃ paraman' ti eke,
tam eva 'hīnan' ti pan' āhu aññe.
Sacco nu vādo katamo imesaṃ?
—Sabb' eva hīme kusalā vadānā. [903]
10. Sakaṃ hi dhammaṃ paripuṇṇam āhu;
aññassa dhammaṃ pana hīnam āhu.
Evam pi viggayha vivādiyanti,
sakaṃ sakaṃ sammutim āhu saccaṃ. [904]
11. Parassa ce vambhayitena hīno,
na koci dhammesu visesi assa.
Puthū hi aññassa vadanti dhammaṃ
'nihīnato', samhi daḥhaṃ vadānā. [905]
12. Sadhammapūjā ca panā tath' eva;
yathā pasaṃsanti sakāyanāni
sabbe pavādā tathivā bhaveyyuṃ;
suddhī hi nesaṃ paccattam eva. [906]
13. Na Brāhmaṇassa paraneyyam atthi,
dhammesu niccheyya samuggahitaṃ.
Tasmā vivādāni upātivatto;
na hi seṭṭhato passati dhammam aññaṃ. [907]
14. 'Jānāmi, passāmi, tath' eva etaṃ',
diṭṭhiyā eke paccenti suddhim.
Addakkhi ce, kim hi tumassa tena?
—Atisitvā aññena vadanti suddhim. [908]

Penance, and loathliness,
and things of sense, evoke
shrill shrieks for 'purity'
from men who hanker still
to be reborn—somewhere.

[901]

Desires breed hopes; and fears
spring from imaginings.
—But he who ne'er shall see
rebirth, pray, what shall make
him quake? or yearn—for what?

[902]

The Enquirer: The doctrine some vaunt 'best',
others term 'low'. Which states
the fact?—They're all 'adepts'.

[903]

The Lord: Ah! 'tis his own dear creed
which each proclaims as 'rare'!
His rival's creed is 'low'!
And so they squabble on,
each claiming truth as *his*!

[904]

If others' criticisms
could make a doctrine 'low',
then none is excellent;
for all unite to damn
all doctrines—save their own.

[905]

As they extol their 'Way',
so they revere their creeds.
Their tune is still the same:
'Our Purity's its theme.

[906]

The 'Brahmin true' adopts
nothing from others, owes
nothing to others' views;
immune from strife, he deems
no theory 'the Truth'.

[907]

'Tis so; I see and know'
—say some, who seek by views
to garner 'Purity'.
Yet, should they 'see', what good
is that when rivals urge
a view rebutting theirs?

[908]

15. Passaṃ naro dakkhati nāmarūpaṃ,
disvāna vāññassati tāni-m-eva.
Kāmaṃ bahuṃ passatu appakaṃ vā;
na hi tena suddhiṃ kusalā vadanti. [909]
16. Nivissavādī na hi subbināyo
pakappitaṃ diṭṭhi' purekkharāno;
yaṃ nissito, tattha subhaṃ vadāno
suddhiṃvado tattha tath' addasā so. [910]
17. Na Brāhmaṇo kappam upeti sankhaṃ
na diṭṭhisārī na pi ñāṇabandhu;
ñatvā ca so sammutiyo puthujjā,
upekkhatī;—uggahaṇanti-m-aññe. [911]
18. Visajja ganthāni munīdha loke
vivādaajātesu na vaggasārī,
santo asantesu upekkhako so
anuggaho;—uggahaṇanti-m-aññe. [912]
19. Pubbāsava hitvā, nave akubbaṃ,
na chandagū, no pi nivissavādī,
sa vipkamutto diṭṭhigatehī dhīro
na lippati loke anattagarahī. [913]
20. Sa sabbadhammesu visenibhūto,
yaṃ kiñci diṭṭhaṃ va suttaṃ mutaṃ vā,
sa pannabhāro muni vipkamutto
na kappiyo, nūparato, na patthiyo ti. (*Bhagavā ti*) [914]

Through 'seeing', men just 'see'
things and their attributes;
or, having 'seen', can 'know'
just that—and nothing more.
But, 'see' they much, or 'see'
they little, wise men say:—
'Not thus comes "Purity".'

[909]

No dogmatist can win,
by self-concocted views,
the way to Purity.
Mere prepossessions point
his road to 'Light'; he 'sees'
his old-time 'Purity'.

[910]

No 'Brahmin true' attains
the goal by mere research;
no partisan is he,
nor brother-sectary;
all vulgar theories
—which others toil to learn—
he knows, but heeds them not.

[911]

From earthly trammels freed,
aloof from party broils,
at peace where peace has fled,
th' unheeding sage ignores
what others toil to learn.

[912]

From whilom Cankers purged,
with no fresh growths afoot,
from lusts and dogmas free,
quit too of theories,
he goes his stainless way,
devoid of self-reproach.

[913]

By overcoming all
the theories that start
from things of sense, the sage
—Released, his burthen gone—
has done with conduct 'meet',
with abstinence, and pray'rs.

[914]

14. TUVATAKASUTTA

1. Pucchāmi taṃ Ādiccabandhuṃ [915]
vivekaṃ santipadaṃ ca mahesiṃ :
Kathaṃ disvā nibbāti bhikkhu
anupādiyāno lokasmiṃ kiñci ?
2. Mūlaṃ papañcasarikkhāyā (ti Bhagavā) [916]
mantā 'asmīti' sabbam uparuddhe;
yā kāci taṇhā ajjhattaṃ,
tāsaṃ vinayā sadā sato sikkhe.
3. Yaṃ kiñci dhammaṃ abhijaññā, [917]
ajjhattaṃ atha vā pi bahiddhā,
na tena thāmaṃ kubbetha;
na hi sā nibbuti sataṃ vuttā.
4. Seyyo na tena maññeyya [918]
nīceyyo atha vā pi sarikkho;
phuṭṭho anekarūpehi
nātumānaṃ vikappayaṃ tiṭṭhe.
5. Ajjhattaṃ eva upasame, [919]
nāññato bhikkhu santim eseyya;
ajjhattaṃ upasantassa
na 'tthi attāṃ,—kuto nirattaṃ vā?
6. Majjhe yathā samuddassa [920]
ūmi no jāyati, ṭhito hoti,
evaṃ ṭhito aneja' assa;
ussadaṃ bhikkhu na kareyya kuhiñci.
7. Akittayi vivaṭacakkhu [921]
sakkhidhammaṃ paṭissayavinayaṃ;
paṭipadaṃ vadehi—bhaddan te—
pātimokkhaṃ atha vā pi samādhim.
8. Cakkhūhi n' eva lol' assa, [922]
gāmakathāya āvaraye sotaṃ,
rase ca nānugijjheyya,
na ca mamāyetha kiñci lokasmiṃ.

Sutta 14. Without Delay

The Enquirer: Sun's kinsman! Sage! [915]

Expound aloofness and
the way of Peace.
What outlook leaves man calm,
with life's stuff spent?

The Lord: Let him pluck out [916]

obsession's root,—the craze:

'I am'; let him
in constant watchfulness
abide, with all
his inward cravings gone.

Should he observe [917]

a mental state arise
(from in or out),
let it not puff him up,
—since none term this
the calm which good men win.

Nor let him feel [918]
'better' or 'worse' for this,
or build a 'Self'
on such phenomena.

For inward Peace [919]

let Almsmen seek, nor look
for calm elsewhere.

With inward Peace, no Self—
no non-Self—dwells.

As no waves break [920]

the calm of ocean's depths,
unruffled be
the Almsman's tranquil breast.

The Enquirer: Thou hast proclaimed [921]

thy saving Doctrine, seer.
Expound thy Rule—
Confession—Rapt Resolve.

The Lord: No prying eye! [922]

No ear for village talk!
No taste for cates!
No itch to get or have!

9. Phassena yadā phutṭh' assa, [923]
 paridevaṃ bhikkhu na kareyya kuhiñci,
 bhavaṃ ca nābhijappeyya,
 bheravesu ca na sampavedheyya.
10. Annānam, atho pānānaṃ, [924]
 khādaniyānaṃ, atho pi vatthānaṃ
 laddhā na sannidhiṃ kayirā,
 na ca parittase tāni alabbhamāno.
11. Jhāyī, na pādalol' assa, [925]
 virame kukkuccā, na-ppamajjeyya;
 ath' āsanesu sayanesu
 appasaddesu bhikkhu vihareyya.
12. Niddaṃ na bahulikareyya; [926]
 jāgariyaṃ bhajeyya ātāpi;
 tandiṃ māyaṃ hasaṃ khiddaṃ
 methunaṃ vippajahe savibhūsaṃ.
13. Āthabbaṇaṃ supinaṃ lakkhaṇaṃ [927]
 no vidahe, atho pi nakkhattaṃ,
 virudaṃ ca gabbhakaraṇaṃ,
 tikicchaṃ māmako na seveyya.
14. Nindāya na-ppavedheyya, [928]
 na uṇṇameyya paṣaṃsito bhikkhu,
 lobham saha macchariyena
 kodhaṃ pesuṇiyaṃ ca paṇūdeyya.
15. Kayavikkaye na tiṭṭheyya, [929]
 upavādaṃ bhikkhu na kareyya kuhiñci,
 gāme ca nābhisaṃjjeyya,
 lābhakamyā janaṃ na lāpayeyya.
16. Na ca katthitā siyā bhikkhu, [930]
 na ca vācaṃ payuttaṃ bhāseyya,
 pāgabbhiyaṃ na sikkheyya,
 kathaṃ viggāhikaṃ na kathayeyya.

When illness comes,
let th' Almsman not lament,
or yearn for life,
or quake with abject dread.

[923]

Let him not hoard
the food and drink, the meats,
and clothes he gets;
—nor grieve if he gets none.

[924]

Let Reverie
be his, not gadding round,
not vice or sloth.
Sitting or lying down,
let silence reign.

[925]

Let him not sleep
o'ermuch, but keep awake,
ban indolence,
deceit, mirth, frolics, pride,
and lechery.

[926]

Let him abjure
spells, and interpretations
of dreams and signs;
nor let my follower
prognosticate
from stars or wild-things' notes,
cure barrenness,
or ply the trade of leech.

[927]

Let neither blame
depress, nor praise inflate;
let him discard
greed,—with close-fistedness,
slander, and wrath.

[928]

Let him not buy
and sell, or cry folk down;
let him not scold
his villagers, or speak
them fair—for gifts.

[929]

Let him not boast
or talk for private ends;
or forward be;
or start a wordy war.

[930]

17. Mosavajje na niyyetha,
sompajāno saṭhāni na kayirā,
atha jīvitena paññāya
sīlabbatena nāññam atimaññe. [931]
18. Sutvā dūsito bahum vācam
samañānam vā puthuvacanānam
pharusena ne na pativajjā;
na hi santo paṭisenikaronti. [932]
19. Etañ ca dhammam aññāya
vicinaṃ bhikkhu sadā sato sikkhe,
santīti nibbutim fiatvā
sāsane Gotamassa na-ppamajjeyya. [933]
20. Abhibhū hi so anabhibhūto
sakkhidhammaṃ anītiham adassī;
tasmā hi tassa Bhagavato
sāsane appamatto sadā namassaṃ anusikkhe ti.
(Bhagavā ti) [934]

15. ATTADAṆḌASUTTA

1. Attadaṇḍā bhayaṃ jātaṃ; janaṃ passatha medhagaṃ.
Saṃvegaṃ kittayissāmi yathā saṃvijitaṃ mayā:— [935]
2. Phandamānaṃ pajaṃ disvā—macche appodake yathā—
aññamaññehi byāruddhe disvā, maṃ bhayaṃ āvisi. [936]
3. Samantaṃ asāro loko; disā sabbā sameritā;
icchaṃ bhavanam attano nāddasāsiṃ anositaṃ. [937]
4. Osāne tveva byāruddhe disvā me aratī ahu;
ath' ettha sallaṃ addakkhim duddasaṃ hadayanissitaṃ. [938]
5. Yena sallena otiṇṇo disā sabbā vidhāvati,
tam eva sallaṃ abbūyha na dhāvati, na sidati. [939]

Let him not lie,
or wittingly defraud,
or look with scorn
on others from proud heights
of way of life,
or lore, or sanctity.

[931]

Let him not vent
his spleen by sharp retort
when anchorites
flow on in vapid talk.
—Saints ne'er rejoin.

[932]

Let him learn, test,
and hold the Doctrine fast
with watchful care,
convinced that Peace consists
in passions quenched;
let him make Gotama
his constant guide.

[933]

For, vision showed
th' unconquer'd Conqueror
the Truth none saw.
Wherefore, with ceaseless praise
let Almsmen cleave
to what the Lord ordained,
—and never flag.

[934]

Sutta 15. The Armed Hand

As broils reveal, the armed hand breeds fear.
Hear now what agitated me so sore:—

[935]

Men floundering like fish when ponds go dry;
man's strife with man;—these sights affrighted me.

[936]

The world was void of substance; flux held sway;
nor could I shelter find where Ills were not.

[937]

Man's doom appalled me, till—within man's heart—
my gaze discerned a secret, rankling barb.

[938]

Transfix'd, the victim runs astray; but when
'tis out, he strays no more nor sinks in sloughs.

[939]

(Tattha sikkhānugiyanti)

6. Yāni loke gathitāni, na tesu pasuto siyā; [940]
nibbijjha sabbaso kāme sikkhe nibbānam attano.
7. Sacco siyā, appagabbho amāyo rittapesuṇo [941]
akkodhano; lobhapāpakam veviccharṇ vitare muni.
8. Niddam tandim sahe thīnarṇ, pamādena na saṁvase, [942]
atimāne na tiṭṭheyya nibbānamanaso naro.
9. Mosavajje na niyyetha, rūpe sneharṇ na kubbaye, [943]
mānañ ca parijāneyya, sāhasā virato care.
10. Purāṇarṇ nābhinandeyya, nave khantiṇ na kubbaye, [944]
hīyamāne na soceyya, ākāsarṇ na sito siyā.
11. Gedharṇ brūmi 'mahogho' ti, ācamarṇ brūmi jappanarṇ, [945]
ārammaṇarṇ pakappanarṇ, kāmapanko duraccayo.
12. Saccā avokkamma muni thale tiṭṭhati Brāhmaṇo; [946]
sabbarṇ so paṇinissajja sa ve 'santo' ti vuccati.
13. Sa ve vidvā, sa vedagū, fiatvā dhammarṇ anissito, [947]
sammā so loke iriyāno na-ppihetidha kassaci.
14. Yo ca kāme accatari sangarṇ loke duraccayaṇ, [948]
na so socati nājjheti chinnaṇsoto abandhano.
15. Yaṇ pubbe tarṇ visosehi, pacchā te māhu kiñcanarṇ, [949]
majjhe ce no gahessasi, 'upasanto' carissasi.
16. Sabbaso nāmarūpasmiṇ yassa na 'tthi mamāyitarṇ [950]
asatā ca na socati, sa ve loke na jiyiyati.
17. Yassa na 'tthi 'idam me' ti, paresarṇ vā pi, kiñcanarṇ, [951]
mamattarṇ so asarṇvandarṇ 'na 'tthi me' ti na socati.
18. Anitṭhurī anānugiddho anejo sabbadhī samo [952]
tarṇ ānisaṁsarṇ pabrūmi pucchito avikampinarṇ.

(Here come the Precepts.)

- Steer clear of worldly trammels; stab to death pleasures of sense; Nirvāna be thy goal; [940]
- let truth, humility, an honest heart, [941]
lips slander-free, and tolerance, be thine;
let greed's discomfiture proclaim the sage;
- farewell to slumb'ring on, to torpid sloth; [942]
let indolence be banned, and pride forsworn,
by minds intent upon Nirvāna's bliss;
- shun lying; keep thy heart from things of sense; [943]
see through all pride; from license purge thy life;
- hug not the past or what to-day brings forth; [944]
bewail not loss; nor sigh for bliss 'Above'.
- I call such yearning 'th' all-devouring flood'; [945]
I call it being swallowed up by greed,
—a shifting base, 'the bog of appetites'.
- The sage, the Brahmin true, who never strays [946]
from truth, on solid ground has set his foot;
all things forsaking, he 'to Peace has come';
- wisdom is his and lore; by Doctrine taught, [947]
he goes his independent, perfect way
along life's path, nor envies any man.
- He that has triumphed over appetites [948]
and burst all worldly shackles here on earth,
knows neither grief o'er loss, nor haunting dread.
- Consume to ashes past iniquities; [949]
thereafter let no fresh defilement grow;
if—meantime—thou contract no current guilt,
thy feet shall tread the tranquil path of Peace.
- Whoso prefers no claim to ownership [950]
of 'personality', and so grieves not
o'er what exists not,—never suffers loss.
- Whoso is marred by no such thoughts as —'This [951]
is mine!' or 'That is theirs!' conceives no sense
of ownership, nor grieves to go without.
- Neither to grudge nor covet nor to crave, [952]
but still to keep one equal poise through all,
—these blessings, I aver, await the leal.

19. Anejassa vijānato na 'tthi kāci nisaṁkhiti;
virato so viyārambhā khemaṁ passati sabbadhi. [953]
20. Na samesu na omesu na ussesu vadate muni,
santo so vītamaccharo nādeti na nirassatī. (*ti Bhagavā*) [954]

16. SĀRIPUTTASUTTA

1. Na me diṭṭho ito pubbe na suto uda kassaci
(*icc-āyasmā Sāriputto*) [955]
evaṁ vagguvado satthā Tusitā gaṇi-m-āgato
2. sadevakassa lokassa yathā dissati Cakkhumā [956]
sabbaṁ tamaṁ vinodetvā eko ca ratim ajjhagā.
3. Taṁ Buddhaṁ asitaṁ tādiṁ akuhaṁ gaṇim āgataṁ [957]
bahunnam idha baddhānaṁ atthi pañhena āgamaṁ:—
4. Bhikkhuno vijigucchato bhajato rittam āsanaṁ [958]
rukkhamūlaṁ susānaṁ vā pabbatānaṁ guhāsu vā
5. uccāvacesu sayanesu, kīvanto tattha bheravā [959]
yehi bhikkhu na vedheyya nigghose sayanāsane?
6. Katī parissayā loke gacchato agataṁ disaṁ [960]
ye bhikkhu abhisambhave pantamhi sayanāsane?
7. Kyāssa byappathayo assu? Kyāssa assu idha gocarā? [961]
Kāni sīlabbatān' assu pahitattassa bhikkhuno?
8. Kaṁ so sikkhaṁ samādāya ekodi nipako sato, [962]
kammāro rajatassēva, niddhame malam attano?
9. Vijigucchamānassa yad idaṁ phāsu [963]
(*Sāriputtāti Bhagavā*)
rittāsanaṁ sayanaṁ sevato ce
sambodhikāmassa yathānudhammaṁ
tan te pavakkhāmi yathā pajānaṁ.

When cravings die, the clear-eyed sage stores up
no merit nor demerit; interest
in suchlike quests is merged in perfect calm.

[953]

The sage contrasts himself with none, nor claims
equality or inequality.

[954]

At peace within, immune from covetise,
the saint has nought to gain and naught to lose.

Sutta 16. What Sāriputta Asked

Sāriputta : I ne'er have seen nor ever yet heard tell
of such a sweet-tongued Master coming down
from Túsitá on high to teach the world

[955]

of gods and men,—as stands reveal'd in Him,
th' all-seeing Lord, who swept all mists away
and compassed bliss, unaided and alone.

[956]

To Buddha—so endowed, so free, so sure
a guide, a question lo! I bring, to help
the multitudes condemned to bondage here.

[957]

If, now, an Almsman who abhors the world
seeks out a lonely lodging,—under trees,
in charnel grounds, or in a mountain cave,

[958]

—there grisly noises haunt his lone abode,
which he must stoutly brave in solitude.

[959]

What dangers bar his still untrodden road,
which he must vanquish in his loneliness?

[960]

How should he shape his speech?—whither resort?
—what pious works should mark him, resolute?

[961]

What vows of conduct help the fixed mind
(with wisdom stored and high collectedness)
foulness to purge, as silversmiths the dross?

[962]

The Lord: Hear then from me—who know—
what boons lone aspirants
enjoy, who loathe the world,
and how their life conforms.

[963]

10. Pañcanna' dhīro bhayānaṃ na bhāye
bhikkhu sato sa pariyantacārī,
—ḍaṃsādhīpātānaṃ sirīṃsapānaṃ
manussaphassānaṃ catuppadānaṃ; [964]
11. paradhammikānaṃ pi na santaseyya
disvā pi tesāṃ bahubheravāni;
athāparāni abhisambhaveyya
parissayāni kusalānuesī. [965]
12. Ātāṇkaphassena khudāya phuṭṭho
sītaṃ accuṇhaṃ adhvīvasayeyya;
sa tehi phuṭṭho bahudhā anoko
viriyāṃ parakkamaṃ dāhaṃ kareyya. [966]
13. Theyyaṃ na kāre, na musā bhaṇeyya,
mettāya phasse tasathāvarāni,
yaḍ āvilattaṃ manaso vijaññā
'Kaṇhassa pakkho' ti vinodayeyya. [967]
14. Kodhātīmānassa vasaṃ na gacche,
mūlam pi tesāṃ palikhañña tiṭṭhe,
atha-ppiyaṃ vā pana appiyaṃ vā
addhābhavanto abhisambhaveyya. [968]
15. Paññaṃ purakkhatvā kalyāṇapīti
vikkhambhaye tāni parissayāni,
aratiṃ sahettha sayanamhi pante.
caturo sahettha paridevadhhamme:— [969]
16. Kiṃ sū asissāmi? Kuvaṃ vā asissaṃ?
Dukkhaṃ vata settha; kuṃ' ajja sessaṃ?
—ete vitakke paridevaneyye
vinayetha sekho aniketasārī. [970]

Let th' Almsman stoutly brave
with watchful discipline,
the dangers five,—to wit,
mosquitos, gadflies, snakes,
assaults of men, and beasts.

[964]

Let not the aspirant
dread—though he sees them all—
onslaughts from sectaries,
but turn to overcome
perils confronting him.

[965]

Though sick and hungry, still
let him brave cold and heat,
and (though they press him hard)
let th' homeless wanderer
bear up and struggle on.

[966]

Let him not steal or lie;
let him be kind alike
to weak and strong, and, when
disorders plague his mind,
rout them as—'Māra's gang'!

[967]

Resisting ire and pride,
let him extirpate them,
and make an end of likes
and dislikes, once for all.

[968]

With noble zest, by lore
inspired, let him o'ercome
his perils and dispel
dislike of solitude
and all those four complaints:—

[969]

'What fare will come my way?
—and where? Poor lodging this!
—where shall I lodge to-night?'
Let th' homeless aspirant
have done with such complaints.

[970]

17. Annañ ca laddhā vasaṇañ ca kāle
mattaṃ so jaññā idha tosanatthaṃ,
so tesu gutto yatacāri gāme
rusito pi vācaṃ pharusañ na vajjā. [971]
18. Okkhittacakkhu na ca pādalolo
jhānānuyutto bahujāgar' assa;
upekkham ārabba samāhitatto
takkāsaṃ kukkucciy' ūpacchinde. [972]
19. Cudito vacībhi satimā 'bhinande,
sābrahmacārīsu khilaṃ pabbinde,
vācaṃ pamuñce kusalaṃ nātivelāṃ,
janavādadhammāya na cetayeyya. [973]
20. Athāparaṃ pañca rajāni loke
yesaṃ satimā vinayāya sikkhe;
—rūpesu, saddesu, atho rasesu,
gandhesu, phassesu sahettha rāgaṃ. [974]
21. Etesu dhammesu vineyya chandaṃ
bhikkhu satimā suvimuttacitto
kālena so sammā dhammaṃ parivīmaṃsamāno
ekodibhūto vihane tamam so ti. [975]
(*Bhagavā ti*)

When in due season food
and clothes are given him,
let him just meet his needs
and, in such temperance,
with guarded mien, about
his village go; nor e'er
be stung to sharp retorts.

[971]

With steps that loiter not
and eyes downcast, let him,
though plunged in reverie,
keep wide awake. Serene
through equal poise of mind,
let him check lurking doubts
and all malpractices.

[972]

In mindfulness let him
welcome reproof, break up
his brethren's fallows, speak
succinctly to the point,
and heed no vulgar creed.

[973]

Then come the world's five stains,
which he must set himself
to shed by discipline,
till he subdues the lusts
of eye, ear, taste, smell, touch.

[974]

Quit of these things of sense,
let th' Almsman—mindfully,
with heart now freed—betimes
the Doctrine search till clouds
have left his fixed mind.

[975]

V. PĀRĀYANAVAGGA

(i) VATTHUGĀTHĀ

1. Kosalānaṃ purā rammā agamā Dakkhināpathaṃ
ākhiṇcaññaṃ patthayaṇo brāhmaṇo mantapāragū. [976]
2. So Assakassa visaye Muḷakassa samāsane
vasī Godhāvarikūle uñchena ca phalena ca. [977]
3. Tass' eva upanissāya gāmo ca vipulo ahu,
tato jātena āyena mahāyaññaṃ akappayi; [978]
4. mahāyaññaṃ yajitvāna puna pāvīsi assamaṇa.
Tasmañ patipaviṭṭhamhi añño āgañchi brāhmaṇo [979]
5. ugghaṭṭapādo tasito pankadanto rajassiro;
—so ca naṃ upasaṃkamma satāni pañca yācati. [980]
6. Tam enaṃ Bāvarī disvā āsanena nimantayi,
sukhañ ca kusalaṃ pucchi, idaṃ vacanam abravi:— [981]
7. Yaṃ kho mamaṃ deyyadhammaṃ sabbaṃ vissajjitaṃ mayā;
anujānāhi me, brahme; na 'tthi pañca satāni me. [982]
8. Sace me yācamānassa bhavaṃ nānupadassati,
sattame divase tuyhaṃ muddhā phalatu sattadhā. [983]
9. Abhisamkharitvā kuhako bheravaṃ so akittayi.
Tassa taṃ vacanaṃ sutvā Bāvarī dukkhito ahu, [984]
10. ussussati anāhāro sokasallasamappito,
atho pi evaṃcittassa jhāne na ramatī mano. [985]
11. Utrastaṃ dukkhitaṃ disvā devatā atthakāminī
Bāvariṃ upasaṃkamma idaṃ vacanam abravi: [986]
12. Na so muddhaṃ pajānāti kuhako so dhanatthiko,
muddhani muddhapāte vā nāpaṃ tassa na vijjati. [987]
13. Bhoti carahi jānāti? Tam me akkhāhi pucchitā
muddhaṃ muddhādhipātāñ ca, taṃ suṇoma vaco tava. [988]
14. Aham p' etaṃ na jānāmi; nāpaṃ me 'ttha na vijjati;
muddham muddhādhipāto ca Jinānaṃ h' eta' dassanaṃ. [989]
15. Atha ko carahi jānāti asmiṃ puthavimaṇḍale
muddhaṃ muddhādhipātāñ ca? Tam me akkhāhi, devate. [990]

BOOK V. THE WAY ACROSS

Prologue

- Southwards from Sāvattī, fair capital [976]
of Kosala, a learned brahmin came
in aspiration for the Plane of Naught.
- Near Assaka and hard by Muḷaka, [977]
beside Godhāvārī's fork'd stream, he lived
on wilding fruits and sustenance he culled.
- Hard by, he held a thriving village-fief; [978]
its yield he lavish'd on a pious feast;
- this done, he sought his hermitage once more. [979]
On his return, another brahmin came
- footsore, athirst, with muddied teeth, dust-stain'd— [980]
who asked him for five hundred pieces down!
- First, begging him be seated, Bāvarī [981]
asked how he inly fared, and then replied:—
- 'Nothing is left of what I had to give. [982]
Forgive me, brahmin;—no such sum have I.'
- 'If you refuse me, may your head be split [983]
in seven bits upon the seventh day!'
- With due formalities, the rascal laid [984]
this curse on Bāvarī,—who quaked with fear,
- and took no food, but pined in anguish sore; [985]
and Reverie's delights were his no more.
- To help him in his dread and woe, there came [986]
his homestead's deity, who spoke these words:—
- 'That greedy rascal nothing knows of heads! [987]
Of heads and riving heads he's ignorant!'
- 'If you know, madam, let me hear you speak [988]
of heads and riving heads; I yearn to know.'
- 'I too know nothing, and am ignorant; [989]
'tis only "Conquerors" who know these things.'
- 'Who then in all the wide, wide world does know [990]
of heads and riving heads? Sprite, tell me this.'

16. 'Purā Kapilavatthumhā nikkhanto lokanāyako
apacco Okkākarājassa Sakyaputto pabhamkaro. [991]
17. So hi, brāhmaṇa, Sambuddho sabbadhammāna' pāragū [992]
sabbābhiññābalappatto sabbadhammesu cakkhumā
sabbadhammakkhayaṃ patto vimutto upadhikkhaye;
18. Buddho so Bhagavā loke dhammaṃ deseti cakkhumā. [993]
'Taṃ tvaṃ gantvāna pucchassu; so te taṃ byākarissati.'
19. 'Sambuddho' ti vaco sutvā udaggo Bāvarī ahu; [994]
'sok' assa tanuko āsi, pītiṃ ca vipulaṃ labhi.
20. So Bāvarī attamano udaggo [995]
taṃ devataṃ pucchati vedajāto:
Katamamhi gāme nigamamhi vā puna
katamamhi vā janapade lokanātho
yathā gantvā namassemu Sambuddhaṃ dipaduttamaṃ.
21. Sāvattiyaṃ Kosalamandire Jīno [996]
pahūtapāñño varabhūrimedhaso
so Sakyaputto vidhuro anāsavo
muddhādhipātassa vidū narāsabho.
22. Tato āmantayi sisse brāhmaṇe mantapārage:— [997]
Etha, māṇavā; akkhissam; suṇotha vacanaṃ mama.
23. Yass' eso dullabho loke pātubhāvo abhinhaso [998]
sv' ajja lokamhi uppanno Sambuddho iti vissuto.
—Khippaṃ gantvāna Sāvattiṃ passavho dipaduttamaṃ.
24. Kathaṃ carahi jānemu disvā 'Buddho' ti, brāhmaṇa? [999]
Ajānataṃ no pabrūhi yathā jānemu taṃ mayaṃ.
25. Āgatāni hi mantesu mahāpurisalakkhaṇā [1000]
dvattiṃsā ca vyākhyātā samattā anupubbaso.

'A Sákya'n of King Okkāka's line
has left their capital to spread the Light.

[991]

The Lord of All-Enlightenment is he,
in ev'ry outlook versed; all ken and might
is his; his gaze all outlooks penetrates;
by subjugating all phenomena
life's stuff is spent, and he has won Release.

[992]

Th' Enlighten'd and All-seeing Lord is he,
who here on earth proclaims his Doctrine's truth.
Go, ask of him; and he will make all clear'.

[993]

'The All-Enlighten'd'—At that name's mere sound,
elation seized on Bāvarī; his grief
abated; joy abounding filled his breast.

[994]

Then Bāvarī, elate
with joy, excitedly
besought the sprite to name
the village, town, or realm
where dwelt this Lord of Lords,
that they might go and render homage due
to th' All-Enlighten'd, prince of all mankind.

[995]

'At Sāvattī, beneath
a roof in Kosala,
the Victor dwells, profound
in lore, of searching wit.
This matchless Sákya'n,
from Cankers wholly free,
—this paragon of men—
knows well how heads are split.

[996]

Then Bāvarī addressed his following
of brahmins, masters of the runes, and said:—
'Draw near, young brahmins; list to what I say!

[997]

Lo! One whose advent in the world is rare,
to-day is here on earth,—famed far and wide
as "th' All-Enlighten'd". Speed to Sāvattī,
and there behold mankind's unchallenged best.'

[998]

'But, brahmin, how can we feel sure we see
a very Buddha? Teach our ignorance'.

[999]

'The runes detail the marks of Supermen,
and of those marks the tale is thirty-two.

[1000]

26. Yass' ete honti gattesu mahāpurisalakkhaṇā
duve va tassa gatiyo, tatiyā hi na vijjati:— [1001]
27. Sace agāraṃ āvasati, vijeyya paṭhavim imāṃ
adaṇḍena asatthena dhammena-m-anusāsati. [1002]
28. Sace ca so pabbajati agārā anagāriyaṃ,
vivatcchaddo Sambuddho arahā bhavati anuttaro. [1003]
29. Jātim gottañi ca lakkhaṇaṃ mante sisse punāpare
muddhaṃ muddhādhīpātāñi ca manasā yeva pucchatha. [1004]
30. Anāvaraṇadassāvī yadi Buddho bhavissati,
manasā pucchite pañhe vācāya vissajessati. [1005]
31. Bāvarissa vaco sutvā sissā soḷasa brāhmaṇā
—Ajito Tissa-Metteyyo Puṇṇako atha Mettagū [1006]
32. Dhotako Upasīvo ca Nando ca atha Hemako
Todeyya-Kappā dubhayo Jatukaṇṇi ca paṇḍito [1007]
33. Bhadrāvudho Udayo ca Posālo cāpi brāhmaṇo
Mogharājā ca medhāvī Pingiyo ca mahā isi— [1008]
34. paccekagaṇino sabbe sabbalokassa vissutā
jhāyī jhānaratā dhīrā pubbavāsanavāsītā. [1009]
35. Bāvarim abhivādetvā katvā ca naṃ padakkhiṇaṃ
jaṭṭajīnadharā sabbe pakkāmuṃ uttarāmukhā, [1010]
36. —Muḷakassa Paṭiṭṭhānaṃ purimaṃ Māhissatiṃ tadā
Ujjeniṃ cāpi Gonaddhaṃ Vedisāṃ Vanasavhayaṃ. [1011]
37. Kosambim cāpi Sāketam Sāvattiṃ ca puruttamaṃ
Setavyaṃ Kapilavatthuṃ Kusināraṃ ca mandiraṃ. [1012]
38. Pāvaṇ ca bhoganagaraṃ Vesālīm Māgadhaṃ puraṃ
Pāsāpakaṃ cetiyaṃ ca ramaṇiyaṃ manoramaṃ. [1013]
39. Tasito v' udakaṃ sitaṃ, mahālābham va vāpijo,
chāyaṃ ghammābhitatto va, turitā pabbataṃ āruhaṃ. [1014]

To one who bears those two and thirty marks,
[1001] two walks of life are open,—and no third.

If house and home be his, the whole wide world
[1002] shall own his sway. On righteousness shall rest
his rule, and not on cudgel or on sword.

But if from home to homelessness he goes,
[1003] he strips the veil from things, and so becomes
the peerless All-Enlighten'd Arahāt.

Frame questions mentally about my birth,
[1004] and clan, and marks, and runes, and pupils taught,
—and heads and riving heads. Your questions frame,

and, if he Buddha be of boundless ken,
[1005] his lips will answer what your minds have asked.'

At Bāvarī's behest went sixteen youths,
[1006] —named Ājitā and Tissa Mētteyyā,
and Pūṇṇakā and kindly Mēttagū

—with Ūpasīva, Nanda, Dhótakā,
[1007] and Hémakā, Todéyya, Kappa too,
and learned Jatukannī, Ūdaya,

Bhadrāvudha, the brahmin Pōsālā,
[1008] quick Mogharāja, and sage Pingiya.

Each led his train of pupils; each was famed
[1009] throughout the world; they all loved Reverie;
they all could conjure up their former lives.

Of Bāvarī these took devout farewell,
[1010] then northwards went, hide-clad, with matted hair,

through Pātīṭṭhān in Mūlakā, through Old
[1011] Mahissatī, Ujjēni, Gónaddhā,

then Védisā 'the Weald', Kōsāmbī next,
[1012] Sākēta, Sāvattthī (of cities queen),
then Sétavyā, and Kāpilāvattthú,

past Kūsinārā town, past Pāvā too,
[1013] that home of opulence, past Vēsālī,
thence on to Māgadhá's proud capital,
and so to Rock-Shrine, fair, delectable.

As thirsty folk to cooling waters haste,
[1014] as merchants wealth pursue, as men forspent
with heat seek shade, these scaled the mountain-side.

40. Bhagavā ca tamhi samaye bhikkhusaṃghapurakkhato
bhikkhūnaṃ Dhammaṃ deseti, sīho va nadatī vane. [1015]
41. Ajito addasa Sambuddhaṃ vītaraṃsi' va bhānumaṃ,
candaṃ yathā pannarase pāripūriṃ upāgataṃ. [1016]
42. Ath' assa gatte disvāna paripūraṇi ca vyañjanaṃ
ekamantaṃ t̥hito haṭṭho manopañhe apucchatha:— [1017]
43. Ādissa jammanaṃ brūhi, gottaṃ brūhi salakkhaṇaṃ,
mantesu pāramaṃ brūhi; kati vāceti brāhmaṇo? [1018]
44. Vīsaṃvassasataṃ āyu; so ca gottena Bāvarī;
t̥iṇ' assa lakkhaṇā gatte; tiṇṇaṃ vedāna' pāragū; [1019]
45. lakkhaṇe itihāse ca sanighaṇḍusakeṭubhe;
pañca satāni vāceti; sadhamme pāramaṃ gato. [1020]
46. Lakkhaṇānaṃ pavicayaṃ Bāvarissa, naruttama
taṇhacchida, pakāsehi. Mā no kankhāyitaṃ ahu. [1021]
47. Mukhaṃ jivhāya chādeti; uṇṇ' assa bhamukantare;
kosohitaṃ vatthaguyhaṃ;—evaṃ jānāhi, māṇava. [1022]
48. (Pucchaṃ hi kiñci asuṇanto sutvā pañhe viyācate
vicinteti jano sabbo vedajāto katañjali:— [1023]
49. Ko nu devo va Brahmā vā Indo vā pi Sujampati
manasā pucchi te pañhe? Kam etaṃ paṭibhāsati?) [1024]
50. Muddhaṃ muddhādhipātāṇi ca Bāvarī paripucchati.
Taṃ vyākaroḥi, Bhagavā; kankhaṃ vinaya no, ise. [1025]
51. 'Avijjā muddhā ti jānāhi; vijjā muddhādhipātini,
saddhāsatisamādhīhi chandaviriyena saṃyutā.' [1026]
-
52. Tato vedena mahatā santhambhitvāna māṇavo
ekaṃsaṃ ajinaṃ katvā pādesu sirasā pati:— [1027]
53. Bāvarī brāhmaṇo bhoto saha sissehi, mārisa,
udaggacitto sumano pāde vandati, cakkhuma. [1028]
54. Sukhito Bāvarī hotu saha sissehi brāhmaṇo;
tvaṃ cāpi sukkhito hohi;—ciraṃ jīvāhi, māṇava. [1029]

In conclave, by his Almsmen girt around, [1015]
the Lord was teaching them the Doctrine's truths
and like a lion's roar his voice rang out.

To Ājitā the All-Enlighten'd seemed [1016]
the radiant sun, or mid-month's moon at full!

A survey of his frame—with marks complete— [1017]
filled Ājitā with joy; in reverence
he stood and framed these questions in his mind:—

'Declare our teacher's birth, and clan, and marks, [1018]
what runes he knows, what pupils learn of him.'

The Lord: Six-score years old, a Bāvarī by clan, [1019]
he bears three marks; he knows the Vedas three;

is versed in marks and scholarship; instructs [1020]
five hundred youths; is perfect in his creed.

Ajita: Detail the marks he bears, thou matchless man. [1021]
Cravings' uprooter! Leave us not in doubt.

The Lord: His tongue can hide his face; a downy tuft [1022]
divides his brows; his privities are sheathed.

(Hearing replies to questions heard by none, [1023]
all present raised their folded palms in awe,

wond'ring what godhead—Indra?—or Brahmā?— [1024]
was thinking questions; who received replies.)

Ajita: Of heads and riving heads, asks Bāvarī. [1025]
Explain this, Lord; dispel our doubts, o sage.

The Lord: The head is Ignorance,—which Knowledge rives, [1026]
Knowledge informed by faith and mindfulness,
by earnest heart and mind, by eager zeal.

With deep emotion thrilled, the brahmin youth [1027]
his shoulder bared in homage to the Lord,
and bowed his head before the Master's feet.

Ajita: O sir (he cried), the brahmin Bāvarī, [1028]
with all his pupils, here adores thy feet
in heartfelt thankfulness, All-seeing Lord!

The Lord: May all go well with Bāvarī and train, [1029]
—and thee, young brahmin! Length of days be thine!

55. Bāvarissa ca tuyhaṃ vā sabbesaṃ sabbasaṃsayaṃ
katāvakāsaṃ pucchavho, yaṃ kiñci manas' icchatha. [1030]

56. Sambuddhena katokāso nisīditvāna pañjali
Ajito paṭhamāṃ pañhaṃ tattha pucchi Tathāgataṃ. [1031]

AJITAMĀNAVA-PUCCHĀ (i)

1. Kena-ssu nivuto loko? Kena-ssu na-ppakāsati? [1032]

(icc-āyasmā Ajito)
Ki' 'ssābhilepanaṃ brūsi? Kiṃ-su tassa mahabbhayaṃ?

2. Avijjāya nivuto loko, vevicchā pamādā na-ppakāsati. [1033]

(Ajitāti Bhagavā)
Jappābhilepanaṃ brūmi. Dukkham assa mahabbhayaṃ.

3. Savanti sabbadhī sotā; sotānaṃ kiṃ nivāraṇaṃ? [1034]

(icc-āyasmā Ajito)
Sotānaṃ saṃvaraṃ brūhi. Kena sotā pithiyyare?

4. Yāni sotāni lokasmiṃ, sati tesaṃ nivāraṇaṃ, [1035]

(Ajitāti Bhagavā)
sotānaṃ saṃvaraṃ brūmi,—paññāy' ete pithiyyare.

5. Paññā c' eva satī cāpi nāmarūpaṃ ca, mārisa, [1036]

(icc-āyasmā Ajito)
etaṃ me puṭṭho pabrūhi: Katth' etaṃ uparujjhati?

6. Yam etaṃ pañhaṃ apucchi, Ajita, taṃ vadāmi te: [1037]

yattha nāmaṃ ca rūpaṃ ca asesāṃ uparujjhati,
viññāpassa nirodhena etth' etaṃ uparujjhati.

7. Ye ca saṃkhātadhammāse, ye ca sekhā puthu idha, [1038]

tesaṃ me nipako iriyaṃ puṭṭho pabrūhi, mārisa.

8. Kāmesu nābhigijjheyya, manasānāvilo siyā, [1039]

kusalo sabbadhammānaṃ sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

Seize now this opportunity and raise
your difficulties,—yours, or Bāvari's,
or anyone's. Ask whatsoe'er you will.

[1030]

The All-Enlighten'd having granted leave,
first Ājitá took seat and folded palms
of humble supplication, as he asked
his question of the Lord who Found the Truth:—

[1031]

Ajita's Question (i)

Ajita: What shrouds the world? What stops its being seen? [1032]
And what defiles, what threatens it, say you?

The Lord: 'Tis Ignorance which shrouds the world; 'tis wants [1033]
and sloth which stop its being clearly seen.
Cravings (say I) defile, Ills threaten it.

Ajita: The tides of evil surge around. What force [1034]
can dam them? Say what curb have they? what bar?

The Lord: 'Tis mindfulness dams evil's tides. They have [1035]
a curb (say I);—'tis Knowledge bars their flow.

Ajita: Prithee, take knowledge, and take mindfulness, [1036]
and with them Individuality.
I pray you say what lays this last to rest?

The Lord: Your question, Ājitá, I answer thus:— [1037]
Ere Individuality can cease,
th' informing mind must first be laid to rest.

Ajita: Take experts now, and aspirants, and men [1038]
at large. What way of life do you prescribe?

The Lord: To pleasure deaf, with undistracted mind, [1039]
above phenomena, leave house and home
to be an Almsman watchful and alert.

TISSAMETTEYYAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (ii)

1. Ko 'dha santusito loke? Kassa no santi iñjitā? [1040]
 (*icc-āyasmā Tisso Metteyyo*)
 Ko ubhanta-m-abhiññāya majjhe mantā na lippati?
 Kaṃ brūsi 'mahāpuriso' ti? Ko idha sibbanim accagā?
2. Kāmesu brahmacariyavā vītataṇho sadā sato [1041]
 (*Metteyyāti Bhagavā*)
 saṃkhāya nibbuto bhikkhu, tassa no santi iñjitā;
3. so ubhanta-m-abhiññāya majjhe mantā na lippati; [1042]
 taṃ brūmi 'mahāpuriso' ti; so idha sibbanim accagā ti.

PUṆṆAKAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (iii)

1. Anejaṃ mūladassāviṃ (*icc-āyasmā Puṇṇako*) [1043]
 atthi pañhena āgamaṃ—
 Kiṃ nissitā isayo manujā
 khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṃ
 yaññaṃ akappayimsu puthū 'dha loke?
 —Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ.
2. Ye kec' ime isayo manujā (*Puṇṇakāti Bhagavā*) [1044]
 khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṃ
 yaññaṃ akappayimsu puthū 'dha loke,
 āsimsamānā, Puṇṇaka, itthabhāvaṃ
 jaraṃ sitā yaññaṃ akappayimsu.
3. Ye kec' ime isayo manujā (*icc-āyasmā Puṇṇako*) [1045]
 khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṃ
 yaññaṃ akappayimsu puthū 'dha loke,
 kacci-ssu te, Bhagavā, yaññaṃ pathe appamattā
 atāru' jātīṃ ca jaraṃ ca, mārisa?
 —Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ.
4. Āsimsanti thomayanti abhijappanti juhanti [1046]
 (*Puṇṇakāti Bhagavā*)
 kāmābhijappanti paṭicca lābhaṃ.
 Te yājayogā bhavarāgarattā
 nātarimsu jātijaraṃ ti brūmi.

Tissa Metteyya's Question (ii)

Tissa Metteyya: Who lives content? Who feels no waverings? [1040]
 Who, seeing both extremes, has wit to tread
 a middle path between them, undefiled?
 Who ranks as Superman? Who conquers Wants?

The Lord: The man 'mid pleasures virtuous, devoid- [1041]
 of Cravings, watchful, always on his guard,
 the Almsman who has thought his way to bliss,
 —his fixed mind no waverings beset.

He, seeing both extremes, has wit to tread [1042]
 a middle path between them, undefiled.
 —Him I call 'Superman'; he conquers Wants.

Puṇṇaka's Question (iii)

Puṇṇaka: O thou who cravest nought, whose eye can see [1043]
 the roots of things, a question here I bring.
 Tell me why hosts of sages—nobly born,
 or brahmins—sacrificed on earth to gods?
 Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

The Lord: Because—when old—these hosts [1044]
 of sages cherished hopes
 by sacrifice to gods
 to win some earthy bliss.

Puṇṇaka: But did their tireless zeal [1045]
 for sacrificing save
 these men from birth and eld?
 Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

The Lord: They crave, they laud, they pray, they sacrifice! [1046]
 Praying to be repaid
 in pleasures sensory,
 these sacrificing folk
 who pine for future life
 —have *not* 'scaped birth and eld.

5. Te ce nātariṃsu yājayogā (*icc-āyasmā Puṇṇako*) [1047]
 yaññehi jātiñ ca jarañ ca, mārisa,
 atha ko carahi devamanussaloke
 atāri jātiñ ca jarañ ca, mārisa?
 —Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ.

6. Saṃkhāya lokasmiṃ parôparāni (*Puṇṇakāti Bhagavā*) [1048]
 yass' iñjitaṃ na 'tthi kuhiñci loke,
 santo vidhūmo anigho nirāso
 atāri so jātijaran ti brūmīti.

METTAGŪMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (iv)

1. Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ. [1049]
 (*icc-āyasmā Mettagū*)

maññāmi taṃ vedaguṃ bhāvitattaṃ:
 Kuto nu dukkhā samudāgatā ime
 ye keci lokasmiṃ anekarūpā?

2. Dukkassa ve maṃ pabhavaṃ apucchasi; [1050]
 (*Mettagūti Bhagavā*)

taṃ te pavakkhāmi yathā pajānaṃ:—
 Upadhiniḍānā pabhavanti dukkhā
 ye keci lokasmiṃ anekarūpā.

3. Yo ve avidvā upadhiṃ karoti, [1051]
 punappunaṃ dukkham upeti mando.
 Tasmā pajānaṃ upadhiṃ na kayirā
 dukkhassa jātipabhavānupassī.

4. Yan taṃ apucchimha, akittayi no. [1052]
 Aññaṃ taṃ pucchāma; tad ingha brūhi.
 Kathaṃ nu dhīrā vitaranti oghaṃ
 jātijaraṃ sokapariddavañ ca?
 Tam me, muni, sādhu viyākarohi;
 tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.

Puṇṇaka: If sacrifices fail
to save their votaries
from birth and eld, say who
of men and gods is saved?
Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

[1047]

The Lord: The man whose thought has scanned
the universe entire,
who knows no waverings,
who, good without a trace
of smould'ring vice, is free
from tremors or desires,
—*he*'s saved from birth and eld.

[1048]

Mettagū's Question (iv)

Mettagū: I ask thee, Lord, to say
(for, versed in lore and schooled
I deem thee) whence arise
life's teeming, varied Ills?

[1049]

The Lord: You ask me whence come Ills;
that knowledge I'll impart.
—From Transmigration spring
life's teeming varied Ills.

[1050]

The fool who starts that round,
through crassness drees a weird
of oft-repeated Ills.
Be warned, then; realize
Ills' birth and origin;
start not that gruesome round.

[1051]

Mettagū: That answers what I asked.
Vouchsafe to answer this:—
Pray, how do saints o'ercome
life's welter, birth, and eld,
wailing and sorrow's pangs?
Expound this, sage, for clear
this outlook is to thee.

[1052]

5. Kittayissāmi te dhammaṃ diṭṭhe dhamme anītihaṃ [1053]
 (Mettagūti Bhagavā)
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.
6. Tañ cāhaṃ abhinandāmi, mahesi, dhammam uttamaṃ [1054]
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.
7. Yaṃ kiñci sampajānāsi (Mettagūti Bhagavā) [1055]
 uddhaṃ adho tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe,
 etesu nandiṃ ca nivesanaṃ ca
 panujja viññāṇaṃ bhava na tiṭṭhe.
8. Evaṃ-vihārī sato appamatto [1056]
 bhikkhu caraṃ hitvā mamāyitāni
 jātijaraṃ sokapariddavaṃ ca
 idh' eva vidvā pajaheyya dukkhaṃ.
9. Etābhinandāmi vaco mahesino [1057]
 sukittitaṃ, Gotam', anūpadhikaṃ.
 Addhā hi Bhagavā pahāsi dukkhaṃ;
 tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.
10. Te cāpi nūna pajaheyyu' dukkhaṃ [1058]
 ye tvaṃ, muni, aṭṭhitaṃ ovadeyya.
 Taṃ taṃ namassāmi samecca, nāga.
 Appeva maṃ [Bhagavā] aṭṭhitaṃ ovadeyya.
11. Yaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ vedaguṃ abhijaññā [1059]
 akiñcanaṃ kāmabbhave asattaṃ,
 addhā hi so oghaṃ imaṃ atāri
 tiṇṇo ca pāraṃ akhilo akankho,

The Lord: That outlook I'll expound to thee:—"Tis here
and now; no hearsay vain. By grasping it,
the man who walks thereby in mindfulness
shall leave the world's entanglements behind.

[1053]

Mettagū: This matchless outlook, sage, rejoices me,
—to walk thereby in watchful mindfulness
and leave the world's entanglements behind.

[1054]

The Lord: Reject then smug delight
in what—here—anywhere—
senses report. Let not
your nature base its hopes
on mere existences.

[1055]

Thus minded, vigilant,
and zealous, Almsman, live
a life with nothing dear,
a life that, here on earth,
has plumbed old-age and birth,
wailing and sorrow's pangs,
and so sheds mortal Ills.

[1056]

Mettagū: It gladdens me to hear
sage Gotama extol
a state from life's stuff freed.
Assuredly the Lord
has shed all Ills, so clear
this outlook is to him.

[1057]

Those too shall shed all Ills
whom thou dost teach so well.
Wherefore, to thee I come
in adoration meet,
and crave thy teachings, Lord.

[1058]

The Lord: The man you recognize
as 'Brahmin rich in lore',
emancipate, unsnared
by appetites or life,
—has crossed the welter here
and reached the shore Beyond,
with open'd mind, doubt-free.

[1059]

12. vidvā ca so vedagu naro idha [1060]
 bhavābhavē sangam imāṃ visajja,
 so vitatanho anigho nirāso
 atāri so jātijaran ti brūmīti.

DHOTAKAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (v)

1. Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ; [1061]
(icc-āyasmā Dhotako)
 vācābhikankhāmi, mahesi, tuyhaṃ:
 tava sutvāna nigghosaṃ sikkhe nibbānam attano?
2. Tena h' ātappaṃ karoḥi; idh' eva nipako sato [1062]
(Dhotakāti Bhagavā)
 ito sutvāna nigghosaṃ sikkhe nibbānam attano.
3. Passāṃ' ahaṃ devamanussaloke [1063]
 akiñcanaṃ Brāhmaṇaṃ iriyamānaṃ.
 Taṃ taṃ namassāmi, samantacakkhu.
 Pamūñca maṃ, Sakka, kathaṃkathāhi.
4. Nāhaṃ samihāmi pamocanāya [1064]
 kathaṃkathim, Dhotaka, kañci loke.
 Dhammaṃ ca seṭṭhaṃ ājānamāno,
 evaṃ tuvaṃ ogham imaṃ taresi.
5. Anusāsa, Brahme, karuṇāyamāno [1065]
 vivekadhammaṃ, yaṃ ahaṃ vijaññaṃ
 yathāhaṃ, ākāso va avyāpajjamāno,
 idh' eva santo asito careyyaṃ.
6. Kittayissāmi te santim diṭṭhe dhamme anītihaṃ [1066]
(Dhotakāti Bhagavā)
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.
7. Taṃ cāhaṃ abhinandāmi, mahesi, santim uttamaṃ [1067]
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.

*He knows. His lore rejects
all lures of future life;
from cravings purged, devoid
of tremors or desires,
he's saved from birth and eld.*

[1060]

Dhotaka's Question (v)

Dhotaka: I ask thee, Lord, to tell, [1061]

I yearn to hear, how men
who hearken unto thee
can work salvation out.

The Lord: Be ardent! Here and now, [1062]

by hearkening to me,
shall thought and watchfulness
work man's salvation out.

Dhotaka: In thee, 'mong gods and men, [1063]

I find the 'Brahmin true'
who walks emancipate.
Wherefore, to thee I come
in adoration meet.
All-seeing Lord, free me
from doubts, great Sākyaṇ!

The Lord: No doubting heart do I [1064]

essay to free. Grasp first
this best of Doctrines; then
thou 'lt cross the welter here.

Dhotaka: In pity, Holy One, [1065]

teach me to live Aloof,
that I may clearly see
how—calm as th' ether—I
may dwell in freedom's peace.

The Lord: That peace will I expound to thee. 'Tis here [1066]

and now; 'tis based on thought, not hearsay vain.
Walk thou by it with constant watchfulness,
leaving the world's entanglements behind.

Dhotaka: This matchless peace, great sage, rejoices me, [1067]

—to walk thereby with constant watchfulness
and leave the world's entanglements behind!

8. Yaṃ kiñci sampajānāsi (Dhotakāti Bhagavā) [1068]
 uddhaṃ adho tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe,
 etaṃ viditvā 'sango' ti loke
 bhavābhavāya mā 'kāsi taṇhaṃ ti.

UPASĪVAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (vi)

1. Eko ahaṃ, Sakka, mahantaṃ oghaṃ [1069]
 (icc-āyasmā Upasīvo)
 anissito no viśahāmi tārituṃ.
 Ārammaṇaṃ brūhi, samantacakkhu,
 yaṃ nissito oghaṃ imaṃ tareyyaṃ.
2. Ākiñcaññaṃ pekkhamāno satimā [1070]
 (Upasīvāti Bhagavā)
 'Na 'tthīti' nissāya tarassu oghaṃ,
 kāme pahāya virato kathāhi
 taṇhakkhayaṃ nattamahābhipassa.
3. Sabbesu kāmesu yo vītaraḡo (icc-āyasmā Upasīvo) [1071]
 ākiñcaññaṃ nissito hitva-m-aññaṃ
 saññāvimokhe parame vimutto,
 tiṭṭhe nu so tattha anānuyāyi?
4. Sabbesu kāmesu yo vītaraḡo (Upasīvāti Bhagavā) [1072]
 ākiñcaññaṃ nissito hitva-m-aññaṃ,
 saññāvimokkhe parame 'dhimutto,
 tiṭṭheyya so tattha anānuyāyi.
5. Tiṭṭhe ce so tattha anānuyāyi, [1073]
 pūgaṃ pi vassānaṃ, samantacakkhu,
 tatth' eva so sītisiyā vimutto,
 cavetha viññānaṃ tathāvidhassa?
6. Accī yathā vātavegena khitto (Upasīvāti Bhagavā) [1074]
 atthaṃ paleti, na upeti sankhaṃ,
 —evaṃ munī nāmakāyā vimutto
 atthaṃ paleti, na upeti sankhaṃ.

The Lord: Reject then smug delight
 in what—here—anywhere—
 senses report, and know
 'tis but a worldly snare;
 crave not for 'life to come'!

[1068]

Upasīva's Question (vi)

Upasīva: Alone, without support,
 great Sákya, I should fail
 to win across life's surge.
 Seer, what support will bear
 a man in safety o'er?

[1069]

The Lord: Th' inherent Nothingness
 of things discern. Make this
 conviction—'Naught abides!'—
 support thee safely o'er.
 Scorn pleasures; gossip not;
 strive day and night—each hour—
 cravings to extirpate.

[1070]

Upasīva: Will he whom pleasures tempt
 no more, who cleaves to nought
 save Nothingness alone,
 who from Perceptions wins
 entire Deliverance,
 —will he ne'er fall away?

[1071]

The Lord: The man whom pleasures tempt
 no more, who cleaves to nought
 save Nothingness alone,
 who from Perceptions wins
 entire Deliverance,
 —will never fall away.

[1072]

Upasīva: If, as the years roll on,
 he never falls away
 when Fever's fires are quenched,
 —will Personality
 be born with him again?

[1073]

The Lord: As flame blown out by wind
 is lost to cognizance,
 e'en so the sage, released
 from whilom qualities,
 has disappeared from ken.

[1074]

7. Atthangato so uda vā so na 'tthi
udāhu ve sassatiyā arogo?
Tam me, muni, sādhu viyākarohi,
tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo. [1075]
8. Atthangatassa na pamāṇam atthi; (*Upasivāti Bhagavā*) [1076]
yena nañ vajju, tañ tassa na 'tthi;
sabbesu dhammesu samūhatesu,
samūhatā vādapathā pi sabbe ti.

NANDAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (vii)

1. 'Santi loke munayo' (*icc-āyasmā Nando*) [1077]
janā vadanti. Ta-y-idañ kathañ su?
Ñāṇūpapannañ no muninñ vadanti
udāhu ve jīvitenaṇṇapannañ?
2. Na diṭṭhiyā na sutiya na ñāṇena [1078]
munidha, Nanda, kusalā vadanti.
Visenikatvā anighā nīrāsā
caranti ye, te munayo ti brūmi.
3. Ye kec' ime samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*icc-āyasmā Nando*) [1079]
diṭṭhe sutenāpi vadanti suddhiñ,
sīlabbatenāpi vadanti suddhiñ,
anekarūpena vadanti suddhiñ,
—kacci ssu te [Bhagavā] tattha yatā carantā
atāru' jātiñ ca jarañ ca, mārisa?
Pucchāmi tañ, Bhagavā; brūhi me tañ.
4. Ye kec' ime samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*Nandāti Bhagavā*) [1080]
diṭṭhe sutenāpi vadanti suddhiñ,
sīlabbatenāpi vadanti suddhiñ,
anekarūpena vadanti suddhiñ,
—kiñcāpi te tattha yatā caranti,
nātarimṣu jātijaran ti brūmi.

Upasiva: Does he who 'disappears'
quite cease to be? or last
for ever hale and strong?
Explain this, sage; for, clear
to thee this outlook shows. [1075]

The Lord: Whoso thus 'disappears'
is measureless; he keeps
nothing that can be named.
When attributes have gone,
denoting terms go too. [1076]

Nanda's Question (vii)

Nanda: Men talk of 'sages here'. [1077]
What mean they? Is it lore
that constitutes a sage?
or is it mode of life?

The Lord: 'Tis not for 'views' he holds, [1078]
insight, or garner'd lore,
that experts style him 'sage'.
Sages, say I, are those
who conquer in the fight
and have no hopes or wants.

Nanda: Brahmins and anchorites [1079]
who say that Purity
resides in views, or lore,
or works, or ritual,
or in what things they will,
—have they 'scaped birth and eld?
Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

The Lord: Brahmins and anchorites [1080]
who say that 'Purity'
resides in 'views', or lore,
or works, or ritual,
or in what things they will,
—have *not* 'scaped birth and eld.

5. Ye kec' ime samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*icc-āyasmā Nando*) [1081]
 diṭṭhe sutenāpi vadanti suddhiṃ,
 sīlabbatenāpi vadanti suddhiṃ,
 anekarūpena vadanti suddhiṃ,
 te ce, muni, brūsi anoghatipṇe,
 atha ko carahi devamanussaloke
 atāri jātiṃ ca jaraṃ ca, mārisa?
 Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ.
6. Nāham sabbe samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*Nandāti Bhagavā*) [1082]
 jātijarāya nivutā ti brūmi.
 Ye sīdha diṭṭhaṃ va sutarṃ mutarṃ vā,
 sīlabbatarṃ vā pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 anekarūpam pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 taṇhaṃ pariññāya anāsavāse,
 —te ve narā oghatiṇṇā ti brūmi.
7. Etābhinandāmi vaco mahesino [1083]
 sukittitarṃ, Gotam', anūpadhikaṃ.
 Ye sīdha diṭṭhaṃ va sutarṃ mutarṃ vā,
 sīlabbatarṃ vā pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 anekarūpam pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 taṇhaṃ pariññāya anāsavāse,
 —aham pi te oghatiṇṇā ti brūmi.

HEMAKAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (viii)

1. Ye me pubbe viyākaṃsu—huraṃ Gotamasāsanā: [1084]
 (*icc-āyasmā Hemako*)
 icc-āsi, iti bhavissati, sabbaṃ taṃ itihitihaṃ,
 sabbaṃ taṃ takkavaḍḍhanaṃ; nāhaṃ tattha abhiramiṃ.
2. Tvaṃ ca me dhammaṃ akkhāhi taṇhānigghātanaṃ, muni, [1085]
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.
3. Idha diṭṭhasutamutaviññātesu piyarūpesu, Hemaka, [1086]
 chandarāgavinodanaṃ, Nibbānapadam accutarṃ,
4. —etad aññāya ye satā diṭṭhadhammābhinibbutā [1087]
 upasantā ca te sadā, tiṇṇā loka visattikaṃ ti.

Nanda: If you say all those fail,
 who hold that 'Purity'
 resides in 'views' or lore,
 or works, or ritual,
 or in whatever else,
 —what god or man succeeds?
 Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

[1081]

The Lord: I do not say that all
 brahmins and anchorites
 are mewed in birth and eld.
 'Safe o'er the Flood' are they
 who sense-impressions scout,
 scout works and ritual
 (and whatsoever else),
 plumb Cravings, Cankers shed.

[1082]

Nanda: It gladdens me to hear
 sage Gotama extol
 this state from life's stuff freed.
 Yes; 'o'er the Flood' are they
 who sense-impressions scout,
 scout works and ritual
 (and whatsoever else),
 plumb Cravings, Cankers shed.

[1083]

Hemaka's Question (viii)

Hemaka: The only things I learned from those who taught
 me, till I heard what Gotama proclaimed,
 were hearsay origins and destinies,
 —mere hearsay, fostering perplexities,
 which failed to satisfy my heart within.

[1084]

Expound to me the Doctrine, sage, which roots
 all Cravings out and teaches men to walk
 in mindfulness, escaping worldly snares.

[1085]

The Lord: Nirvāna's Way eternal will dispel
 the hot pursuit on earth of mundane joys;
 and they who, grasping this, have 'passed away'
 while yet in mindfulness on earth they dwell,
 —these sons of peace have done with worldly snares.

[1086]

[1087]

TODEYYAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (ix)

1. Yasmiṃ kāmā na vasanti, taṇhā yassa na vijjati, [1088]
(icc-āyasmā Todeyyo)
katharṅkathā ca yo tiṇṇo, vimokkho tassa kīdiso?
2. Yasmiṃ kāmā na vasanti, taṇhā yassa na vijjati, [1089]
(Todeyyāti Bhagavā)
katharṅkathā ca yo tiṇṇo, vimokkho tassa nāparo.
3. Nirāsaso so uda āsasāno? [1090]
Paññāṇavā so uda paññakappi?
Muniṃ ahaṃ, Sakka, yathā vijaññaṃ,
tam me viyācikkha, samantacakkhu.
4. Nirāsaso so, na so āsasāno, [1091]
paññāṇavā so, na ca paññakappi;
—evam pi, Todeyya, muniṃ vijāna
akiñcanaṃ kāmabhava asattan ti.

KAPPAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (x)

1. Majjhe sarasmiṃ tiṭṭhataṃ (icc-āyasmā Kappo) [1092]
oghe jāte mahabbhaye
jarāmaccuparetānaṃ dīpaṃ pabrūhi, mārisa,
tvaṃ ca me dīpaṃ akkhāhi yatha-y-idaṃ nāparaṃ siyā.
2. Majjhe sarasmiṃ tiṭṭhataṃ (Kappāti Bhagavā) [1093]
oghe jāte mahabbhaye
jarāmaccuparetānaṃ dīpaṃ pabrūmi, Kappa, te;
3. —akiñcanaṃ anādānaṃ etaṃ dīpaṃ anāparaṃ; [1094]
'Nibbānaṃ' iti naṃ brūmi jarāmaccuparikkhayaṃ.

Todeyya's Question (ix)

Todeyya: If appetites no longer dwell within,
if Cravings ne'er arise nor doubts persist,
—say, what Release has such a man attained? [1088]

The Lord: If appetites no longer dwell within,
if Cravings ne'er arise nor doubts persist,
—final Release has such a man attained. [1089]

Todeyya: Longs he for anything?
Or are all longings dead?
Has he won lore? Or must
he still amass fresh lore?
All-seeing Sákyañ,
answer me this, that I
may recognize 'a sage'. [1090]

The Lord: He longs for nothing now;
all longings now are dead.
All lore is won, nor need
he still amass fresh lore.
By this too recognize
'a sage',—that what he was
has passed away, and now
he stands beyond the reach
of pleasures and rebirth. [1091]

Kappa's Question (x)

Kappa: Reveal to those whom fearsome tides surround,
reveal to those forspent with eld and death,
an island citadel. Point out to me
an island where all this will be no more. [1092]

The Lord: Kappa, for those whom fearsome tides surround,
for those forspent with eld, forspent with death,
an island citadel exists (say I). [1093]

Nirvāna is that island's name; and there
the old has passed away and nothing fresh
can lodgment find; no more come death and eld. [1094]

4. Etad aññāya ye satā diṭṭhadhammābhiniibbutā,
na te Māraśānugā, na te Mārassa paddhagū ti. [1095]

JATUKAÑṆIMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (xi)

1. Sutvān' ahañ Viram akāmakāmiñ
(*icc-āyasmā Jatukañṇi*) [1096]
oghātigañ puṭṭhum akāmam āgamañ.
Santipadañ brūhi, sahājanetta,
yathātacchañ, Bhagavā, brūhi me tañ,
2. Bhagavā hi kāme abhibhuyya iriyati, [1097]
Ādicco va paṭhaviñ teji tejasā;
parittapaññassa me, bhūripañña,
ācikkha Dhammam yañ ahañ vijaññañ
jātijaṛāya idha vippahānañ.
3. Kāmesu vinaya gedhañ, nekkhammañ daṭṭhu khemato, [1098]
(*Jatukañṇi Bhagavā*)
uggahitañ nirattañ vā mā te vijjittha kiñcanañ.
4. Yañ pubbe tañ visosehi; pacchā te māhu kiñcanañ; [1099]
majjhe ce no gaheśasi, upasanto carissasi.
5. Sabbaso nāmarūpasmim vītagedhassa, brāhmaṇa, [1100]
āśavā 'ssa na vijjanti yehi maccuvasañ vaje ti.

BHADRĀVUDHAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (xii)

1. Okañjahañ taṇhacchidañ anejañ [1101]
(*icc-āyasmā Bhadrāvudho*)
nandiñjahañ oghatiṇṇañ vimuttañ
kappañjahañ abhiyāce sumedhañ;
sutvāna nāgassa apanamiśanti ito

And they who, grasping this, have 'passed away'
while yet in mindfulness on earth they dwell,
are not the thralls of Māra, nor his slaves.

[1095]

Jatukannī's Question (xi)

Jatukannī: News of a 'Victor', dead
to appetites, and safe
beyond this welter, brings
me here to beg the Lord
(on whom omniscience
flashed sudden and entire)
to shew the way of Peace.

[1096]

For, as the sunlight dominates
the earth, so moves the sov'ran Lord
to dominate o'er appetites.

[1097]

Sage, teach my ignorance
thy Truth, that I on earth
may slough mortality.

The Lord: Get rid of appetite for pleasure's gauds;
peace in Renunciation find; let nought
find lodgment, nought require to be expelled.

[1098]

Consume to ashes past iniquities;
thereafter let no fresh defilement grow;
if—meantime—thou contract no current guilt,
thy feet shall tread the tranquil path of Peace.

[1099]

If, brahmin, Personality has lost
its fascination, Cankers never rise
to bind man thrall and vassal unto Death.

[1100]

Bhadrāvudha's Question (xii)

Bhadrāvudha: I pray the Lord who left
his home and Cravings quenched,
who scorned delights, who crossed
the Flood, and in Release
shed Time, and wisdom found!
We wait an utterance,
great saint, ere we depart

[1101]

2. nānā janā janapadehi sangatā, [1102]
tava, Vira, vākyam abhikamkhamānā.
Tesaṃ tuvaṃ sādhu viyākarohi,
tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.
3. Ādānataṇhaṃ vinayetha sabbaṃ [1103]
(*Bhadrāvudhāti Bhagavā*)
uddhaṃ adho tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe.
Yaṃ yaṃ hi lokasmim upādiyanti,
ten' eva Māro anveti jantum.
4. Tasmā pajānaṃ na upādiyetha [1104]
bhikkhu sato kiñcanaṃ sabbaloke,
ādānasatte iti pekkhamāno
pajaṃ imaṃ maccudheyye visattan ti.

UDAYAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (xiii)

1. Jhāyīm virajaṃ āsīnaṃ katakiccaṃ anāsavaṃ [1105]
(*icc-āyasmā Udayo*)
pāragum sabbadhammānaṃ atthi pañhena āgamaṃ:
aññāvimokkhaṃ pabrūhi, avijjāya pabhedanaṃ.
2. Pahānaṃ kāmaccchandānaṃ domanassāna' cūbhayaṃ, [1106]
(*Udayāti Bhagavā*)
thīnassa ca paṇūdanaṃ, kukkuccānaṃ nivāraṇaṃ,
3. upekkhāsatisamsuddhaṃ dhammatakkapurejavanaṃ, [1107]
—aññāvimokkhaṃ pabrūmi avijjāya pabhedanaṃ.
4. Kiṃ-su-saṃyojano loko? Kiṃ su tassa vicāraṇaṃ? [1108]
Ki' ss' assa vippahānena nibbānaṃ iti vuccati?
5. Nandisaṃyojano loko; vitakk' assa vicāraṇā; [1109]
taṇhāya vippahānena nibbānaṃ iti vuccati.
6. Kathaṃ satassa carato viññāṇaṃ uparujjhati? [1110]
Bhagavantam puṭṭhum āgama taṃ suṇoma vaco tava.
7. Ajjhatañ ca bahiddhā ca vedanaṃ nābhinandato [1111]
evaṃ satassa carato viññāṇaṃ uparujjhatīti.

who come from divers lands
to hear the Victor's words.
Make all things clear; since clear
this Doctrine is to thee.

[1102]

The Lord: Shed Cravings to acquire
aught here, or anywhere;
what men assimilate
brings Māra close at heel.

[1103]

So, realizing this,
let mindful Almsmen cleave
to nothing in this world,
but view as "Cravings' slaves"
mankind in Māra's toils.

[1104]

Udaya's Question (xiii)

Udaya: To him who stainless sits in Reverie,
with task fulfilled, with Cankers gone, and versed
in ev'ry mental state, I come to ask
this question:—Tell me how can ignorance
be quenched, till Knowledge brings Deliverance.

[1105]

The Lord: It comes from shedding appetite for joys
and griefs, from quelling Crassness of the mind,
from stoutly keeping evil deeds at bay;

[1106]

it comes (say I) with poise and watchfulness;
it follows in the train of thinking right.

[1107]

Udaya: What fetters, what explores, the world around?
What must be dropped before 'Nirvāna' comes?

[1108]

The Lord: Joys fetter, thought explores, the world around;
Cravings must cease before 'Nirvāna' comes.

[1109]

Udaya: How must man walk in watchful mindfulness
to dissipate the heritage of mind?
—We come to ask the Lord to tell us that.

[1110]

The Lord: Till feelings—inly bred, or from without—
have ceased to fill the heart with wonted joy,
—on must man walk in watchful mindfulness
to dissipate the heritage of mind.

[1111]

POSĀLAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (xiv)

1. Yo atītaṃ ādisati anejo chinnaśaṃsayo, [1112]
 (icc-āyasmā Posālo)
 pāraguṃ sabbadhammānaṃ atthi pañhena āgamaṃ:—
2. Vibhūtarūpasaññissa sabbakāyappahāyino [1113]
 ajjhataṇi ca bahiddhā ca 'Na 'tthi kiñcīti' passato,
 ñāṇaṃ Sakkānupucchāmi: Kathaṃ neyyo tathāvidho?
3. Viññāṇaṭṭhitiyo sabbā (Posālāti Bhagavā) [1114]
 abhijānaṃ, Tathāgato
 tiṭṭhantaṃ enaṃ jānāti: Vimuttaṃ tapparāyanaṃ.
4. Ākiñcaññasambhavaṃ ñatvā: Nandī saṃyojanaṃ iti, [1115]
 evaṃ etaṃ abhiññāya tato tattha vipassati:
 Etaṃ ñāṇaṃ tathaṃ tassa Brāhmaṇassa vusīmato ti.

MOGHARĀJAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (xv)

1. Dvāhaṃ Sakkaṃ apucchissaṃ, na me vyākāsi cakkhumā. [1116]
 (icc-āyasmā Mogharājā)
 Yāvataṭṭhiyaṇi ca devīsi vyākarotīti me sutaṃ.
2. Ayaṃ loko paro loko brahmaloko sadevako; [1117]
 diṭṭhin te nābhijānāmi Gotamassa yasassino.
3. Evaṃ abhikkantadassāvaṃ atthi pañhena āgamaṃ:— [1118]
 Kathaṃ lokaṃ avekkhantaṃ Maccurājā na passati?
4. Suññato lokaṃ avekkhassu, Mogharāja, sadā sato [1119]
 attānudiṭṭhiṃ ūhacca;—evaṃ maccutaro siyā,
 evaṃ lokaṃ avekkhantaṃ Maccurājā na passatīti.

Posāla's Question (xiv)

Posāla: I come to question him who reads the past,
who yearns for nothing, entertains no doubts,
and sounds the depths of ev'ry mental state. [1112]

I ask thee, Sākyán, what lore is his [1113]
who scans the Formless, disregards mere Form,
and finds—within, without—just Nothingness.
I ask:—Can such a man go further still?

The Lord: Through comprehending each and ev'ry stage [1114]
which mind's accumulations reach, He knows
(who 'found the Truth'), the stage attained by him
you cite and what Release his stage ensures.

Your Brahmin who has greatly lived, has grasped [1115]
from whence proceeds the sense of Nothingness,
and comprehended joys as 'binding chains',
—Such knowledge true your Brahmin has achieved.

Mogharāja's Question (xv)

Mogharāja: 'Twice have I asked thee, Sākyán, yet got [1116]
no answer. 'But the third time' (rumour says)
'the godlike sage at last vouchsafes reply.'

Thy views of this and other worlds and skies [1117]
I know not, Gotama, but hither come

to ask of thee, thou sage supreme, the way [1118]
to view the world, to be unseen by Death.

The Lord: Then never cease to view the world as void, [1119]
abjuring 'Personality', till Death
be overthrown, and thou by him unseen.

PINGIYAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (xvi)

1. Jiṇṇo 'ham asmi abalo vītavaṇṇo, [1120]
(icc-āyasmā Pingiyo)
nettā na suddhā, savanaṃ na phāsu;
māhaṃ nassaṃ momuho antarāya;
ācikkha Dhammaṃ yam ahaṃ vijāññaṃ
jātijarāya idha vippahānaṃ.
2. Disvāna rūpesu vihaññaṃmāne, [1121]
(Pingiyāti Bhagavā)
—ruppanti rūpesu janā pamattā—
tasmā tuvaṃ, Pingiya, appamatto
jahassu rūpaṃ apunabbhavāya.
3. Disā catasso, vidisā catasso, [1122]
uddhaṃ, adho,—dasa disā imāyo.
na tuyhaṃ adiṭṭhaṃ asutaṃ mutaṃ vā
atho aviññātaṃ kiñci na 'tthi loke.
Ācikkha Dhammaṃ yam ahaṃ vijāññaṃ
jātijarāya idha vippahānaṃ.
4. Taṇhādhipanne manuje pekkhamāno [1123]
(Pingiyāti Bhagavā)
santāpajāte jarasā parete
tasmā tuvaṃ, Pingiya, appamatto
jahassu taṇhaṃ apunabbhavāyāti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā Magadhesu viharanto Pāsāpake cetiye paricāraka-
soḷasānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ ajjhīṭṭho puṭṭho puṭṭho pañhe vyākasi. Ekamekassa
ce pi pañhassa attham aññāya dhammam aññāya dhammānudhammaṃ paṭi-
pajjeyya, gaccheyy' eva jarāmaraṇassa pāraṃ; 'Pārangamanīyā ime dhammā'
ti, tasmā imassa dhammapariyāyassa 'Pārāyanan' t' eva adhivacanāṃ.

-
1. Ajito, Tissa-Metteyyo, Puṇṇako, atha Mettagū, [1124]
Dhotako, Upasīvo ca, Nando ca, atha Hemako,

Pingiya's Question (xvi)

Pingiya: Worn out am I and frail, [1120]
 squalid to view, purblind,
 and hard my hearing grows.
 Lest I in folly die,
 teach me on earth to learn
 how birth and eld to end.

The Lord: In view of th' havoc wrought [1121]
 in men by things of sense
 (senses plague heedless men!),
 take heed to scout them all
 and so escape rebirth.

Pingiya: Ten realms there are in all:— [1122]
 above, beneath; north, south,
 east, west, and four between;
 in none of these has aught
 escaped thy mind or ken!
 Teach me on earth to learn
 how birth and eld to end.

The Lord: Observing Craving's slaves [1123]
 harassed and spent with eld,
 take heed, O Pingiya,
 and diligently seek
 to root all Craving out
 and so escape rebirth.

Thus spoke the Lord as he was dwelling among the people of Magadha at Rock-Shrine, when, in response to the train of sixteen brahmins, he answered all their successive questions. Anyone who, comprehending the import of each several question and the Doctrine involved, walks conformably to the plenitude of the Doctrine, will assuredly pass beyond death and eld. For such states of mind 'conduct to the shore beyond'; and therefore this exposition of Doctrine is styled—'The Way Across'.

Came Ājitá and Tissa Méteyyá [1124]
 and Púṇṇaká and kindly Méttagú,
 with Ūpasīva, Nanda, Dhótaká,

2. Todeyya-Kappā dubhayo, Jatukaṇṇī ca paṇḍito, [1125]
 Bhadrāvudho, Udayo ca, Posālo cāpi brāhmaṇo,
 Mogharājā ca medhāvī, Pingiyo ca mahā isi,
3. —ete Buddhaṃ upāgañchurū sampannacaraṇaṃ isin, [1126]
 pucchantā nipuṇe pañhe Buddhaseṭṭhaṃ upāgamurū.
4. Tesaṃ Buddho vyākāsi pañhe puṭṭho yathātathaṃ; [1127]
 pañhānaṃ veyyākaraṇena tosesi brāhmaṇe Muni.
5. Te tositā cakkhumatā Buddhen' Ādiccabandhuna [1128]
 brahmacariyam acarimsu varapaññiassa santike.
6. Ekamekassa pañhassa yathā Buddhena desitaṃ [1129]
 tathā yo paṭipajjeyya, gacche pāraṃ apārato,
7. apārā pāraṃ gaccheyya bhāvento maggam uttamaṃ. [1130]
 Maggo so pārangamanāya; tasmā 'Pārāyanam' iti.

8. Pārāyanam anugāyissam; (*icc-āyasmā Pingiyo*) [1131]
 yathā addakkhi tathā akkhāsi vimalo bhūrimedhaso
 nikkāmo nibbano Nāgo. Kissa hetu musā bhaye?

9. Pahīnamalamohassa mānamakkhappahāyino [1132]
 handāhaṃ kittayissāmi giraṃ vaṇṇūpasamhitam:—

10. Tamonudo Buddho samantacakkhu [1133]
 lokantagū sabbabhavātivatto
 anāsavo sabbadukkhappahīno
 Saccavhaya, brahme, upāsito me.

11. Dijo yathā kubbanakam pahāya [1134]
 bahupphalaṃ kānanaṃ āvaseyya,
 evam p' ahaṃ appadasse pahāya
 mahodadhiṃ haṃsor iv' ajjhapatto.

and Hémaká, Todéyya, Káppa too,
the learned Jatukannī, Údayá,
Bhadrávuđhá, the brahmin Póśālá,
quick Móggharājā, Píngiyá the sage.

[1125]

These came to Buddha, blameless sage, and asked
their searching questions of the matchless Lord,
who answer'd all they asked with words of truth
which satisfied those brahmins in their quest.

[1126]

[1127]

And, being satisfied, they all embraced
the higher life as followers convinced
of that all-seeing Kinsman of the Sun,
Lord of Enlightenment, supreme in Lore.

[1128]

Now, whoso walks as Buddha's answers teach,
shall win Across and gain the Shore Beyond,

[1129]

—shall win across, along that Way of Ways
which guides men safely o'er the surge of life
and so is rightly styled 'the Way Across'.

[1130]

[*Píngiya to Bāvarī (on return).*]

'The Way Across' my lips shall now proclaim.
As he discerned it, so he set it forth,
—that spotless, wisest Lord, above delights
and yearnings. Wherefore should he publish lies?

[1131]

Come, let me tell the lovely utterance
of him whom crassness smirches not, nor pride
besets, nor foul hypocrisy invades:—

[1132]

The darkness he dispels,
—the Buddha, who sees all,
who plumbs the universe,
and overcomes rebirth,
in whom no Cankers dwell,
who triumphs o'er all Ill.
Brahmin, I serve 'Truth's Lord'.

[1133]

As birds desert the brake
for woodlands bountiful,
so I quit teachers blind
and, like the swan, have gained
the ocean's amplitude.

[1134]

12. Ye 'me pubbe viyākamsu huram Gotamasāsanā
—icc-āsi, iti bhavissati—sabban tam itihītiham,
sabban tam takkavaḍḍhanam. [1135]
13. Eko tamanudāsino jātīmā so pabhamkaro
Gotamo bhūripaṇṇāpo, Gotamo bhūrimedhaso, [1136]
14. yo me dhammam adesesi sandiṭṭhikam akālikam
taṇhakkhayam anītikam yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci. [1137]
15. Kin nu tamhā vippavasasi muhuttam api, Pingiya,
Gotamā bhūripaṇṇāpā, Gotamā bhūrimedhasā, [1138]
16. yo te dhammam adesesi sandiṭṭhikam akālikam
taṇhakkhayam anītikam yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci? [1139]
17. Nāham tamhā vippavasāmi muhuttam api, brāhmaṇa,
Gotamā bhūripaṇṇāpā, Gotamā bhūrimedhasā, [1140]
18. yo me dhammam adesesi sandiṭṭhikam akālikam
taṇhakkhayam anītikam yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci. [1141]
19. Passāmi nam manasā cakkhunā va
rattindivam, brāhmaṇa, appamatto;
namassamāno vivasemi rattiṃ;
—ten' eva maññāmi avippavāsam. [1142]
20. Saddhā ca pīti ca mano satī ca
nāpenti me Gotamasāsanamhā;
yam yam disam vajati bhūripaṇṇo,
sa tena ten' eva nato 'ham asmi. [1143]
21. Jīṇassa me dubbalathāmakassa
ten' eva kāyo na pareti tattha.
Samkappayattāya vajāmi niccam.
Mano hi me, brāhmaṇa, tena yutto. [1144]

The only things I learned from those who taught [1135]
 me, ere I heard what Gotama proclaimed,
 were hearsay origins and destinies,
 —mere hearsay, fostering perplexities.

As in lone splendour shines a matchless gem, [1136]
 dispelling darkness, spreading light around,
 —so shines th' abounding lore of Gotama
 and his abounding wit to comprehend.

From him I learn'd his Doctrine,—potent here [1137]
 and now, yet outside time—which, utterly
 destroying Cravings, brings man saving health,
 —that peerless Doctrine without counterpart.

Bāvari: Why then absent yourself one moment's space [1138]
 from Gotama's abounding wit and lore,

from whom you learn'd his Doctrine,—potent here [1139]
 and now, yet outside time—which, utterly
 destroying Cravings, brings man saving health,
 —that peerless Doctrine, without counterpart?

Pṅgiyā: I am not absent, sir, one moment's space [1140]
 from Gotama's abounding wit and lore,

from whom I learn'd his Doctrine,—potent here [1141]
 and now, yet outside time—which, utterly
 destroying Cravings, brings man saving health,
 —that peerless Doctrine, without counterpart.

My mind has eyes to see [1142]
 him, brahmin, night and day;
 in lauding him I spend
 my nights, and never seem
 from him to be away.

His teachings still engage [1143]
 faith, zest, mind, vigilance;
 and wheresoe'er he turns,
 I too am thither drawn.

Worn out and frail am I, [1144]
 so that my body fails
 to hasten thither where
 my thoughts consort with him
 to whom my mind cleaves fast.

22. Panke sayāno pariphandamāno [1145]
 dipā dipam upallaviṃ.
 Ath' addasāsiṃ Sambuddham oghatiṇṇam anāsavam.

23. Yathā ahu Vakkali muttasaddho [1146]
 Bhadrāvudho Āḷavi-Gotamo ca,
 evam eva tvam pi pamuñcassu saddham
 gamissasi tvam, Pingiya, maccudheyyapāram.

24. Esa bhiyyo pasīdāmi sutvāna munino vaco. [1147]
 Vivaṭacchado Sambuddho akhilo paṭibhānavā

25. adhideve abhiññāya sabbariṃ vedi parovaram, [1148]
 pañhān' antakaro Satthā kankhīnam paṭijānatam.

26. Asamhīram asamkuppariṃ yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci [1149]
 addhā gamissāmi; na m' ettha kankhā.
 —Evaṃ maṃ dhārehi adhimuttacittan ti.

NITTHITO SUTTANIPĀTO
 AṬṬHABHĀNAVĀRAPARIMĀNĀYA PĀLIYĀ

As through life's sloughs from knoll
to knoll I flounder'd on,
mine eyes beheld the Lord
of All-Enlightenment,
in whom no Cankers dwell,
who found the 'Way Across'.

[1145]

The Lord: As trust saved Vakkali,
and saved Bhadrāvudha,
as trust saved Āḷavi,
so Pingiya, evince
an equal trust, and thou
shalt pass beyond the grisly realms of Death.

[1146]

Pingiya: My gladness grows the greater as I hear
the sage's words. The All-Enlighten'd Lord
has stripped away the veil from things; his mind
is all-embracing, ready-witted, sure.

[1147]

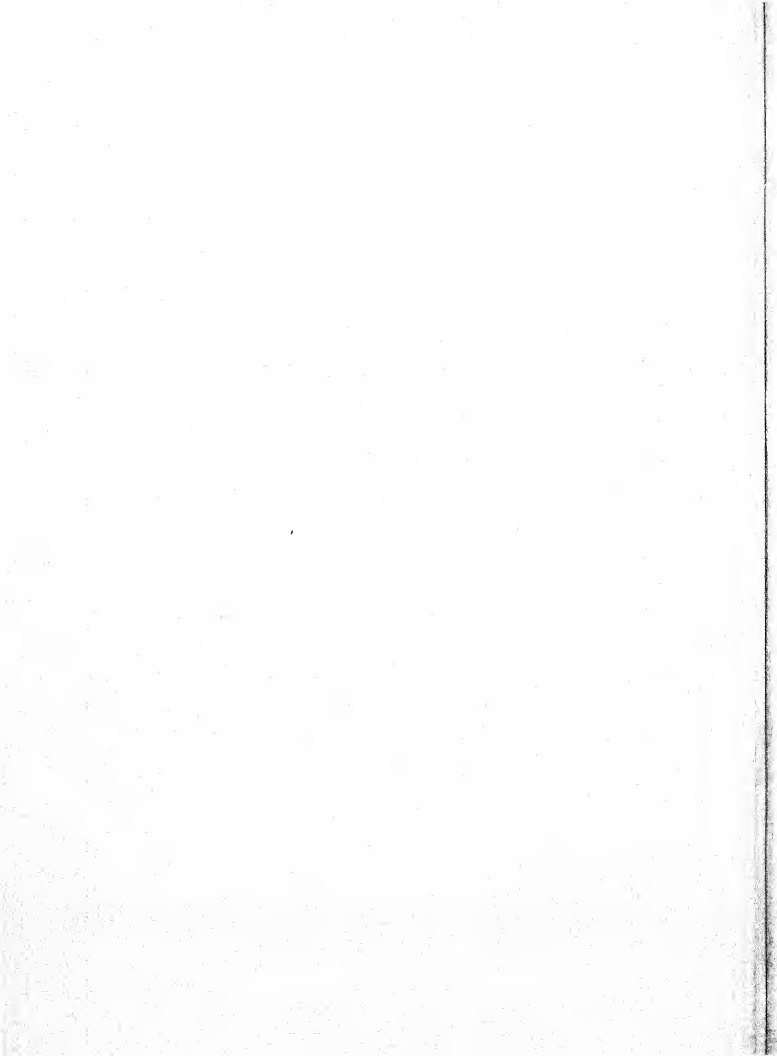
Clear vision into things sublime has brought
things great and small within the Master's ken.
He solves all doubts, till doubters doubt no more.

[1148]

To th' unsurpassable, th' unchangeable,
which has no counterpart, assuredly
I shall attain; no doubt of this have I.
Account me, Lord, as winning this Release.

[1149]

THE END



I

PALI INDEX

(The references are to the gāthās in Fausbøll's numerical order, unless the reference is preceded by the italicized letter *p.*, which indicates a page of the text of the present volume.)

This index does not attempt to cover the whole lexicographical field, for which see Helmer Smith's *Vocabulary of Sutta-Nipāta* at pp. 645-791 of his P.T.S. edition of the Paramatthajotikā II. As a rule, only those words are here included which have reference to the *thought* of the Sutta-Nipāta.)

akankha 477, 1059
 akālika 567, 1137, 1139, 1141
 akiñcana 176, 455, 490, 501, 620, 645,
 1059, 1091, 1094
 akkhātar 167
 Aggālava 342
 Aggika-Bhāradvāja *p.* 30
 Aggika-Bhāradvāja-sutta (=Vasala-
 s°) *p.* 30.
 Anguttar-āpana *p.* 132
 accanta-suddhi 794
 Ajita Kesakambali *p.* 120
 Ajita (mānava) 1006, 1033 &c.
 ajjhataṁ 7, 203, 516, 521, 526, 527,
 530, 532, 738, 916, 917, 919, 1111,
 1113
 ajjhatta-cinti 174, 388
 ajjhatta-santi 837, 838
 aññā-vimokha 1105, 1107
 Aṭaṭa *p.* 158
 Aṭṭhaka-vagga *p.* 184
 attatṭhapaññā 75
 attañjaha 790
 attadattha 284
 Attadaṇḍa-sutta *p.* 224
 attānudiṭṭhi 1119
 atthagata 1075, 1076
 adukkhamasukha 738

adhamma 310, 312, 450
 adhideva 1148
 anangana 517, 662
 an-aññaneyya 55, 364
 anarahā 135
 anariya-dhamma 782
 anassāvin 853
 an-ālamba 173
 anāvila 160, 161, 483, 515, 637, 1039
 anāsava 178, 212, 219, 765, 996, 1082-3,
 1105, 1133, 1145
 anāsasāna 369
 aniketasārin 844, 970
 anissita 66, 363, 364, 748, 752, 753,
 811, 849, 856, 947, 1069
 anukampin 693
 anuṇṇata 702
 anuttara 179, 330, 345, 478, 486, 554,
 557, 560, 690, 1003
 anuddhata 850
 anudhamma-cārin 69
 anupādāna 546, 572, 753
 anupādiyati 470, 800, 915
 anupādisesa 876
 anubuddha 384
 anuyutta 553, 663, 814, 972
 anurodha-virodha-vippahīna 362
 anuvidita 528, 530

anusaya 14, 342, 369, 545, 571
 anusuyyaka 325
 anusotagāmin 319
 anussada 624
 anūpalitta 211, 392, 468, 790, 845
 aneja 87, 372, 477, 638, 646, 751, 920,
 952, 953, 1043, 1101, 1112
 antakara 32, 337, 510, 511, 539, 1148
 antagū 401, 458, 463, 539, 1133
 apihālu 852
 a-ppagabbha 852, 941
 a-ppaṭigha 42
 appiccha 628, 707
 Ababa *and* Abbuda *p.* 158
 abhiññā(ya) 534, 743, 992, 1040,
 1042, 1115, 1148
 abhisamaya 342, 737, 758
 amaccharin 852, 860
 amata 80, 204, 453, 635, 960
 amama 220, 469, 494, 495, 777
 amosa-dhamma 758
 arati 270, 271, 436, 642, 835, 938, 969
 arahat 403, 539, 590, 644, 1003
 ariya 90, 115, 177, 330, 353, 533, 535,
 660, 758, 761, 762, 765, 782, 783,
 822
 alasa 96
 alippamāna 71, 213, 456
 alinacitta 68, 717
 alola 22, 65, 165, 707
 avijjā 199, 277, 729, 730, 1026
 aviddasu 762
 avidvā 728
 aviruddha 365, 630, 704, 854
 avihimsā 292
 avītatanha 776, 901
 avītivatta 796
 avedhadhamma 322
 Asita 679, 686, 698, 699
 asuci 75, 197, 205, 243
 asuddhi 893, 900
 asura 310, 681

asoka 593
 Ahaha *p.* 158
 ahirika 133
 ākiñcañña 976, 1070-2, 1115
 ājiva 407, 617
 ājivika 381
 ātappa 1062
 ātāpin 926
 ātura 331
 Āthabbapa 927 (the Atharva-Veda)
 ādāna 364, 620, 794, 1103-4
 ādicca 550, 569, 1097
 Ādicca 54, 423, 540, 915, 1128
 ānisaṃsa 256, 784, 797, 952
 Āpaṇa *p.* 132, 137
 āmagandha 240-2, 248, 251
 Āmagandha-sutta *p.* 58
 āyatana 373, 399, 406
 āyāga 486
 āradhā 68, 344
 ārammaṇa 474, 506, 945, 1069
 ālaya 177, 535, 635
 Ālavaka-sutta *p.* 44
 Ālavi 191; *p.* 82; 1146
 āvila 160, 967
 āsaya 56, 972
 āsava 82, 162-3, 178, 370, 374, 535,
 546, 572, 749
 āsasāna 1090-1
 āsā 474, 634, 794, 864-5
 āsimsati 779, 1044, 1046
 āhāra 747-8
 āhuti 249, 458
 icchā 133, 306, 311, 706-7, 872;
p. 156
 Icchānankala *p.* 146
 iñjita 750-1, 1048
 itibhavābhavatā 6
 itihāsa 1020
 itihītiha 1084, 1135

- ito-ja 271
 ito-nidāna 271, 865, 870
 itthabhāva 729, 740, 752, 1044
 iddhābhisamkhāra p. 138
 iddhimant 179
 Inda 310, 316, 679, 1024
 indriya 63, 214, 250, 340, 516, 697
 iriyāpatha 385
 isi 82, 284, 356, 458, 679, 684, 689,
 691, 698, 1008, 1025, 1043-5, 1116

 ukkā-dhāra 335-6
 ukkhitta-paligha 622
 ujju-gata 350, 477
 Ujjeni 1011
 utthātar 96, 187
 Utthāna-sutta p. 78
 unnamati 206, 366, 829, 928
 utūpasevanā 249
 utuveramaṇi 291
 Udaya 1008, 1105, 1125
 uddham (adho, &c.) 537, 1055, 1068,
 1103, 1122
 upakkilesa 66
 upadhi 33-4, 364, 374, 546, 572, 728,
 1050
 upadhika 789, 1057
 upanāhin 116
 upanissita 877
 upaya 786-7, 897
 uparujjhati 724, 726, 1036-7, 1110-11
 uparodhana 732, 761
 upalippati 211, 547, 779, 812
 upavāda 389, 929
 upavutth-uposatha 403
 upasanta 342, 848, 857, 919, 949,
 1087, 1099
 upasama 257, 737
 Upasiva 1007, 1069-70, 1124
 upādā 168-9, 363
 upādāna 170, 358, 475, 546, 742-3
 upādiyati 470, 752, 1103-4

 upādi-sesa 354, 876
 upekhaka 515, 855, 912
 upekhā 67, 73, 972, 1107
 uposatha 153, 401-3
 Uppalaka p. 158
 ubhantaṃ 1040, 1042
 ubhay-anta 801
 uraga 1-17, 604
 Uruga-vagga p. 2; Uruga-sutta p. 2
 usabha 26-7, 29, 416, 646, 684, 996
 ussada 515, 624, 783, 855, 920
 ussukka 43, 298
 ūhacca 1119

 ejā 87, 751, 791
 ettāvata' (aggaṃ) 875-6; 478
 Erāvaṇa 379
 ereti 325, 350
 elamūga 70

 oka 628, 844, 966, 1101
 Okkāka 302, 306, 991
 okkhitta-cakkhu 63, 411, 972
 ogha 4, 21, 173-4, 178, 183-4, 219,
 273, 471, 495, 538, 771, 779, 823,
 1052, 1059, 1064, 1069, 1070,
 1081-3, 1092-3, 1096, 1101
 ottāpin 133
 oma 153, 177, 343, 860, 954
 ora(m) 1-17, 804

 kankhā 58, 477, 514, 541, 1025, 1149
 kankhati 516 (kālaṃ), 540, 1021
 kankhin 510, 1148
 Kaccāyana (Pakudha) p. 120
 Kaṇha (= Māra) 355, 439, 967
 Kaṇhasirivhaya (isi) 689
 katakicca 1105
 kathamjivī 181
 kathamjassina and kathamsila 848
 kadariya 133, 362
 Kapilavatthu 991, 1012

Kapila-sutta (=Dhammacariya-s°)
 p. 68
 kappa 373, 517, 521, 535, 860, 911,
 1101
 Kappa 344, 349, 354
 Kappa (māṇava) 1007, 1092-3, 1125
 kappiya 521, 860, 914
 kappeti 283, 794, 799, 803
 kamma 127, 136, 140, 142, 163 A and B,
 164, 215, 253, 324, 330, 365, 407,
 537, 587, 596, 599, 650-4, 661,
 666, 846, 899, 900
 Kalaha-vivāda-sutta p. 204
 Kasi-Bhāradvāja-sutta p. 20
 kāma 50-1, 60, 92, 139, 160-1, 166,
 175-6, 239, 243, 272, 284, 315, 337,
 359, 361, 423-4, 435-6, 445, 461,
 464, 467, 497, 639, 685, 766-9,
 771-4, 823, 825, 844, 857, 940,
 945, 963, 1039, 1041, 1046, 1070-2,
 1088-9, 1096-7, 1106, 1131
 Kāma-sutta p. 184
 kāya 78, 193-4, 198, 203, 206, 340,
 407, 548-9, 669, 1074, 1113, 1144
 Kāyavicchandana-sutta (=Vijaya-
 s°) p. 46
 kāla 73, 130, 326, 343, 386-7, 463-6,
 490-503, 567, 971, 975
 kiccāicca 298, 715
 kiñcana 645, 949, 951, 1098-9, 1104,
 1122 (and see a-k°)
 kiṇṇissita 458, 1043
 Kimsila-sutta p. 78
 kibbisa 246, 665-6, 671-2, 676
 kiṇṇpattin 513, 518, 528, 533
 kilesa 348
 kukkuc(c)a 82, 481, 850, 925, 972,
 1106
 kutoja 270
 kutonidāna 270, 864, 866, 869, 871
 kupa 784
 Kumuda p. 158

kumbhadūhana 309
 kuladūsaka 89
 Kuvera (=Vessavaṇa) 380
 kusala 14, 321, 372, 523, 525, 536,
 591, 686, 712, 782-3, 798, 825, 830,
 876, 878-9, 881, 885, 888, 898, 903,
 909, 1078
 kusalanuesin 965
 Kusināra 1012
 kusita 68
 kuha(ka) 56, 328, 852, 957, 984, 987
 Keniya (a jaṭila) p. 132, 134, 136, 140,
 142
 kevala 393, 517, 524-5, 529, 759
 kevalin 82, 481, 490, 519, 595, 878
 Kesa-kambalin (Ajita) p. 120
 Kokāliya p. 156, 158
 Kokāliya-sutta p. 156
 kodha 1, 96, 245, 362, 469, 537, 866,
 868, 928, 968
 kodhana 19, 116
 komāra-brahmacariya 289
 kovida 484, 627, 653, 763
 kosa p. 136, 138; 525, 1022
 Kosambī 1012
 Kosala p. 158; 422, 976, 996
 Khaggavisāṇakappa 35-75; sutta p. 10
 khaṇa 325, 333
 khattiya 114, 138, 314-15, 417-18,
 420, 458, 553, 1043-5
 khanti 189, 292, 294, 623, 897
 khaya 70, 209, 475, 598, 732, 736,
 739, 992
 khara 249, 472
 khila 19, 212, 477, 540, 780, 973,
 1059, 1147
 khīṇa 82, 158-9, 162-3, 370, 481,
 493, 514, 539, 644, 656, 777
 khuppiṇāsa 436
 khetta 82, 473, 481, 486, 524, 769,
 858

khema 424-5, 454, 809, 896, 953,
1098

Gangā *p.* 44

gantha 219, 347, 794, 847, 857, 912

Gandhabba 644

gambhiro 173, 175-6, 627

garaha(ti) 141, 313, 660, 665, 778

gahaṭṭha 43, 90, 134, 393, 398, 487-9,
628

-gahaṇika *p.* 146

gāthābhigita 81, 480

giddha 210, 243, 248, 328, 809

giha 456, 464, 487, 497

gihin 44, 64, 220-1, 404

guṇa 50-1, 171, 284, 337, 663, 678,
714

gutta 63, 78, 250, 413, 971

guyha *p.* 138; 1022

Guhaṭṭhaka-sutta *p.* 184

gedha 65, 210, 819, 945, 1098

gocara 39, 280, 605, 961

Gotama 91, 1136-8, 1140

Gotama (Āḷavi) 1146

Gotama-sāsana 1084, 1135, 1143

gotta 104, 315, 423, 455-6, 648, 1004,
1018-19

Godhāvarī 977

ghara 43, 188, 337, 359, 406

ghātetī 309, 394, 629, 705

cakka 552, 554-7, 684, 698

cakkhumant 31, 160-1, 405, 541, 562,
570, 596, 706, 956, 992-3, 1028,
1116

Carikī (brāhmaṇa) *p.* 146

caṇḍālaputta (= Mātanga) 137

catuvīsatakkhara (= Sāvittī) 457 (cf.
568)

canda 465, 498, 569, 598, 637, 1016

cāga 188-9, 719

citta 23, 37, 50, 65, 68, 160-1,
163 A and B, 164, 341, 390, 434-5,
483, 507, 689, 975, 985, 1149

cutūpapāta 517, 902

Cunda (kammāraputta) 83-5

Cunda-sutta *p.* 24

Cūla-vagga *p.* 54

Cūla-viyūha-sutta *p.* 210

cetasa 66, 584, 593

cetovimutti 725, 727

chanda 171, 203-4, 364, 387, 767,
778, 781, 835, 865-7, 913, 975,
1026, 1086

chinna- 219, 711, 715, 948, 111

jaṭā 249, 689, 1010

Jatukaṇṇin 1007, 1096, 1125

janavādadhamma 973

jap(p)a 328, 595

jappati 773, 839, 899, 902, 945

Jambusaṇḍa 552

jaras and jarā 311, 575, 581, 725, 804,
1044-8, 1079, 1092-4

Jarā-sutta *p.* 192

jahāti 1, 211, 362, 500, 506, 589, 790,
809, 1101, 1121

jāti 104, 136, 139, 141-2, 209, 275,
294, 351, 355, 421, 462, 467, 476,
484, 500, 517, 596, 599, 600-1, 610,
647, 650, 725, 727-9, 1004, 1045-8,
1052, 1056, 1060, 1079, 1081-2,
1097, 1120, 1122; *p.* 146

jāla 62, 71, 213, 357, 527, 669

jigimsa- 690, 700

jiguccha- 215, 852, 901

jīna 84, 372, 379, 523, 697-8, 989,
996

jivhā *p.* 136, 138; 1022

jīva 432

jīvati 84, 88, 427, 440, 589, 615, 618,
804, 1029

jīvita 74, 275, 427, 574, 577, 589, 676,
775, 804, 931, 1077

jutimant 508, 539

juhāti 428, 1046

jotimant 348

jhāna 69, 156-7, 212, 503, 709, 972,
985, 1009

jhāyati¹ 165, 221, 425, 709

jhāyati² 818

jhāyin 638, 719, 925, 1009, 1105

ñāṇa 55, 372, 378, p. 172, 789, 799,
800, 839, 840, 868, 911, 987, 989,
1077-8, 1113, 1115

ñāti 104, 123, 579, 580, 589

Ṭaṅkitamañca p. 66

ṭhita 215, 250, 327-8, 359, 370, 381,
477, 519, 920, 1017

takka 209, 885-6, 972, 1084, 1107, 1135
taṇhā 3, 70, 83, 114, 306, 339, 355,
495-6, 640, 740-1, 746, 776, 854,
856, 916, 1068, 1085, 1101, 1103,
1109, 1123, 1137, 1139, 1141

tatha 9-13, 172, 1115

tathāgata xix-xx, p. 22; 236-8, 252,
347, 351, 467-78, 557, 1031, 1114

tapa 77, 249, 284, 292, 655, 901

tama 248, 278, 348, 763, 956, 975,
1133, 1136

tarati 17, 21, 173-4, 178, 183-4, 273,
319, 321, 333, 367, 515, 545, 571,
706, 771, 791, 1045, 1053-4, 1059,
1064, 1066-7, 1069, 1070, 1085,
1087-9

tasara 215, 464, 497

tādin 86, 154-5, 219, 488, 509, 519,
520, 524-6, 530-2, 697, 712, 803,
957

Ṭārukkha (brāhmaṇa) p. 146; 594

titthakara pp. 120, 122

titthiya 381

tiriyaṃ 537, 1055, 1068, 1103

Tissa 814, 1006, 1040, 1124

Tissa-metteyya-sutta p. 196

tuma 890, 908

Tuvaṭaka-sutta p. 220

Tusita 955

tevijja 594-5

Todeyya 1007, 1088-9, 1091, 1125

thaddha 104

thambha 214, 245, 326, 437

thāvara-tasa 394, 629

thīna 437, 483, 942, 1106

Thera-paṇḥa-sutta (= Sāriputta-s°)
p. 228

-dakkhiṇa 1010; pp. 106, 156

dakkhiṇā 482, 485

Dakkhiṇāpatha 976

dakkhiṇeyya 488-9, 504, 509

daṇḍa 35, 312, 394, 629, 630, 688

danta 23, 370, 375, 463, 491-2, 513,
516, 570, 624

dama 189, 463, 542, 655

dayā 117

dalha 68, 293, 321, 332, 344, 357,
701, 821, 892-3, 905, 966

dassāvin 1005, 1043, 1118

dassin 57, 176, 209, 219, 344, 371, 385,
474, 478, 693, 793, 809, 848, 887,

diṭṭha 141, 178, 250, 343, 508, 761,
778, 788, 790, 793, 797-8, 802, 808,
812, 887, 897, 901, 914, 955, 1053,
1066, 1079, 1080-3, 1086-7, 1095,
1122

diṭṭhi 55, 116, 243, 471, 474, 781,
785, 787, 796, 799, 800, 802, 832-4,
836-7, 839, 840-1, 846-7, 851,
878, 880, 882, 895, 908, 910-11,
913, 1117, 1119

- disā 42, 507, 719, 937, 939, 960, 1122,
 1143
 dipad-uttama 83, 690, 995, 998
 dīpa¹ 501 (attadīpa)
 dīpa² 1092-4, 1145
 dukkha 32, 36, 61, 67, 80, 170-2,
 183-4, 250, 278, 337, 401, 454, 473,
 531, 539, 574, 586, 626, 666, 678,
 724, 726, 728, 731-2, 734-5, 738-9,
 741-2, 744-5, 747-8, 750-1, 760,
 762, 770, 774, 873, 970, 1033,
 1049, 1050-1, 1056-8
 deva 18-30, 139, 310, 333, 346, 384,
 404, 521, 527, 543, 679, 680, 1047,
 1063, 1081, 1148
 devatā p. 26; 316, 986, 990, 995, 1043-5
 dvayadhamma 886
 Dvayatānupassanā-sutta p. 172

 dhañña 60, 285, 302, 305
 dhana 60, 104, 122, 185, 187, 285,
 302-3, 305-7, 422, 659, 987
 Dhaniya-sutta p. 4
 dhamma 58, 69, 81, 83, 87-8, 92,
 94, 141, 160-1, 163 A and B, 167,
 180, 186, 188, 192, 211, 239, 250,
 257, 274, 276, 288, 291, 293, 295,
 298, 312-14, 316-18, 320, 322-3,
 326-7, 330, 343, 351, 353, 361, 365,
 368, 378, 380, 383-5, 387, 389,
 391-3, 398, 404, 450, 453, 461, 471,
 478, 480, 504, 527, 534, 536, 554-7,
 575, 693-6, 699, 704, 749, 759,
 763-4, 784-5, 787, 801, 803, 824,
 837, 840, 861, 866, 868, 880, 886,
 891-3, 903-7, 914, 917, 963, 965,
 969, 973, 975, 1015, 1020, 1039,
 1052-4, 1057, 1064-6, 1075-6,
 1085, 1087, 1095, 1097, 1102, 1105,
 1107, 1112, 1120, 1122, 1137, 1139,
 1141; pp. 24, 30, 34, 114, 132,
 134, 154, 172, 266
 Dhammacariya-sutta p. 68
 Dhamma-sutta (= Nāvā-sutta) p. 76
 Dhammika-sutta p. 90
 dhāreti 401, 478, 688, 1149; p. 146
 dhi-r-atthu 440
 dhitimant 462, 542
 dhīra 45-6, 165, 211-19, 250, 317,
 349, 371, 380, 531, 581, 591, 709,
 719, 775, 778, 838, 877, 890, 913,
 964, 1009, 1052
 Dhotaka 1007, 1061-8
 dhona 351, 786, 813, 834

 Nanda 1007, 1077-83, 1124
 nandī 175, 637, 1055, 1101, 1109,
 1115
 nāga 29, 53, 166, 379, 421, 518, 522,
 543, 573, 845, 1058, 1101
 Nātaputta p. 120
 Nālaka-sutta p. 164
 nāma 153, 344, 648, 808, 872, 1037
 nāma-kāya 1074
 nāma-rūpa 355, 530, 537, 756, 909,
 950, 1036, 1100
 Nārada-Pabbatā(ubho) 543
 Nāvā-sutta (= Dhamma-sutta) p. 76
 nikati 242
 niketa 207, 844
 nikkama 68, 542
 Nigaṇṭha p. 120; 381
 Nigrodha-Kappa p. 82; 344
 Nigrodha-Kappa-sutta (= Vangīsa-s°)
 p. 82
 -nighaṇḍu 1020; p. 134
 nicchāta 707, 735, 758
 nidahati 35, 394, 629
 nidāna 270-1, 273, 728, 773, 865,
 870, 874
 niddhamati 56, 281-2, 962
 nidhi 285
 nindati 658
 nindā 213, 826, 895, 928

nipaka 45-6, 144, 283, 962, 1038, 1062
 nipaccavādin 217
 nipuṇa 176-7, 317, 377, 383
 nibbāna 86, 186, 204, 365, 454, 758, 822, 940, 942, 1061-2, 1086, 1094, 1108-9
 nibbuta 19, 593, 630, 638, 707, 1041
 nimitta 341-2
 niyāma 55, 371
 niyyāna *p.* 172; 170, 172
 niratta 787, 858, 919, 1098
 Nirabbuda (niraya) *p.* 158; 660
 niraya 248, 277, 531, 660-1, 677-8
 nirāmagandha 251-2, 717
 nirāsa 460, 469, 491-2, 494, 1048, 1060, 1078
 nirāsaya 56, 369, 634, 1090-1
 nirūpadhi 33-4, 642
 nirodha *pp.* 172, 174, 176, 178, 180; 372, 731-2, 735, 744, 747, 750, 754-5, 1037
 nivāta 265, 326
 niviṭṭha 57, 324, 756, 774, 781, 824, 892
 nivissavādin 910, 913
 nivuta 348, 763, 1032-3, 1082
 nivesana *p.* 30; 210, 300, 305, 470, 785, 801, 846, 1055
 nisaṃkhiti 953
 nissita 66, 280, 458, 538, 752, 784, 798, 824, 910, 938, 1069, 1071-2
 nihāna 132, 661, 797, 842, 880, 890, 905
 nīvaraṇa 17, 541
 nekkhamma 424, 1098
 Nerañjarā 425
 nhātaka 518, 521, 646
 pakappita 648, 784, 786, 802, 838, 886, 902
 Pakudha (Kaccāyana) *p.* 120

panka 535, 845, 945, 980, 1145
 paccaya 15, 339
 pajā *p.* 22; 298, 545, 571, 684, 823, 936, 1104
 pajahāti 586, 789, 806, 1056, 1058
 paññā 77, 83, 90, 182, 184-6, 329-30, 343, 346, 352, 373, 381, 390-1, 432, 434, 443, 468, 591, 847, 880-1, 931, 969, 1036, 1090-1
 paṭigha 42, 371, 536
 paṭiccasamuppādadasa 653
 paṭibaddhacitta 37, 65
 paṭisena 390, 832, 932
 Paṇḍava 414, 416-17
 paṇḍita 115, 254, 335-6, 523, 526, 578, 653, 721, 733, 743, 820, 875-6, 1007, 1125
 Paṭiṭṭhāna 1011
 pattheti 18-29, 70, 114, 900, 902, 914, 976
 patha 139, 176-7, 370, 385, 476, 540, 868, 976, 1045, 1076
 pada *p.* 106; 88, 204, 208, 252, 374, 446, 603, 700, 765, 768
 padaka 595
 Paduma (niraya) *p.* 158; 677
 padhāna 70, 424-5, 428-9, 531
 Padhāna-sutta *p.* 100
 panudati 81, 359, 469, 480, 483, 535, 928, 1055
 papañca 530, 874, 916
 pabbajati 405-7, 564-5, 1003
 pabbajita *p.* 122; 43, 274, 385, 423
 pabbajjā *p.* 122; 252, 405-6, 567
 Pabbajjā-sutta *p.* 98
 pabhankara 991, 1136
 pamatta 57, 70, 329, 332, 399, 430, 1121
 pamāda 156-7, 184, 218, 334, 942, 1033
 pamutta 212, 465, 498, 524-5, 530, 532

- pamocana 78, 166, 1064
 parama 68, 87, 138, 219, 293, 296,
 347, 471, 693, 697, 788, 796, 903,
 1071-2
 Paramatthaka-sutta p. 192
 parābhava 91-2, 114-15
 Parābhava-sutta p. 26
 parāyana 377, 578, 717, 1114
 pariggaha 393, 470, 779, 805, 809, 872
 pariṇānāti 202, 254, 455, 473, 537,
 737, 748, 755, 778-9, 1082-3
 parideva- 328, 582-3, 585, 590, 592,
 774, 809, 811, 862-3, 923, 969, 970
 parinibbāti 591, 765
 parinibbānagata 514
 parinibbata 346, 359, 370, 467, 735,
 737, 739, 758
 paribbajati 359-75, 639, 640, 741,
 751, 753, 1039
 paribbāja- p. 120; 134, 533, 537
 pariyanta p. 136; 214, 537, 577, 964
 parivajjeti 57, 341, 395-7, 768, 771
 parissaya 42, 45, 770, 921, 960, 965,
 969
 parovara 353, 475, 704, 1048, 1148
 pasamsā 213, 256, 825-6, 895
 pasanna 316, 402-3, 550, 690
 pasīdati 356, 434, 563, 1147
 Pasūra 833
 Pasūra-sutta p. 196
 passati p. 22; 76, 153, 164-5, 176-7,
 229, 313, 435, 580, 587-8, 647, 653,
 666, 676, 739, 761, 763, 784, 797-8,
 907-9, 935, 953, 998, 1063, 1113,
 1118-19, 1142
 pahāya (pajahāti) 17, 46, 66, 74, 209,
 493, 520, 771-2, 786, 791, 800, 844,
 900, 1070, 1082-3, 1134
 pahāyin 1113, 1132
 pahitatta 425, 432-3, 445, 961
 pahīna 250, 351, 370, 546, 558, 572,
 715, 1132
 pahūtapapañña 83, 359, 539, 996
 pāgabbhiya 930
 pāṇa 117, 156-7, 220, 242, 247, 394,
 400
 pāṇin 201, 220, 307, 575, 587
 pātimokkha 340, 921
 pāpa 22-4, 57, 116, 133, 140, 216,
 246, 257, 280, 282, 399, 407, 452,
 520, 547, 636, 662, 674, 790; p. 156
 pāpaka 127, 215, 519, 664
 pāpimant 33, 430
 pāpiyo 275
 pārāgata 21, 210, 359, 638, 803
 pārāgū 167, 251, 539, 699, 771, 1019,
 1105, 1112
 pārāmī 1018, 1020
 Pārāyana 1130-1
 pāva 782, 789, 888
 Pāvā 1013
 Pāsāpaka (cetiya) 1013; p. 266
 Pingiya 1008, 1120-1, 1123, 1125,
 1138, 1146
 pīti 257, 687, 695, 766, 969, 994, 1143
 puggala 544, 684
 puñña 82, 427-8, 431, 463-6, 481,
 486-9, 503, 505, 520, 547, 569, 636,
 697, 790
 Puṇḍarika (niraya) p. 158
 Puṇṇaka 1006, 1043-8, 1124
 putta 24, 33-4, 38, 41, 43, 48, 60, 137,
 255, 579, 686, 858
 puthujja 897, 911
 puthujjana 351, 455, 706, 816, 859
 puthuso 891-2
 punabbhava 162-3, 273, 502, 514,
 730, 733, 743, 746, 754
 puppha 2, 5
 pubbavāsanavāsita 1009
 pubbenivāsa 647
 pura 192, 695, 976, 1012-13
 purakkharoti 199, 277, 421, 784, 794
 803, 844, 849, 969, 1015

purisa 91, 102, 112, 181-2, 303, 316,
323, 348, 544, 657, 664, 806-7
Pūraṇa (Kassapa) p. 120
pūralāsa 459, 467-79, 486
pekkhati 36-7, 39, 49, 580, 1070,
1104, 1123
pecca 185, 188, 248, 278, 598, 661
peta 585, 590, 807-8
peyya 303
pesala p. 156; 678
pesuna- 362, 389, 663, 852, 862-3,
928, 941
Pokkharasāti p. 146; 594
porisa 256, 769
porohicca 618
posa 110, 662
Posāla 1008, 1112, 1114, 1125
posin 65, 220

phandati 587, 777, 936
pharusa 247, 932, 971
phala 80, 191, 239, 256, 576, 896, 977,
1134
phassa 387, 506, 736-7, 759, 778, 851,
870-2, 923, 964, 966, 974
phassati 54, 393, 967
phusati 693, 739, 871-2, 918, 923,
966

bandhana 29, 44, 242, 367, 491, 522,
524, 532, 948
bandhava 60, 140
bandhu 54, 241, 430, 769, 911
bala 4, 68, 212, 297, 623, 770, 992
bahiddhā 203, 388, 516, 521, 526-7,
530, 532, 738, 917, 1111, 1113
bahussuta 58, 316, 320, 322-3
bāla 199, 318, 399, 578, 657, 662, 721,
825, 879, 880, 882, 887-8, 890, 893
Bāvarī 981, 984, 986, 994-5, 1006,
1019, 1021, 1025, 1028-9-30
Bimbisāra p. 134; 409

bīja 77, 209
buddha 81, 83, 85-6, 134, 157, 161,
167, 202, 252, 276, 357, 377, 383,
386, 401, 408, 429, 454, 486, 513,
517, 523, 545, 558, 571, 622, 643,
646, 696, 993, 999, 1005, 1126-9,
1133
Belatthiputta (Saṅjaya) p. 120
Bodhisatta 683
brahmā 241, 285, 293, 315, 479, 508,
519, 524-5, 656, 982, 1024, 1065,
1133
brahmacariya 32, 274, 289, 292, 294,
326, 354, 396, 428, 463, 566-7, 655,
693, 696, 1128
brahmacārin 695, 973
Brahmaloka 139, 508-9, 1117
brāhmaṇa 81, 100, 129, 130, 136, 138,
140, 142, 189, 285, 291, 298, 301,
303, 305, 308, 344, 356, 382, 455-
60, 463-6, 469, 480, 490-503, 518,
529, 560, 566, 596, 599, 612-20,
649-50, 655, 790, 802-3, 843, 911,
946, 976, 979, 992, 997, 999, 1006,
1008, 1018, 1029, 1043-5, 1063,
1079, 1080-2, 1115, 1125, 1127,
1144; pp. 30, 70, &c.

bhakūti 485
Bhagavant 19, 31, *et passim*. Te bhaga-
vanto p. 136
Bhadrāvudha 1008, 1101, 1103, 1125,
1146
bhaya 37, 49, 51, 167, 207, 546, 561,
576, 753, 935-6
bhava 5-6, 16, 69, 175-6, 361, 367,
472, 514, 639, 640, 736, 746, 764,
773, 776-7, 836, 839, 856, 867, 869,
870, 923, 1046, 1055, 1133
bhavābhava 6, 496, 776, 786, 801,
877, 901, 1060, 1068
Bhāradvāja (Aggika-) pp. 30, 34

- Bhāradvāja (Kasi-) *p.* 20
 Bhāradvāja (mānava) *p.* 146; 596
 Bhāradvāja (Sundarika-) *p.* 106
 bhāveti 256, 277, 322, 341-2, 507,
 558, 1049, 1130
 bhikkhācariyā 700
 bhikkhu 1-17, 87-8, 202, 204, 221,
 276, 280, 343, 359, 361-2, 366-8,
 384-6, 388-9, 392-3, 411-12, 416,
 513-14, 551, 735, 739, 741, 751,
 753, 783, 798, 915, 919, 920, 923,
 925, 928-30, 933, 958-9, 960-1,
 964, 975, 1015, 1039, 1056, 1104.
 bhīru 437
 bhūta 35, 146-7, 154-5, 194, 321,
 394, 542, 629, 742, 793, 975
 bhūnahu 664
 bhūripaṇṇa 346, 376, 538, 792, 1097,
 1136, 1138, 1140, 1143
 bhūrimedhasa 996, 1131, 1136, 1138,
 1140
 bhedāsankin 255
 bherava 546, 923, 959, 965, 984
 bhoganagara 1013
 bhovādin 620

 maṁsika 244
 makkha 56, 437, 631, 1132
 Makkhali (Gosāla) *p.* 120
 makkhin 116
 maga 275, 763, 880
 Magadha 408; *pp.* 20, 266
 magga 55, 84-9, 277, 347, 429, 441,
 582, 627, 724, 726, 736, 1130
 mangala 360
 macca 249, 574, 576-7, 580, 766
 maccu 332, 357-8, 578-9, 581, 587,
 755, 776, 1092, 1094, 1100, 1104,
 1118-9, 1146
 macchara 811, 862-3, 954
 maccharin 133, 663, 852
 macchariya 863, 928

 maññati 199, 206, 349, 382, 539, 588,
 756-7, 799, 806, 813, 822, 840,
 842, 855, 918, 1049, 1142
 mada 218, 245, 328, 399
 manas 77, 154-5, 252, 270-1, 330,
 365, 388, 449, 470 512, 659, 660,
 678, 680, 689, 692, 697, 766, 780,
 829, 834, 873, 889, 942, 967, 985,
 1004-5, 1024, 1039, 1142, 1144
 manuja 458, 553, 661, 1043-5, 1123
 manussa 75, 333, 335-6, 521, 568,
 607, 612-19, 683, 964
 mano-chatṭha 171
 mano-paṇḥa 1017
 manopadosa 702
 manta 249, 302, 306, 850, 1000, 1004,
 1018
 mantā and mantar 140, 159, 251, 455,
 690, 916, 1040, 1042
 manteti 126, 379; *p.* 136
 manda 666, 674, 728, 820, 1051
 mamatta 806, 871-2, 951
 mamāyati 119, 466, 777, 805, 809,
 922, 950, 1056
 maraṇa 32, 318, 426-7, 575-6, 742
 mahāpurisa 549, 1000-1, 1040, 1042;
pp. 134, 136, 138
 mahāvīra 543, 562
 mahiddhika *p.* 122
 mahesi 82, 176-7, 208, 646, 915,
 1054, 1057, 1061, 1067, 1083
 Māgadha 1013
 Māgandhiya 837-41
 Māgha (mānava) 487-9
 Māgha-sutta *p.* 114
 Mātanga 137-8
 māna 4, 132, 245, 328, 342, 370, 469,
 473, 631, 756, 786, 830, 846,
 862-3, 889, 943, 1132
 māmaka 719, 806, 927
 māyā 89, 116, 245, 357, 469, 494,
 537, 786, 926, 941

Māra 33, 429-31, 442, 545, 561, 563,
571, 733, 764, 1095, 1103
Māhissati 1011
micchā 438, 815
Migāra-mātar *p.* 172
mitta 37, 58, 75, 185, 187, 244,
254-5, 296, 338
mithu 825, 882
mukha 91, 93-114, 198, 275, 550,
568-9, 608, 657-8, 664, 686, 1010,
1022; *p.* 140
muñja 28, 440
muṇḍa(ka) *pp.* 30, 106
muṇḍiya 249
muta 714, 790, 793, 797-8, 802,
812-13, 887, 1086, 1122
muti 344, 846
mutimant 61, 321, 385, 539, 881
mutta-saddha 1146
muddhā 682, 689, 983, 987-90, 996,
1004, 1025-6
muni 31, 83, 87, 163A-165, 207-21,
251, 359, 414, 462, 508, 523, 527,
540-1, 545, 571, 698, 700, 703,
708, 711, 723, 779-80, 809, 811-12,
821, 823, 838, 844-5, 850, 860,
877, 912, 914, 941, 946, 1052,
1074-5, 1077-8, 1081, 1090-1,
1127, 1147
Muni-sutta *p.* 48
musā- 100, 122, 129, 158-9, 242,
397, 400, 757, 843, 883, 886, 967,
1131
mūga 70, 713
mūla 14, 239, 369, 524-5, 530, 532,
916, 968, 1043
Mettagū 1006, 1049, 1124
mettā 73, 967
Metteyya (Tissa) 814-15, 1006
methuna 218, 291, 293, 400, 609, 704,
814-17, 820-1, 835, 926
medha 303

medhaga 893-4, 935
medhāvin 323, 627, 1008, 1125
Moggallāna *p.* 156
Mogharājā 1008, 1116, 1119, 1125
mona 540, 718, 723
moneyya 484, 698, 700-1, 716
momuha 840-1, 1120
mosa-dhamma 739, 757-8
mosa-vajja 819, 866, 868, 931, 943
moha-dhamma 276
moh-antara 478
moha-magga 347
moheti 332, 352, 1076
yakkha 153-63, 168, 179, 273, 449,
478, 875-6; *pp.* 44, 66
yajati 302-3, 307, 463-6, 487-503,
505-6, 509, 569; *p.* 114
yañña 249, 295, 308, 458, 461, 482,
484, 505, 509, 568, 1043-5, 1047
yata 78, 216, 220, 490, 723, 850, 971
yathākammapaga 587
yathācicca 1096
yathātatham 172, 600, 699, 732, 1127
yathātathiya 368
yathābhūtam 194, 202, 653
yasa 138, 438, 817
yasassin 179, 298, 343, 1117
yācayoga (*or* yājaya^o) 487-9, 509,
1046-7; *p.* 114
yogakkhema 79, 425
rakkhasa 310
raja 139, 207, 275, 334, 391-2, 406,
517, 662, 665, 974, 980
rasa 65, 181-2, 243, 257, 387, 759,
854, 922, 974
rāga 2, 11, 74, 139, 204, 270-1, 341,
361, 364, 370, 476, 493, 631, 764,
795, 891, 974, 1046
Rāga 835
Rājagaha 408

rājā 46, 72, 299, 303, 308-9, 332, 379-
80, 411-12, 415-16, 419, 422-3,
455, 552-5, 568, 619, 652, 831, 991
Rāhu 465, 498
riñcati (ritta) 69, 156-7, 823, 844,
941, 958, 963
rūpa 387, 530, 754-5, 759, 872-4 &c.
roga 24, 51, 311, 530
roseti 125, 130, 216

lakkhaṇa 360, 408-9, 690, 927, 1004,
1018-21

lābhā 31, 438, 828, 854, 929, 1014, 1046
linga 601-7, 610

lippiati (limpati) 71, 250, 547, 625,
778, 811-12, 913, 1040, 1042

lina 68, 717

ludda 247

Lumbineyya 683

lūkhāsa 244

loka 9, 25, 59, 73, 83, 86, 115, 135,
139, 168-72, 185, 219, 249, 298,
339, 359-75, 394, 443, 455, 458,
466, 490, 496, 501, 522, 534, 560,
579, 581, 598-9, 633-4, 648, 683,
728, 768, 772, 775-6, 783, 786,
793-4, 796, 816, 845, 847, 855,
861, 864-7, 871, 894, 912-13, 915,
922, 940, 947-8, 950, 960, 974, 991,
993, 995, 998, 1035, 1040, 1043-5,
1047-9, 1053-4, 1064, 1066-8,
1077, 1087, 1103, 1122, 1133

lobha 10, 367, 371, 537, 663, 706,
864-5, 928, 941

lolo 22, 63, 922

lolupa 56, 165, 707

lohita 196, 433-4, 671; *p.* 156

Vakkali 1146

vagga 371, 800, 912

vaggu 350, 668, 955

Vangīsa *p.* 82

Vangīsa-sutta *p.* 82

vaco 54, 330, 356, 365, 663, 890, 988,
994, 1006, 1057, 1083, 1110, 1147

vacana 202, 417, 699, 932, 981, 984,
986, 997

vacī 78, 407, 472, 973

vañceti 100, 129, 356

vata (*or* -bata) 89, 624, 782, 792, 798,
839, 898

Vanasavhaya 1011

vambhayita 905

vara 301, 391, 408, 564-5, 683, 698,
996, 1128

vasa *p.* 156; 274, 297, 315, 332, 444,
561, 578, 586-7, 968

vācā 49, 125, 130, 214, 254, 353, 426,
451-4, 660, 678, 711, 850, 930,
971, 973, 1005, 1061

vāda 100, 315, 327, 381-2, 390, 780,
787, 819, 827, 829, 832, 859, 906,
913, 973, 1076

vādin 59, 217, 357, 382, 430, 620, 661,
910

vādiyati 824, 832, 892

vādayati 682

Vāsavassa (*deva*) 384

Vāseṭṭha (*mānava*) 612-19, 656;
pp. 146, 154

Vāseṭṭha-sutta *p.* 146

vikappeti 7, 793, 802, 918

vikkhambheti 969

vigāhati 2, 825

viggaṇhati (*viggayha*) 844, 878-9,
883, 904

vighāta 814, 830

vicāraṇa 1108-9

vicikicchā 343, 346-7, 437, 540

vicināti 5, 517, 524-6, 529, 658, 933

vijānāti 93-113, 253, 316, 482, 656,
720, 739, 763, 953, 967, 1065,
1090-1, 1097, 1120, 1122

vijjigucchati 41, 253, 958, 963

vijjati 20-1, 23, 189, 431-2, 611,
634-5, 715, 856-7, 987, 989, 1001,
1088-9, 1098, 1100
vijjā 162-4, 289, 334, 594, 656, 730
viññāṇa 323, 329, 734-5, 1037, 1055,
1073, 1086, 1110-1, 1114, 1122
viññu 39, 294, 313, 317, 396, 403
vitakka 7, 270-1, 970, 1109
vitatha 9-13
vitarati 495, 514, 746, 779
vitta 102, 181-2, 302, 307
vidita 504, 1052, 1057, 1075, 1102
vidu 758, 762
vidhūpita 7, 472, 475
vidhūma 460, 1048
vippanutta 176, 218, 363, 373, 472,
483, 492, 501, 913-14
vibhava 514, 856, 867, 869, 870
vibhavati 871-4, 1113
vibhāveti 230, 318
vibhūsā 59
vimala 378, 384, 476, 519, 637, 1131
vimāna 887-8
vimuccati 23, 211, 354, 475, 491-2,
522, 534, 536, 755, 847, 975, 992,
1071-4, 1101, 1114
vimutti 54, 73, 725, 727
vimokha 1071, 1088-9, 1105
viyatta 800
viyāpanna 314
viramati 59, 175, 218, 367, 400, 531,
704, 828, 900, 925, 943, 953, 1070
virāgaratta 795
viriya 68, 79, 184, 353, 422, 432, 528,
531, 548, 966, 1026
viruddha 73, 248, 365, 630
vivajjeti 53, 399, 407
vivāṭa 19, 374, 763, 793, 921, 1003,
1147
vivattacchadda 372, 378
vivadati 830, 832, 842-3, 879, 883-4,
895-6

vivāda 596, 796, 828, 862-3, 896, 907,
912
vivatta 221, 338, 810, 845
viveka 474, 772, 814, 822, 851, 915,
1065
visambyutta 621, 626, 634, 641
visatta 38, 272, 1104
visattikā 333, 768, 857, 1053-4, 1067,
1085, 1087
visama 57, 215, 243, 468, 774-5, 843
visalla 17, 86, 367
visuddha 67, 517, 687, 693
visuddhi 813, 824, 840, 892
visūka 55
viseni 793, 833, 914, 1078
visesin 799, 842, 855, 905
visoseti 3, 433, 949, 1099
vissuta 137, 597, 998, 1009
viṇaṇati 168-70, 673, 975, 1121
vihāra 220, 391, 679
vihārin 45, 375
vihimsati 117, 451
vihesā 247, 275, 277
vītivatto 6, 375, 796
vīmaṃsati 215, 405
vīra 44, 543, 573, 642, 646, 1096,
1102
vivādāta 784, 881
vutti(r) 68, 81, 220, 326, 676
vusita 463, 493, 514
Vetaraṇī 674
veda 462, 529, 792, 995, 1019, 1023,
1027
vedagū 322, 458-9, 463, 472, 479,
503, 528-9, 749, 846, 890, 947,
1049, 1059-60
vedeti 211-19, 251, 346, 467, 643,
647, 758, 762, 878, 1148
vedanā 435, 529, 739, 1111
Vedisā 1011
vevicchā 941, 1033
Vesālī 1013

vesiyā 108

Vessavaṇa 380

vyappatha 158, 163A-4, 961

vyāruddha 936, 938

saṁyata 88-9, 156-7, 216, 284, 464,
716

saṁyama 264, 326, 655, 898

saṁyuta 574, 1026

saṁyutta 194, 300, 304

saṁyojana 62, 74, 175, 363, 375, 476,
491-2, 621, 736, 1109

saṁvara 1034-5

saṁvuta 340, 413

saṁsaya 682, 1030, 1112

saṁsarati 730, 740

saṁsāra 517, 519, 638, 729, 740, 746,
752

saṁsuddha 162-3, 372, 881, 1107

sakāyana 892-3, 906

Sakka (= Indra) 346, 656, 679

Sakka (= Sākyan) 345, 1063, 1069,
1090, 1113

sakkhi 84, 122, 479, 508, 921, 934

Sakya (= Sākyan) 225, 683, 685-6,
690-2, 991, 996

saṁkappa 154-5, 280, 444, 818, 1144

saṁkhata 21, 784

saṁkhaya 74

saṁkhā 209, 874, 911, 916, 1074

saṁkhāyati 70, 209, 351, 391, 749,
1038, 1041, 1048; *p.* 158

saṁkhāra 372, 731-2, 751

sanga 61, 212, 250, 386, 390, 473,
527, 532, 621, 636, 791, 948, 1060saṁgha 421, 550, 569, 589, 680, 1015;
p. 24

saṁghāṭi 391-2, 456

sacca 59, 78, 182, 187-9, 450, 453,
463, 479, 508, 632, 756, 758, 824,
832, 843, 882-6, 895, 903-4, 941,
946, 1133saññā 175, 535, 732, 779, 841, 847,
874, 886, 1071-2, 1113

saṭha 133, 931

sata 466, 741, 751, 753, 768, 771, 855,
916, 933, 962, 964, 1041, 1053-4,
1056, 1066-7, 1087, 1095, 1104,
1110-1sati 77, 340, 434, 444, 1026, 1035-6,
1107, 1143satimant 45, 70, 88, 174, 212, 411,
446, 503, 515, 973-5, 1070satta 248, 378, 387, 435, 643, 654,
683-4, 730, 754satthar 31, 153, 179, 343, 345, 545,
547, 556, 571, 573, 955, 1148sadda 71, 213, 387, 685, 759, 974;
pp. 106, 136

saddahati 186

saddha 188, 371, 663, 853

saddhā 77, 90, 182, 184, 286, 337,
432, 1026, 1143, 1146

sa-dhamma 906, 1020

santa (sammati) 460, 475, 656, 702,
721, 746, 783, 839, 861, 912, 946,
954, 1048, 1065santi 204, 208, 330, 332, 584, 593,
784, 837, 845, 900, 915, 919,
1066-7, 1096

santhava 37, 168-9, 207, 245, 844

sanditṭhi 567, 881, 891, 1137, 1139,
1141

sannidhi 306, 924

sapaḍānam 65, 413

sabbadhamma 167, 534, 699, 793,
914, 992, 1039, 1105, 1112sabbaloka 25, 56, 348, 378, 486,
515-16, 521, 527, 642, 761, 1009,
1104Sabhiya (paribbājaka) 510-14, 547;
pp. 120, 122, ...132Sabhiya-sutta *p.* 120sama¹, 896

sama² 47, 57, 90, 215, 220, 468, 508,
661, 668, 670, 672, 799, 842-3,
860, 952, 954
samaṇa 83-4, 100, 129-30, 282, 515,
518, 520, 529, 550, 714, 722, 828,
866, 868, 883-4, 890, 932
samaṇa-brāhmaṇā 189, 190, 441,
859, 1079-82
samatta 402, 781, 881, 889, 1000
samatha 67, 732
samantacakkhu 345-6, 378, 1063,
1069, 1073, 1090
samādhi 329, 330, 434, 921, 1026
samāhita 174, 212, 214, 471, 477,
519, 972
samitāvin 499, 520
samugghanhāti 352, 785, 795, 797, 801,
837, 841, 907
samuppāda 653
samūhata 14, 360, 369, 1076
samecca 361, 374, 475, 792, 1058
sampajāna 413, 931, 1055, 1068
sampadā 47, 505
samparāya 141, 190, 864-5
samppassati 81, 480, 582
sambuddha 178, 180, 192, 446, 541,
555, 559-60, 597, 994-5, 998, 1003,
1016, 1031, 1145, 1147
-sambudha 764
sambodhi 478, 503, 693, 696, 963
sambhava 620, 724, 726, 731, 734,
741-2, 744, 747, 750, 1115
sambhavati 272, 731, 734, 744, 747,
750
sammata 713, 760
sammasitar 69
Sammāsambuddha 565
sammuti 648, 897, 904, 911
Sayampabha (deva) 404
saraṇa 31, 179, 570, 591; pp. 24, 34,
74, 114, 132
sarīra 478, 584, 611

salla 17, 51, 331, 334, 592-3, 767,
938-9, 985
sallakatto 560, 562
savana 265, 345, 1120
sahati 20, 253, 942, 969, 974
sahassanetta 346
sahājanetta 1096
sahāya 35, 40-1, 45-7, 57
Sākiya 423, 695
Sāketa 1012
sāta 773, 867, 869-70
Sātāgira 153, 155, 157, 159, 161, 163
Sātāgira-sutta (= Hemavata-s°) p. 38
sādhū 45-6, 376, 379, 393, 482, 519,
678, 712, 1052, 1075, 1102; p. 134
&c.
sārathi 83; p. 132 &c.
Sāriputta 557, 955, 963
Sāriputta-sutta p. 228
Sāriputta-Moggallānā p. 156-8
sāvaka 90, 134, 345, 357, 376, 389,
391, 393, 395, 444; p. 22 &c.
Sāvattthī 996, 998, 1012; p. 26 &c.
sāvittī 457, 568
sāsana 445, 482, 565, 570, 698, 815,
933-4, 1084
s(i)neha 36, 66, 209, 272, 943
siva 115, 478
sissa 997, 1004, 1006, 1028-9
sīta 52, 467, 642, 966, 1014, 1073
sīmanta 484
sīmātigo 795
sīla 244, 246-7, 292, 294, 324, 381,
783, 839, 840, 848
sīlabbata (sīlavata) 174, 212, 624, 782,
790, 797-9, 803, 836, 839-40, 887,
898, 900, 961, 1079-83
sukha 59, 67, 181-2, 256, 297-8, 323,
383, 439, 592, 658, 683, 738, 760-2,
873, 981
Sugata 32, 391, 643, 659
suci 75, 128, 205, 243, 410, 678-9

Sujampati 1024
 sujñhata 487, 508, 789
 sutavant 70, 90, 371
 suti 839-40, 1078
 suddha 90, 283, 435, 476, 636-7, 662,
 788, 1120
 suddhi 373, 478, 526, 789-90, 794,
 824, 830, 839-40, 875-6, 891,
 898-901, 906, 908-10, 1079-81
 Suddhodana 685
 sudhammatā 180, 192
 subbata 89, 220, 441
 Sundarika-Bhāradvāja (brāhmaṇa)
pp. 106, 114
 Sundarika-Bhāradvāja-sutta *p.* 106
 Sundarikā (nadi) *p.* 106
 subha 199, 341, 633, 824, 910
 sura 681
 surādhatta 106
 Sūciloma *p.* 66
 Sūciloma-sutta *p.* 66
 sūra 439, 831
 sekha 970, 1038
 Setavya 1012
 senā 436, 439, 443, 556, 561
 Seniya (Bimbisāra) *p.* 136
 Sela (brāhmaṇa) *p.* 134
 Sela-sutta *p.* 132
 sevati 47, 57, 72, 75, 88, 385, 391,
 927
 soka 449, 469, 584, 586, 591, 593, 809,
 862, 985, 994, 1052, 1056

Sogandhika (niraya) *p.* 158
 socati 34, 79, 185, 188, 333, 445, 581,
 805, 827, 861, 944, 948, 950-1
 1. sota 322, 345, 461, 922
 2. sota 197, 250, 319, 355, 433, 715,
 736, 777, 1034-5; *p.* 138
 sottiya 533-4
 sopadhika 789
 sopāka 137
 somanassa 67
 soracca 78, 292, 330
 sorata 309, 513, 515, 540
 haṁsa 221, 350
 (loma-)haṁsa 270
 (loma-)haṭṭha-jāta 1017; *p.* 24
 hadaya-nissita 938
 hāpeti 37, 90
 hiraṁsati 117, 309, 368, 515, 583, 585
 hita 233, 665, 683, 692-3, 697
 Himavant 422
 hiri 77, 133, 253, 462, 719
 hīna 725, 776, 796-9, 816, 827, 899,
 903-5
 huta 459, 461, 479, 487
 hutta 249; *p.* 106
 huram 468, 470, 496, 801, 1084, 1135
 hetu 16, 122, 775, 1131
 Hemaka 1007, 1084, 1086, 1124
 Hemavata (yakkha) 154, 156, 158,
 160, 162, 168-9
 Hemavata-sutta *p.* 38

II

ENGLISH INDEX

- Abhidhamma-Piṭaka *p.* xiii
 Across 539, 1129; *pp.* 235, 267
 Adept 143, 528-9, 595, 782-3, 798,
 838, 870, 903, 1038
 Affection(s) 36, 41, 185, 187, 209,
 811, 863-5
 Ajita 1006, 1016-17, 1124
 Ajita's Question Sutta *p.* 243
 Ālavi 1146
 Alert 413, 751, 753, 1039
 Almsman 1, 43, 87, 202, 204, 221,
 252, 266, 276, 278, 280, 282, 343,
 374, 385-6, 389, 392-3, 403, 411-
 12, 416, 513-14, 573, 700, 715,
 735, 739, 741, 745, 751, 753, 783,
 919, 920, 923, 975, 1039, 1041,
 1104; *pp.* xiii, xix, 105, 133, 135,
 175, 183
 Almsman's Life and Householder's,
 Sutta *p.* 91
 Almswomen *p.* xix
 Alone 35-75, 388, 718, 821; *pp.* 25,
 143
 Aloof(ness) 213, 257, 718, 810, 821-2,
 852, 900, 915, 1065; *pp.* xxi, 25,
 143
 Anāthapiṇḍika *pp.* 27, 31, 65, 71, 91
 Anchorite 83, 99-100, 129-30, 189,
 375, 385, 441, 515, 518, 520, 529,
 533, 537, 551, 689, 718, 722, 816,
 820, 828, 883-4, 890, 932, 1079,
 1080, 1082; *pp.* 31, 45, 67, 121,
 123, 133, 135, 137
 Anchorite's Ideal Sutta *p.* 87
 Anga *p.* 133
 Anger *see* Wrath
 Anguttara Nikāya *pp.* xiii, xv
- Apt Words Sutta *p.* 105
 Arahāt(s) 186, 539, 644, 1003; *pp.* 25,
 133, 135, 137, 139, 143, 147
 Arise! Sutta *p.* 79
 Armed Hand Sutta *p.* 225
 Arrow 331, 335
 Asita's *Nunc Dimittis* Sutta *p.* 165
 Asoka xiv, xviii
 Augustine, St. *pp.* xxii
 Austerity 77, 249, 267, 284, 292, 792;
pp. xix, xxi
- Barbs 367
 Bāvarī 981, 984, 994-5, 997, 1006,
 1010, 1019, 1025, 1028-9, 1030;
p. xviii
 Beauty Scorned Sutta *p.* 201
 Beliefs, outworn 1
 Bewilderment 347
 Beyond 1059, 1129; *p.* 267
 Bhadrāvudha 1008, 1125, 1146
 Bhadrāvudha's Question Sutta *pp.*
 xviii, 261
 Bhāradvāja 595; *pp.* 147, 155
 Bhāradvāja (Aggika) *p.* 31, 35
 Bhāradvāja (Kasi) *p.* 21, 25
 Bhāradvāja (Sundarika) *pp.* 107, 115
 Bhāradvāja Sutta *p.* 21
 Bimbisāra *p.* 135
 Birth 136, 139, 141-2, 456, 462, 476,
 596, 599, 620, 650, 733, 1045-8,
 1052, 1056, 1060, 1079, 1080,
 1082; *p.* 107
 Birth and Death 32, 351, 467, 484,
 500, 517, 520, 725, 727, 729, 1122
 Blameless 1126
 Blamelessness 88

- Bliss 5, 228, 249, 323, 399, 478,
 525-6, 561, 709, 892, 1044
 Bliss, final 78, 86, 115, 139
 Body, last 471, 478
 Bonds 29, 375, 476, 491-2, 522, 532
 Bondages 347
 Boon of Boons Sutta *p.* 65
 Brahmā(s) 310, 315, 479, 508-9, 656,
 1024; *p.* 135
 Brahmin(s) 129, 136, 138, 140-42,
 286-93, 301, 303, 308, 382, 441,
 455, 458, 460, 462-3, 469, 518,
 529, 596, 599, 612-21, 647, 649-50,
 655, 790, 795, 802-3, 843, 907, 911,
 946, 1059, 1063, 1079, 1080, 1082,
 1115; *pp.* 31, 67, 107, 135, 147
 Brahminism's Golden Age Sutta *p.* 71
 Buddhaghosa *p.* xiv *n.*
 Buddha(s) 202, 204, 224, 226, 233-4,
 236, 276, 330, 401, 429, 446, 454,
 468, 559, 683, 696, 957, 999, 1005,
 1126, 1129, 1133; *pp.* xix-xx,
 135, 137
 Buddhahood 558; *p.* xx
 Butler, Dom Cuthbert *p.* xxii

 Calm, Calmly 67, 82, 322, 341-3, 434,
 460, 467, 491-2, 519, 534, 630, 642,
 707, 721, 839, 915, 917, 953
 Cankers 162-3, 178, 219, 367, 374,
 471, 481, 535, 539, 546, 572, 644,
 749, 765, 913, 996, 1082-3, 1100,
 1105, 1133, 1145; *p.* 183. *See*
 Uncankered
 Cankī *p.* 147
 Canon *pp.* xiii-xviii
 Carrion Sutta *p.* 59
 Cause(s) 209, 473-4
 Certitude 55, 70
 Cessation 754-5; *p.* 181
 Charpentier, J. *p.* xvii *n.*
 Chastity 396; *p.* xx

 Cleanse 279, 351, 435, 476, 508, 636,
 739, 834; *p.* xxi
 Commentary *pp.* xiv and *n.*, xvi, xviii
 Companionship 36-7, 40-41, 45, 47,
 54, 57-8
 Comprehension 329, 352, 537, 847;
 pp. xix, 183
 Conceit 4, 245
 Concentration 329, 434; *pp.* xxi, xxii
 Conduct 136, 142, 145, 263, 324, 376,
 393, 650, 848, 898, 914, 962; *p.* 79
 Confession 921
 Conscience (fear to err) 77, 133
 Consciousness 734-5, 874, 886; *pp.*
 xxi, 177
 Constancy 531
 Contact 736-7, 870-2; *p.* 177
 Contemplation 226, 810; *pp.* xxi,
 xxii
 Contentions Sutta *p.* 205
 Control 154-5, 250, 340, 850
 Conversion 227
 Cool 467
 Council, First *p.* xiv; Asoka's *pp.* xiv,
 xviii
 Covetise 367, 371, 663, 706, 954
 Crassness 13, 212, 772, 1051, 1106,
 1132
 Craving(s) 3, 70, 82-3, 211, 272, 306,
 339, 436, 474, 495, 592, 635, 640,
 715, 740-1, 746, 854, 916, 953,
 1021, 1033, 1041, 1060, 1070,
 1082-3, 1085, 1088-9, 1101,
 1103-4, 1109, 1123, 1137, 1139,
 1141; *p.* 177
 Cunda 83, 85
 Cunda Sutta *p.* 25

 Death 576, 578-9, 581, 587, 590, 629,
 755, 776, 806, 876, 1100, 1118-19,
 1146
 Deathlessness 80, 204, 225, 635

Deceit 56, 116, 242, 328, 926
 Defile 1032-3
 Defilement 334, 949, 1099
 Deliverance *see* Release
 Detached 811, 853
 Desire(s) 367, 706-7, 766-9, 771, 773, 856, 902, 1048, 1051; *p.* 185
 Desires Sutta *p.* 185
 Dhammapada *pp.* xv, xvii
 Dhammika *p.* 91
 Dhaniya 30
 Dhaniya Sutta *p.* 5
 Dhotaka 1007, 1124
 Dhotaka's Question Sutta *p.* 251
 Dīgha Nikāya *pp.* xiii, xxi
 Discipline 7, 23, 898, 964, 974
 Disillusion Sutta *p.* 47
 Doctrine 69, 70, 81, 83, 87, 182, 186, 188, 225, 257, 265, 276, 316, 326-7, 374, 389, 450, 453, 461, 480, 570, 694-6, 763, 785, 792, 905, 921, 933, 947, 975, 993, 1015, 1085, 1102, 1122, 1137, 1139, 1141; *pp.* xx, 25, 35, 75, 105, 133, 135, 267
 Donor 458
 Doubt(s) 58, 86-7, 231, 249, 318, 320, 343, 346-7, 367, 477, 500, 510, 514, 534, 540-1, 559, 635, 638, 682, 866, 868, 972, 1059, 1063-4, 1088-9, 1112, 1148-9
 Dread 231, 257, 270-1, 546, 572, 850, 923, 948
 Dyads Sutta *p.* 173
 Effort 79, 184; *p.* xxi
 Eightfold 401-2
 Elephant 166
 Ender 467
 Energy 432
 Enlightened 81, 83, 85, 134, 180, 192,

408, 523, 541, 545, 555, 560, 565, 571, 643, 696, 993-5, 998, 1003, 1016, 1031, 1147; *pp.* 135, 137, 139, 417
 Enlightenment 139, 167, 178, 191-2, 478, 503, 513, 517, 597, 622, 646, 693, 992, 1128, 1145; *pp.* xix
 'Ere Dissolution comes' Sutta *p.* 203
 Errors, 470, 493, 638, 786, 846, 889
 Erudite 533-4
 Evil 519, 521, 1034-5
 Existence(s) 742, 1055
 Faculty 63, 340
 Failure 91-115
 Failures Sutta *p.* 27
 Faith 77, 182, 184, 286, 337, 371, 432, 719, 749, 1026, 1143
 Fausböhl, V. *p.* vii, xvi
 Fear(s) 167, 546, 561, 572, 902
 Feelings 738-9; *p.* 177
 Fetters 62, 74, 175
 Fire-worshipper *pp.* 133, 135, 141, 143
 Fires 19
 Flood 21, 173-4, 178, 183-4, 210, 219, 273, 471, 495, 515, 771, 779, 1082-3, 1101
 Fool(s) 61, 259, 399, 662, 706, 721, 825, 879, 880, 882, 890, 893, 1051
 Forbearance 294
 Form 754-5; *p.* 181
 Formless 754-5; *p.* 181
 Franciscan Exhortation *p.* xx
 Free, freed 473, 475, 490-2, 501, 508, 536, 546, 572, 593, 626, 643, 715, 758, 823, 839, 852, 877, 897, 975, 1057. *See* Release
 Friendship Sutta *p.* 63
 Fruit(s) 227, 486
 Further Shore 771, 823

- Gayā *p.* 67
 Gem 224-35
 Gem Sutta *p.* 55
 Generosity 187-8
 Goal 68, 228, 318, 377, 627, 725, 727, 911, 940
 God(s) 333, 346, 377, 443, 521, 527, 543, 680-1, 756, 956, 1043; *p.* 135
 Godhāvārī 977
 Good 94, 152, 219, 229, 239, 274, 324, 450, 460, 662, 1048
 Good Life Sutta *p.* 69
 Good Ship Sutta *p.* 77
 Goodwill 73, 223, 507
 Goodwill Sutta *p.* 37
 Gotama 91, 153, 164, 167, 448, 461, 487, 848, 933, 1117, 1135-6, 1138, 1140; *pp.* xiii, xiv, xix, xx, xxii, 23, 25, 31, 35, 71, 75, 115, 121, 123, 133, 135, 137, 155
 Gotama's Pilgrimage Sutta *p.* 99
 Gotama's Temptation Sutta *p.* 101
 Greed 328, 928, 941, 945
 Grief(s) 805, 809, 811, 948, 1106
 Growth(s) 14, 208, 235, 272, 329, 731, 913
 Growths Sutta *p.* 67
 Grudging 809, 811, 860
 Grumbling 43

 Hankerings 470, 758, 852
 Harm, Injury 35, 117, 148, 156-7, 200, 223, 288, 368, 513
 Hatred 12, 74, 150, 371, 493, 631
 Heart(s) 6, 23, 63, 75, 160-1, 183-4, 203, 228, 259, 269, 282, 341, 402-3, 435, 437, 482, 506, 531, 659, 725, 727, 746, 766, 778, 943, 975, 1026, 1111; *pp.* 135, 183
 Hemaka 1007, 1124
 Hemaka's Question Sutta *p.* 257
 Here and Now 343, 567, 626, 775, 1062, 1066, 1137, 1139, 1141; *pp.* 25, 143, 173, 183
 Hereafter 730, 786
 Hero(es) 439, 642, 646, 684
 Higher Life 326, 354, 566, 695-6, 717, 1128; *pp.* 135, 143
 Himālayan Sprite Sutta *p.* 39
 Hindrances, the Five 17, 66
 Holiness 285, 288, 487, 693, 697
 Holy Life 267, 274, 289, 292, 294, 463, 493, 655; *p.* xxi
 Homeless(ness) 274, 376, 406, 487, 497, 741, 751, 753, 844, 966, 970, 1003; *pp.* 25, 133, 143
 Hooker, Richard, xx
 Horner, I. B., *p.* xi and xix n.
 Household Life 43-4, 64
 Humility 326
 Hunger 436
 Hurrying and Lagging 8-13

 Ignorance 277, 347, 729, 730, 1026, 1033, 1105; *p.* 175
 Ill(s) 32, 36, 80, 170-2, 183-4, 250, 252, 283, 337, 454, 473, 537, 539, 626, 724, 726, 728, 731-2, 734-5, 739, 741-2, 744-5, 747-8, 750-1, 753, 760, 762, 770, 774, 789, 937, 1033, 1049, 1050-1, 1056-8, 1133; *pp.* 173, 175, 183
 Illumination *pp.* 173, 183
 Illusion 56, 74, 160-1, 847
 Ill-will 270-1, 507
 Inda 310, 316, 679
 Indifference 67, 73
 Individuality 1036-7
 Insight 55, 152, 163 A and B, 184-6, 323, 373, 425, 539, 706, 743, 837, 848
 Island 1092-4

- Jains 381
 Jānussoni *p.* 147
 Jātaka *p.* xvii *n.*
 Jatukanṇi 1007, 1125; *pp.* xviii, 261
 Jealousy 56, 109-10
 Jewels, the Seven *p.* 137
 Joy(s) 33, 67, 327, 330, 853, 1106, 1109, 1111

 Kaccāyana *p.* 121
 Kapilavatthu 1012
 Kappa 344, 349, 354, 356, 358, 1007, 1093, 1125; *p.* 83
 Kappa's Destiny Sutta *p.* 83
 Kassapa (Buddha) 242
 Kassapa, Pūraṇa *p.* 121
 Khandhakas *p.* xiv *n.*
 Khuddaka-Nikāya *p.* xiii
 Khuddaka Pāṭha *p.* xv
 King 553-4
 Know 317, 504, 527, 528, 530, 723, 730, 733, 737, 788, 792, 908-9, 1060
 Knowledge 322, 334, 378, 722-3, 868, 877, 1026, 1035-6, 1105; *pp.* xx, 135
 Kosala 976, 996

 Lanman, C. R. *p.* xvi *n.*
 Largesse Sutta *p.* 114
 Layman 44, 64, 220-1
 Lecher 107-8, 814-15
 Lechery 816-17, 820-21, 926; *p.* 197
 Lechery Sutta *p.* 197
 Lévi, S. *p.* xvi *n.*
 Lie(s) 397, 400, 1131
 Life 5, 175-6, 235, 243, 278, 746, 752, 764, 775, 779, 801, 875-7, 923, 1046, 1059, 1060, 1068
 Life's fuel 742-3; *p.* 179
 Life, last 502, 624
 Light 378, 501, 910, 991

 Lion 166, 546, 562, 684, 1015; *p.* 137
 Long Book *p.* 98
 Lore 70, 83, 261, 432, 434, 443, 463, 468, 503, 528-9, 539, 627, 733, 749, 789, 799, 846, 947, 969, 996, 1059, 1079, 1080, 1090-1, 1136, 1138, 1140
 Love 150, 162-3, 678
 Loyalty Sutta *p.* 63
 Lust(s) 176-7, 228, 243, 247, 270-2, 315, 367, 445, 467, 472, 483, 631, 913, 974

 Magadha 408, 1013; *pp.* 21, 267
 Māgha *pp.* 115, 121
 Mahā-pajāpatī *p.* xix
 Majjhima Nikāya *pp.* xiii, xv, xix, xxi
 Makkhali Gosāla *p.* 121
 Man and Men 324, 333, 364, 377, 435, 443, 508, 521, 527, 558, 607, 610-19, 654, 740, 756, 792, 806-7, 936, 938
 Māra 33, 355, 357-8, 429, 430-1, 435, 439, 442, 545, 561, 563, 571, 733, 764, 835, 967, 1095, 1103-4; *pp.* 67, 135
 Matter 872-4
 Meditation *p.* xxi
 Meek 499, 513, 515, 623-4, 662, 719, 852
 Mendicants 381
 Mental State(s) 69, 264, 372, 478, 699, 787, 917, 1105, 1112
 Merit 82, 427-8, 431, 463, 481, 486-7, 490, 503, 505, 569, 697, 744-5, 953; *pp.* 115, 179
 Mettagū 1006, 1124
 Mettagū's Question Sutta *p.* 247
 Migāra's Mother *p.* 173
 Mind 14, 19, 58, 154-5, 171, 203, 270-1, 388, 434, 470, 478, 558,

- 699, 717, 725, 727, 783, 872, 1026,
1037, 1039, 1110-11, 1143-4; *pp.*
xx-xxii
- Mindful 413, 975, 1104; *p.* xxi
- Mindfulness 45, 70, 77, 88, 973,
1026, 1036, 1053-4, 1085, 1087,
1110-11; *p.* xxi
- Moggallāna *pp.* 157, 159
- Mogharāja 1008, 1125
- Mogharāja's Question Sutta *p.* 265
- More Rejoinders Sutta *p.* 215
- Müller, Max *p.* xvii
- Nālaka 697, 699
- Nanda 1007, 1124
- Nanda's Question Sutta *pp.* xviii, 255.
- Nāta-putta *p.* 121
- Nerañjarā 425
- Niddesa *pp.* xiv *n.*, xv, xvi, xviii
- Nikāyas *pp.* xiii, xv
- Nirvāna 86, 204, 233, 267, 365, 453-4,
514, 758, 822, 940, 942, 1086, 1094,
1108-9
- Noble 533, 535, 758, 761-2, 765, 783;
pp. xix, 181, 183
- Obey, 340
- Obsession 916
- Octad of the Den Sutta *p.* 185
- Octad of Malice Sutta *p.* 187
- Octad of Purity Sutta *p.* 189
- Octad of Perfection Sutta *p.* 193
- Octads, Book of *pp.* xvii, 185
- Offerings Sutta *p.* 107
- Okkāka 302, 306, 991
- Open-handed(ness) 505, 509
- Order 227, 232, 235, 238
- Owning 805, 809
- Pack 626
- Pangs of Grief Sutta *p.* 145
- Paragon 518, 522, 543
- Paramatthajotikā *p.* xiii
- Parivāra *p.* xiv *n.*
- Passion 2, 11, 74, 139, 204, 341, 370,
465, 476, 493, 498-9, 507, 751, 795,
813, 823, 933
- Path(s) 227, 323, 374, 441, 514, 696,
714, 789, 790, 947, 949, 1040,
1042, 1086, 1099, 1130
- Pātimokkha *p.* xiii
- Patna *pp.* xiv, xviii
- Peace 79, 143, 146, 204, 208, 225,
257, 268, 332, 424-5, 454, 465, 481,
499, 519, 593, 683, 707, 714, 735,
737, 739, 746, 753, 765, 772, 783-4,
809, 837-8, 857, 896, 900, 912, 915,
919, 933, 946, 949, 954, 1065-7,
1087, 1096, 1099
- Perception(s) 732, 1071-2
- Perfect 376, 393, 788, 848, 947, 953,
1020
- Perfection 87, 788; *p.* 193
- Perplexity 510
- Personality 231, 530, 537, 756, 761,
950, 1073, 1100, 1119
- Pilgrim(s) 407, 456, 639, 640; *pp.* 25,
133, 137, 143
- Pilgrimage 405, 564-5, 567
- Pingiya 1008, 1125, 1146
- Pingiya's Question Sutta *pp.* xviii,
267
- Piṭakas *pp.* xiii, xiv
- Plastic Force 372, 731-2, 751; *p.* 175
- Pleasure(s) 50-1, 59-60, 152, 160-1,
166, 171, 175, 243, 284, 337, 435-6,
464, 497, 625, 639, 704, 719, 738,
772, 774, 845, 873, 940, 1039, 1041,
1046, 1070-2, 1091, 1098; *pp.* xxi,
121
- Poise, Poised 67, 73, 328, 515, 855,
952, 972, 1107; *p.* xxi
- Pokkharasāti 594; *p.* 147
- Posāla 1008, 1125

Posāla's Question Sutta *p.* 265

Power(s) 498

Pride 203-4, 244-5, 328, 342, 370,
438, 469, 473, 493, 537, 631, 756,
786, 830, 853, 862-3, 889, 926,
942-3, 968, 1132

Psychic Power *p.* 137

Puṇṇaka *p.* xviii, 1006, 1124

Puṇṇaka's Question Sutta *pp.* xviii,
245

Pure, Purity 90, 162-3, 283, 372-3,
476, 517, 526, 636-7, 662, 678,
788-9, 790, 794, 824, 830, 839,
840, 875-6, 891-2, 898, 900-901,
906, 908-9, 910, 1079, 1080; *pp.*
xxi, 135, 189

Quaking 752, 902, 923; *p.* 181

Rāhula Sutta *p.* 81

Rājagaha *p.* 115

Rancour 6

Reality 9-13, 759

Rebirth 16, 147, 152, 162-3, 209,
230, 273, 278, 339, 474, 496, 499,
514, 519, 535, 546, 572, 638, 647,
656, 740, 743, 746, 754, 839, 901-2,
1091, 1121, 1123, 1133; *pp.* 25, 143

Rejoinders Sutta *p.* 211

Release 10-13, 54, 66, 73, 166, 170,
172, 176-7, 211-12, 231, 344, 354,
373, 465, 472, 498, 522, 534, 725,
727, 746, 755, 847, 914, 992, 1071-
2, 1088-9, 1101, 1105, 1114, 1149

Renunciation 424, 1098; *p.* xix

Resolve 187, 444, 921

Return *p.* 173

Reverie 69, 156-7, 165, 221, 425, 503,
638, 709, 719, 925, 972, 985, 1009,
1105

Rhinoceros 35

Rhinoceros Sutta *pp.* xv, 11

Rhys Davids, T. W. *p.* xvi *n.*

Right 215

Right Conduct Sutta *p.* 79

Righteousness 554, 1002

Rites 231, 249, 1079, 1080

Ruth 189, 292, 378

Sabhiya *pp.* 121, 123, 125, 127, 129,
131, 133

Sabhiya's Questions Sutta *p.* 121

Sage(s) 39, 82-3, 87, 115, 177, 209,
210-11, 213, 216, 218-19, 220-1,
225, 252, 284, 343, 460, 481, 484,
523, 538, 540-1, 545, 591, 646,
691-2, 695, 698, 700, 703, 721, 723,
749, 778-9, 780, 809, 811-12, 821,
823, 845-6, 850, 860, 877, 889, 890,
912, 914-15, 941, 946, 953-4,
1074, 1077-8, 1090-1

Sage Sutta *p.* 49

Saint(s) 90, 135, 235, 250, 277, 441,
453, 458-9, 490, 518, 521, 573, 590,
656, 659, 775, 786, 848, 857, 861,
932, 954, 1052

Sāketa 1012

Sakka 346, 656, 679

Sakyan 423, 683, 685-6, 691-2, 695,
991, 996, 1069; *pp.* 133, 137

Salvation 371, 545, 571, 1061-2

Samyutta Nikāya *pp.* xv, xviii

Sāriputta 557; *pp.* 157, 159

Sāvattthī 976, 996, 998, 1012; *pp.* 27,
31, 65, 71, 91, 105, 157, 173

Schooled 513, 516

Scion 528, 532

Scornful 335-6

See 317, 346, 374, 504, 908-9, 910

Sela 554; *pp.* 135, 137, 139, 141, 143

Self 271-2, 425, 432-3, 445, 477, 756,
790, 858, 918-19, 961; *pp.* 25, 143,
173, 183

Self-bred 516, 527

- Self-denial 655
 Self-mastery, -restraint, -control 189,
 216, 284, 326, 413, 463, 490, 497,
 624, 723
 Self-poised 328
 Self-will 329
 Sense(s) 144, 214, 250, 373, 413, 436,
 526, 529, 535, 538, 697, 714, 719,
 778-9, 790, 792-3, 797-8, 802,
 812-13, 846-7, 851, 861, 887, 897,
 901, 914, 940, 943, 975, 1055, 1068,
 1082-3, 1121; *p.* xxi
 Serene 174, 328, 342, 972
 Short Book *p.* 54
 Sin 399
 Sinless 795
 Slander's Doom Sutta *p.* 157
 Slokas *p.* xvii
 Sloth 157, 334, 430, 436, 942, 1033
 Snake-book *p.* 2
 Snakes 1
 Solitude 718, 959, 969; *p.* xxii
 Souls 284
 Speech 450-1, 453, 961
 Stainless 176, 468, 515, 517, 624, 913,
 1105
 Steadfast 228-9, 519, 591, 719;
p. xxi
 Steadfastness *pp.* xx-i
 Stream 173
 Stuff of Existence, of Life 728, 915,
 992, 1057, 1083; *pp.* 173, 175, 183
 Suddhodana 685
 Sumangala Vilāsinī *pp.* xiv and *n.*,
 xx *n.*
 Superman 165, 548, 1000, 1040,
 1042; *pp.* 135, 137
 Superman Sutta *p.* 133
 Sure 17, 324, 370, 477, 536
 Sustenance 747-8; *p.* 179
 Sutta *pp.* xiii, xiv, xviii
 Sutta-Nipāta *p.* xiii, *et seqq.*
 Sutta-Piṭaka *p.* xiii
 Sutta-Vibhanga *p.* xiii-iv and *n.*
 Tamer *p.* 135
 Tathāgata *pp.* xiv *n.*, xix
 Taylor, Jeremy *p.* xx
 Theft 395
 Thirst 436
 Thought(s) 7, 63, 69, 149, 154-5,
 211-12, 270-1, 330, 444, 506, 516,
 524-6, 717, 793, 1048, 1062, 1066,
 1109, 1144
 Threefold Lore 594-5, 656
 Tie(s) 473, 522, 527, 634, 717
 Time 535, 567, 860, 1101, 1137, 1139,
 1141
 Tissa Metteyya 1006, 1124
 Tissa Metteyya's Question *p.* 245
 Todeyya 1007, 1124; *p.* 147
 Todeyya's Question *pp.* xviii, 259
 Toiling and Moiling *p.* 179
 Tranquillity *p.* xxi
 Transmigration 69, 1050
 Trenckner, V. *p.* xvii
 Truth 182, 187-9, 224-38, 267, 318,
 320, 323, 327, 351, 353, 365, 368,
 378, 383, 397, 450, 453, 463, 467,
 471, 478, 536, 543, 554, 632, 684,
 693, 698, 756, 758, 763-4, 785, 792,
 856, 882-6, 895, 907, 934, 946, 993,
 1015, 1031, 1097, 1133; *pp.* xix,
 xx, 105, 181
 Truth-finder *p.* 23
 Udāna *p.* xvi *n.*
 Udaya 1007, 1125
 Udaya's Question Sutta *p.* 263
 Unburdened 495, 501
 Uncankered 493
 Undeified 1040
 Unfettered 68

- Unfevered 542, 642
 Upasīva 1007, 1124
 Upasīva's Question Sutta *p.* 253
 Upright 533, 536

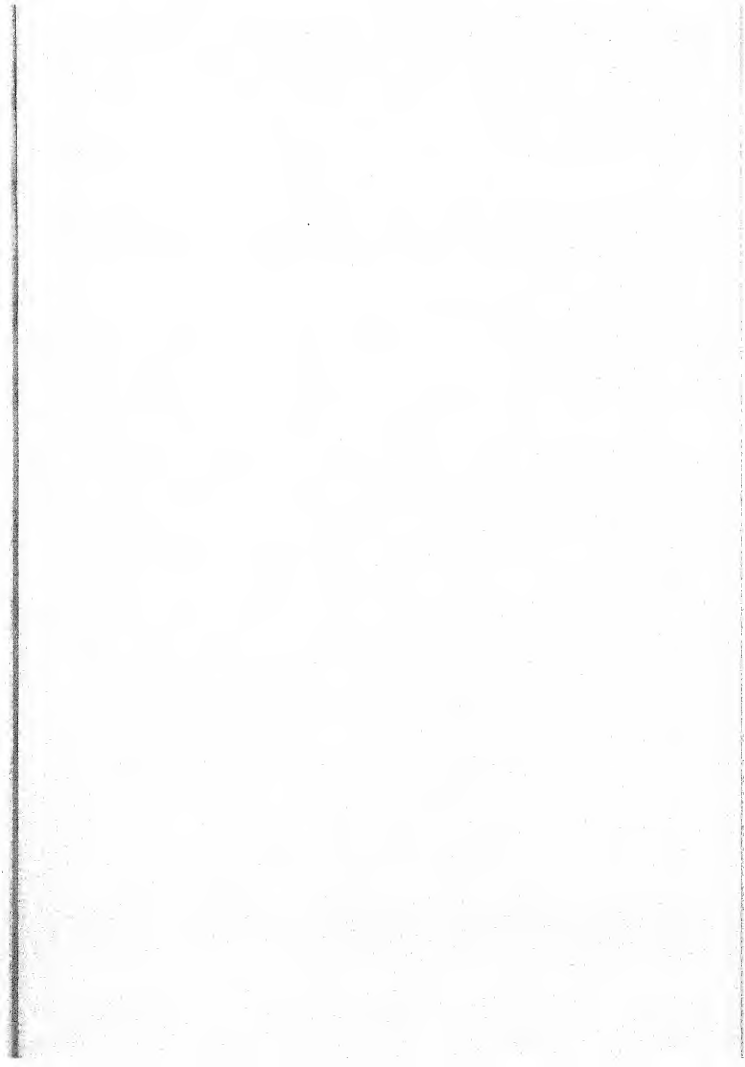
 Vakkali 1146
 Vangīsa *pp.* 83, 105
 Vāsetṭha *pp.* 147, 155
 Vedas 1019; *pp.* xvii *and n.*, 135
 Veil 372, 378, 763, 1147; *p.* 137
 Vesālī 1013
 Vice 348
 Vigilance 466, 768, 1143
 Vigilant 855, 1056
 Vinaya-Piṭaka *pp.* xiii, xiv *et seqq.*
 Violence 394
 Virtue 226, 294, 509, 665, 678, 717,
 763, 783
 Vision 231, 290, 471, 635, 647, 795,
 934, 1115, 1148
 Vita brevis Sutta *p.* 193

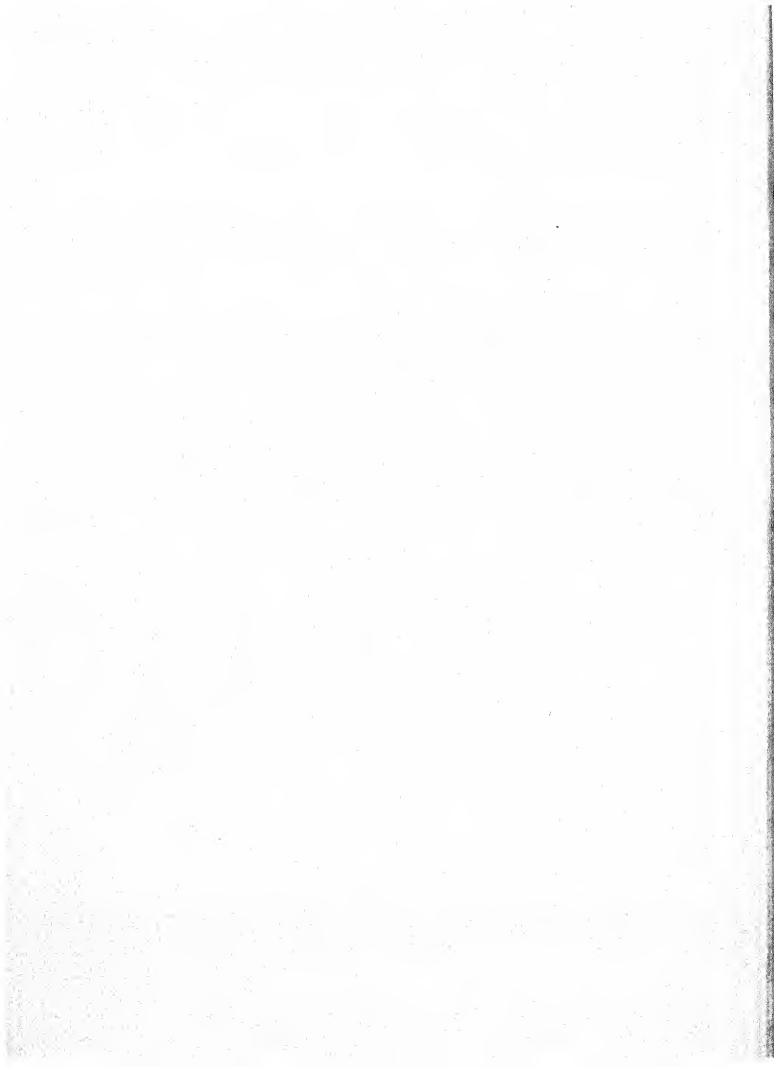
 Wanderer *p.* 133
 Want(s) 10, 56, 210, 280, 372, 460,
 491-2, 537, 865-7, 1033, 1040,
 1042, 1078
 Warring Sects Sutta *p.* 197
 Wastrel 116-36, 142
 Wastrel Sutta *p.* 31
 Watchful 446, 515, 751, 753, 933,
 964, 1039, 1110-11
 Watchfulness 434, 771, 916, 1062,
 1066-67, 1107, 1119
 Waverings 750-1, 1040, 1048; *p.* 179
 Way 55, 84-9, 176-7, 454, 701, 716,
 724, 726, 906, 1096; *pp.* 235, 267

 Way Across 1130-1, 1145; *p.* xiii
 Way-across Book *pp.* 235, 267
 Weal 53, 146, 181-2, 258, 269, 326,
 377, 385, 439, 453, 460, 592, 683,
 760-2, 838; *p.* 183
 'What is a brahmin?' Sutta *p.* 147
 What Sāriputta asked, Sutta *p.* 229
 Wheel 554-7, 684, 693, 698
 Wisdom 77, 182, 565, 718, 723, 947,
 962, 1101
 Wise 259, 349, 581, 653, 733, 743,
 792
 Woe(s) 34, 61, 273, 574, 658, 666,
 694
 Women 703; *p.* xix
 Woodland Sprite Sutta *p.* 45
 Words 254, 454, 850; *p.* 105
 Works 790, 803, 846, 887, 961, 1079,
 1080, 1082-3
 World(s) xviii, 1, 9-13, 25, 56, 71, 73,
 86, 135, 150, 168-70, 219, 340, 378,
 441, 516, 520, 581, 666, 759, 845,
 963, 1032-3, 1104, 1108-9, 1117-
 19; *pp.* 135, 137
 Worth 58, 488-9, 509; *pp.* 135, 137
 Wrath 1, 216, 245, 469, 537, 850, 866,
 868, 928
 Wrong 14, 22-24, 57, 215-16, 369,
 400, 531, 627, 757

 Yoke 641

 Zeal 88, 156, 184, 334, 344, 528, 531,
 1026
 Zealous 445, 1056
 Zest 1143; *p.* xxi





DESCRIPTIVE LIST
OF THE
HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

Advertising Pages, giving the titles of the volumes of the Series, and of some other works concerning India which are published by
The Harvard University Press.

PREFATORY NOTE

THE HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES was founded in 1891. It aims to make available for us people of the West the incomparable lessons which (if we be wise enough to maintain the teachable habit of mind) the Wise Men of the East can teach us. These lessons concern mutual good will as between persons and nations, repose of spirit by the overcoming of ill will and worry and hurry, moderation of our desires, the simple life, and above all, the search after God, and the realization — whether by reasoning or by faith — of the divine immanence.

Buddha (563-483 B.C.) was the greatest teacher of pre-Christian Asia. His precepts and example have been or are an untold blessing to India and Ceylon and the Far East. The West and the Far East have now become near neighbors. From the responsibilities and the consequent results of such neighborhood there is no escape. Already, across the Pacific, there is at work an interchange of mighty influences that will affect profoundly, for better, for worse, the politics and literature and philosophy and religion and morals of both East and West, in short, the habits of mind of both hemispheres.

The first league of nations, we are told, was the International Telegraphic Union (1865); and the second was the Universal Postal Union. A concrete example, say of a universal tariff

truce, if strikingly successful, might prove to be the most effective possible world-lesson. Such agencies of world-progress, involving for each member a partial surrender of individual freedom, are now many and various. Their logical outcome is a League of All Nations and a World Court and the outlawry of war. To make such outlawry effective, mutual distrust and fear must give way to a pervading spirit of good will.

For working out this miracle, we need everywhere, as leaders, men of action who can command the sympathies and enthusiasm of great masses. And behind these leaders must stand scholars who know what the best and noblest achievements of the East and of the West are, and who can bring them to bear upon the life and ways of thought of the West and of the East. The work of the scholar is in vital relation with the practical needs of today.

The volumes of this Series may be roughly grouped as follows:

VEDAS, BRAHMANAS, UPANISHADS — 16 VOLUMES

The Veda of Praise or Rig-Veda, volumes 33*, 34*, 35*
 The Veda of the Sacrifice or Yajur-Veda, volumes 18, 19
 The Veda of Magic Charms or Atharva-Veda, volumes 7, 8
 Vedic Concordance, volume 10
 Rig-Veda Repetitions, volumes 20, 24
 Rig-Veda Brahmanas (Aitareya, Kaushitaki), volume 25
 Brhad-Devata, deities and myths of the Rig-Veda, volumes 5, 6
 Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads, volumes 31, 32
 Rig-Veda Index, volume 36*

BUDDHISM — 8 VOLUMES

Buddhism in Translations, volume 3
 Buddha's Teachings or Sutta-Nipata, Pali and English, volume 37
 Buddhist Legends, volumes 28, 29, 30
 Buddha's Former Births or Jataka-Mala, Sanskrit, volume 1
 Buddha-ghosa's Way of Holiness or Visuddhi-magga, Pali, volumes 39*, 40*

PHILOSOPHY — 2 VOLUMES

Sankhya System, by Vijnana-Bhikshu, Sanskrit text, volume 2
 Yoga System of Patanjali, Sanskrit text, volume 17

STORIES, COURT EPIC, PROVERBS — 8 VOLUMES

Pancha-tantra, oldest recension, Sanskrit text of Kashmir, volume 14
 Pancha-tantra of Purna-bhadra, Sanskrit text, volumes 11, 12, 13
 Vikrama's Adventures, Sanskrit (four texts) and English, volumes 26, 27
 Bharavi's Arjuna and the mountaineer, German, volume 15
 Indian Epigrams, done out of Sanskrit into English verse, volume 38*

DRAMA — 6 VOLUMES

Kalidasa's Çakuntala, Sanskrit and Prakrit text, volume 16
 Shudraka's Little Clay Cart, English, volume 9
 Raja-çekhara's Karpura-manjari, Prakrit text and English, volume 4
 Bhava-bhuti's Later Rama-history, Part 1, English, volume 21
 Bhava-bhuti's Later Rama-history, Part 2, Sanskrit, Prakrit, volume 22*
 Bhava-bhuti's, Later Rama-history, Part 3, text-criticism etc., volume 23*

* Of the above-listed forty volumes, nine are marked with a star to show that they are not yet actually issued. But of those nine, not less than seven have a good chance of being soon issued; for each of the seven is all, or nearly all, in type or printed. The seven volumes are: three of Rig-Veda, two of Buddha-ghosa, one of Indian Epigrams, and one (Part 2, text) of the Rama-play. — Thus, happily, there remain only two volumes of less assured future: they are Part 3 of the Rama-play, and the Rig-Veda Index.

Foreign Governments and various Learned Corporations, during the forty-odd years in which the volumes of the Harvard Oriental Series have been appearing, have intimated their confidence in the value and trustworthiness of these works by conferring upon the responsible editor such titles as Honorary Fellow or Correspondent or the like. — Of these

public marks of confidence in the Series, the Harvard University Press, as its official Publisher and in these advertising-pages, would mention the following:

From the Government of India, Hon. Correspondent (1912) of the Archæological Department; from the Gov't of French Indo-China, Hon. Life-member of the *École Française d'Extrême Orient*; from the University of Aberdeen on her Four-hundredth Anniversary (1906), and from Yale University (in 1902), Honorary Doctor of Laws;

Honorary Fellow (1896: now Senior) of the Asiatic Society of Bengal (founded, Calcutta, 1784); Honorary Member of the *Société Asiatique* (Paris, 1822), of the Royal Asiatic Society (London, 1823) and of its North-China Branch (Shanghai), and of the *Deutsche Morgenländische Gesellschaft* (Leipzig, 1845);

Member of the American Philosophical Society (1727); Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences (1780); Member of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts; President (1889) of the American Philological Association (1869); President (1907, 1919) of the American Oriental Society (1842);

From the Academy of Sciences of the Institute of Bologna (1712), the Imperial Russian Academy of Sciences (1725), the Royal Society of Sciences at Göttingen, Prussia (1751), the Royal Bohemian Society of Sciences (Prague, 1759), the Oriental Institute (Czechoslovakia), the Finnish-Ugrian Society (Helsingfors), the British Academy, the Academy of Inscriptions and Belles-Lettres (1663) of the Institute of France, — Correspondent.

HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

Founded in 1891 by CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN and HENRY CLARKE WARREN.

Edited, with the coöperation of various scholars (from volume 1), by C. R. LANMAN, and continued (from volume 41) by WALTER EUGENE CLARK, Wales Professor of Sanskrit at Harvard University.

Published by the HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS, Cambridge, Massachusetts, U.S. of America.

Agent of the Press in Great Britain is HUMPHREY MILFORD, Oxford University Press, Amen House, Warwick Square, London, E.C. 4, England.

Direct application for books of this Series may be made, with remittance, to the Harvard University Press at Cambridge, Massachusetts. The volumes will then be sent by post direct to the buyer.

The List-prices are subject to a trade-discount. No extra charge is made for postage. This list is here revised up to date of 1932. Prices of previous revisions are cancelled.

Descriptive List. A substantial pamphlet, containing a list of the volumes of this Series, and a brief Memorial of HENRY CLARKE WARREN, joint-founder, will be sent free upon application to the Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts. — The List tells the general nature and contents of these works, and the uses which they are designed to serve.

Externals of the volumes. The books of this Series are all printed on paper of high quality and tensile strength, and durably bound in full buckram. The edges are cut, but the margins are ample; and the tops are gilded, not for ornament, but to make cleaning easy. The backs are properly lettered. No work is issued until it is complete. Volume 10 is royal quarto (32 cm.); volumes 7 and 8 are super-royal octavo (28 cm.); and the rest are royal octavo (26 cm.).

LIST OF THE HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

REVISED TO DECEMBER, 1932

Volume 1. Jātaka-Mālā. Stories of Buddha's former incarnations, by Ārya Ćūra. Edited in Sanskrit [Nāgarī letters] by Professor HENDRIK KERN, University of Leiden, Netherlands. 1891. Second issue, 1914. Pages, 270. Royal 8°. *Out of print.*

A masterpiece, as to language and style and metrical form, of Buddhist literature of the Northern Canon. By the Honorable (ārya) Ćūra. Stories used as homilies in old Buddhist monasteries. Editio princeps. Kern (1833-1917), long the honored Dean of the Dutch Orientalists, thought that Ćūra flourished not far from 600 A.D., or earlier. English translation by Speyer, London, 1895, Frowde.

Volume 2. Sāṅkhya-Pravachana-Bhāṣhya, or Commentary on the Exposition of the Sāṅkhya philosophy. By Vijñāna-Bhikṣu. Edited in Sanskrit [Roman letters] by Professor RICHARD GARBE, University of Tübingen, Germany. 1895. Pages, 210. Royal 8°. *Out of print.*

Sāṅkhya is dualistic. It recognizes souls and primeval matter, but not God. Vijñāna, however, is a pronounced theist. But in spite of his distortions of the original system, his Commentary (about 1550 A.D.) is the fullest source that we have for a knowledge of the Sāṅkhya system, and one of the most important (Garbe's Preface). Garbe studied the whole work with Bhāgavata Āchārya in Benares. German translation by Garbe, Leipzig, 1889, Brockhaus. Partial English version in J. R. Ballantyne's *The Sāṅkhya Aphorisms of Kapila*, London, 1885, Trübner.

Volume 3. Buddhism in Translations. Passages selected from the Buddhist sacred books, and translated from the original Pāli into English, by HENRY CLARKE WARREN, late of Cambridge, Massachusetts. 1896. Eighth issue, 1922. Pages, 522. Royal 8°. Price, \$3. Of Warren's Buddhism, a seventh issue, abridged, giving the *Life of Buddha*, for circulation in India, was published in 1922. Pages, 173. Strong paper covers. Royal 8°. Price, \$1. — The Warren Memorial (see below) was also reprinted in both the seventh and eighth issues.

Buddhism portrayed in the words of the Buddhists themselves. The life of Buddha (a beautiful narrative), his teachings, and his monastic order form the substance of this work. The Pāli passages, done into vigorous English and accurately rendered, are chosen with such broad and learned circumspection that they make a systematically complete presentation of their difficult subject. Warren's material is drawn straight from the fountain-head. It is this fact that has given to his work an abiding importance and value. It has been highly praised by competent judges. Moreover, it has enjoyed a very wide circulation in America and Europe and the Orient. And nearly half of the work was included by President Eliot in *The Harvard Classics* (New York, P. F. Collier and Son), of which a quarter of a million sets and more have been sold. The usefulness of Warren's work has thus been incalculably enhanced.

The life of Henry Warren as a scholar is memorable in the annals of American learning. A brief memorial of his life and public services is appended to volume 30 of this Series, of which he was joint-founder. It is also issued with the Descriptive List of this Series (see above, page 1). The List may be had, free, upon application to the Harvard University Press.

Volume 4. Karpūra-Mañjarī. A drama by the Indian poet Rāja-ṣekhara (900 A.D.). Critically edited in the original Prākṛit [Nāgarī letters], with a glossarial index, and an essay on the life and writings of the poet, by STEN KONOW, Professor of Indic Philology

at the University of Christiania, Norway, and Epigraphist to the Government of India. — And translated into English with introduction and notes, by C. R. LANMAN. 1901. Pages, 318. Royal 8°. Price, \$5.

A play of court-intrigue, and the only extant drama written entirely in Prakrit. It presents interesting parallels with the Braggart Soldier of Plautus.

Volumes 5 and 6. Brhad-Devatā (attributed to Čaunaka), a summary of the deities and myths of the Rig-Veda. Critically edited in the original Sanskrit [Nāgarī letters], with an introduction and seven appendices [volume 5], and translated into English with critical and illustrative notes [volume 6], by Professor ARTHUR ANTHONY MACDONELL, University of Oxford. 1904. Pages, 234 + 350 = 584. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$7.50.

The Great-Deity (-book), "hardly later than 400 B.C.," is one of the oldest books ancillary to the Rig-Veda. It includes very ancient epic material: so the story of Urvāgi, the nymph that loved a mortal (whence Kalidāsa's great drama, Urvāgi). The text is edited in a way that meets the most rigorous demands of exact philological criticism. The typographic presentation of text, version, and notes (critical and expository) is a model of convenience.

Volumes 7 and 8. Atharva-Veda. Translated, with a critical and exegetical commentary, by WILLIAM DWIGHT WHITNEY, late Professor of Sanskrit in Yale University, Editor-in-Chief of *The Century Dictionary*, an Encyclopedic Lexicon of the English Language. — Revised and brought nearer to completion and edited by C. R. LANMAN. 1905. Pages, 1212. Super-royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$15.

The Atharva-Veda is, next after the Rig-Veda, the most important of the oldest texts of India. Whitney (1827-1894) was the most eminent American philologist of his century, and these monumental volumes form the crowning achievement of his life-long labors as an Indianist. For his translation, he expressly disclaims finality; but his austere self-restraint, resisting all allurements of fanciful interpretation, makes of his version, when taken with his critical and exegetical commentary, the sure point of departure for future study of this Veda and for its final comprehension.

The text-critical notes form the most important single item of the work. These give the various readings of the "authorities." The term "authorities" includes not only manuscripts (of Europe, India, Kashmir), but also living reciters (the Hindu equivalents, and in some respects the superiors, of manuscripts); and, in addition, the corresponding (and often variant) passages of the other Vedas. Whitney gives also the data of the scholiast as to authorship and divinity and meter of each stanza; extracts from the ancillary literature concerning ritual and exegesis; and a literal translation. Version and Comment proceed *pari passu*. Prefixed is an elaborate historical and critical introduction, and a sketch of Whitney's life, with a noble medallion portrait. A leaf of the birch-bark ms. from Kashmir is beautifully reproduced in color. The typography is strikingly clear.

Few texts of antiquity have been issued with appurtenant critical material of so large scope. And never before or since has the material for the critical study of an extensive Vedic text been so comprehensively and systematically gathered from so multifarious sources, and presented with masterly accuracy in so well-digested form.

Volume 9. The Little Clay Cart (Mr̥cchakatika). A Hindu drama attributed to King Shūdraka. Translated from the original Sanskrit and Prakrits into English prose and verse by ARTHUR WILLIAM RYDER, Instructor in Sanskrit in Harvard University. 1905. Pages, 207. Royal 8°. Price, \$3.

A play of such variety, humor, and swift-moving action, that it has often been pro-

duced on the modern stage. Version, true and spirited. "The champagne has been decanted, and has not lost its fizz." Noble typography (Merrymount Press). Most books of this Series are technical. This one, like Warren's *Buddhism*, may be happily chosen as a gift-book.

Volume 10. *Vedic Concordance*: being an alphabetic index to every line of every stanza of the published Vedic literature and to the liturgical formulas thereof, that is, an index [in Roman letters] to the Vedic mantras, together with an account of their variations in the different Vedic books. By Professor MAURICE BLOOMFIELD, of the Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore. 1906. Pages, 1102. Royal 4°. Price, \$25.

The Vedas are, in general, the oldest extant records of the antiquity of India, and indeed of Indo-European antiquity. They are the sacred books of the oldest religion of the Hindus. They represent parts of a mass of traditional material, current in the various schools of Vedic learning, and handed down from teacher to pupil by word of mouth. What was originally one and the same stanza, appears in the texts of the various schools in more or less varying forms. The variations are often such as appear in the varying forms of popular ballads or of church hymns. Thus it happens that the texts of these different Vedic schools are often virtually related to each other and to their presumable original, as are the several kindred manuscripts of (let us say) a Greek play to each other and to the archetype from which they are descended. The comparison of these variant forms of a given text is often indispensable for ascertaining its original form and true meaning. This comparison is just what the Concordance enables us easily to effect. It is a tool of the very first importance for future editors and revisers and translators of Vedic texts.

The Concordance covers nearly all the important published texts, and is in one single alphabetic arrangement and one single volume. It is a royal quarto of over 1100 pages, of double columns, containing 125,000 lines or more. For the lines of the Rig-Veda alone, about 40,000 entries are required. The lines of the Atharva-Veda by themselves would require over 18,000 entries, but are often merged with those of their Rig-Veda correspondents. No less than 119 texts have been drawn upon for contributions to the work.

The book was printed (in the early years of the century) in a limited edition of 1000 copies, now half exhausted; and was printed, not from electrotpe plates, but from type. The expense in money alone, to say nothing of scholarly labor, was about seven thousand dollars. It is not likely that any publisher or scholar will soon undertake a new edition. For many decades, doubtless, the work will maintain its value unimpaired, an enduring monument to the industry and learning and resolute will of Professor Bloomfield.

Volume 11. *The Pañcha-tantra*: a collection of ancient Hindu tales, in the recension (called Pañchākhyāna, and dated 1199 A.D.) of the Jaina monk, Pūrṇa-bhadra, critically edited in the original Sanskrit [in Nāgarī letters; and, for the sake of beginners, with word-division] by Dr. JOHANNES HERTEL, Professor am königlichen Realgymnasium, Doebein, Saxony. 1908. Pages, 344. Royal 8°.

Volume 12. *The Pañchatantra-text of Pūrṇabhadra*: critical introduction and list of variants. By Professor HERTEL. 1912. Pages, 246. Royal 8°.

Volume 13. *The Pañchatantra-text of Pūrṇabhadra*, and its relation to texts of allied recensions, as shown in Parallel Specimens. By Professor HERTEL. 1912. Pages, 10: and 19 sheets, mounted on guards and issued in atlas-form. Royal 8°. Vols. 11-13 not sold separately. Price of all three together, \$5.

Volume 14. *The Pañchatantra*: a collection of ancient Hindu tales, in its oldest recension, the Kashmirian, entitled *Tantrākhyāyika*. The original Sanskrit text [in Nāgarī letters],

editio minor, reprinted from the critical editio major which was made for the *Königliche Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen*, by Professor HERTEL. 1915. Pages, 160. Royal 8°. Price, \$4.

For two thousand years and more, the tales of the Panchatantra have instructed and delighted the Hindus. The Panchatantra has exercised a greater influence than any other work of India upon the literature of the world. It was the Panchatantra that formed the basis of the studies of the immortal pioneer in the field of comparative literature, Theodor Benfey. His *Pantschatantra* laid the foundation of the scientific treatment of the history of the fable. From the Panchatantra there came the lost Pahlavi translation, among whose effluxes are some of the most famous books of south-western Asia and of Europe, the Arabic *Kalilah and Dimnah*, the *Directorium* of John of Capua (1270), the *Buch der Beispiele* (1483) in German of great vigor and beauty, — and so on, down to that gem of racy Tudor English, Sir Thomas North's translation of *Doni* (1570), reprinted by Joseph Jacobs, London, 1888.

Hertel gives us here one recension of known authorship and date (1199), and another, the Kashmirian, many centuries older. To volume 11, Lanman adds an essay on *The External of Indian Books*. Of the Kashmirian recension, Hertel made a German version (Berlin, 1909, Teubner). The typography of both editions is clear and beautiful. The confusing embosments of the stories (a second in the first, a third in the second, and so on) are disentangled in a most ingenious and simple way.

Volume 15. *Bhāravi's poem Kirātārjuniya*, or Arjuna's combat with the *Kirāta*. Translated from the original Sanskrit into German, and explained, by CARL CAPPELLER, Professor at the University of Jena. 1912. Pages, 232. Royal 8°. Price, \$3.50.

The subject-matter is taken from the great epic of India, the *Mahā-Bhārata*. Like the Ajax of Sophocles as compared with the Ajax of Homer, this poem is an instructive example for the student of literary evolution or literary genetics. For centuries it has been acknowledged in India as one of the six *Mahā-kāvya*s or most distinguished specimens of artificial poetry, a masterpiece of its kind.

Volume 16. *Çakuntalā*, a Hindu drama by Kālidāsa: the Bengālī recension, critically edited in the original Sanskrit and Prākritis by RICHARD FISCHER, late Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Berlin. 1922. Pages, 280. Royal 8°. Price, \$5.

As descendants of *Bhārata*, the Hindus are called *Bhāratans*. Their "continent" is called *Bhārata-varsha*, and their great epic is called the Great *Bhāratana* (Story or Fight), *Mahā-Bhārata*. *Çakuntalā* is the mother of *Bhārata*, and the beautiful story of her birth and life is told in the Great Epic. This play is a dramatization of that story, and is the masterpiece of the literature of India.

In 1898, Fischer wrote: "Es ist der sehnlichste Wunsch meines Lebens eine korrekte Ausgabe zu machen." His *Prākrit Grammar* was off his hands in 1900. In 1902 he was called to the Berlin professorship. The six years of his tenancy were crowded with toil (funds from Chinese Turkestan, etc.). Then came the call to Calcutta, and, in 1908, his death at the threshold of India. Under many difficulties, the book (all but a couple of sheets) was printed at Stuttgart (Kohlhammer). Then came the world-conflagration. . . . The printed sheets reached America November 28, 1923.

Volume 17. *The Yoga-system of Patañjali*, or the ancient Hindu doctrine of concentration of mind. Embracing the Mnemonic Rules, called *Yoga-sūtras*, of Patañjali; and the Comment, called *Yoga-bhāṣya*, attributed to *Veda-Vyāsa*; and the Explanation, called *Tattva-vāigārādī*, of *Vāchaspati-Miśra*. Translated from the original Sanskrit by JAMES HAUGHTON WOODS, Professor of Philosophy in Harvard University. 1914. Second issue, 1927. Pages, 422. Royal 8°. Price \$5.

Three works in one pair of covers. The Rules are a set of mental pegs on which to hang the principles and precepts of a system which you must learn from the living teacher of your "school." The Comment is a reinvestiture of the skeleton of the Rules with the flesh and blood of comprehensible details. And the Explanation is of course a commentary on the Comment. The Comment is the oldest written systematic exposition of Yoga-doctrine in Sanskrit that we possess.

Of the Hindu philosophies, by far the most important are the ancient dualism called Sāṅkhya, the monism of the Vedānta, and the Yoga-system. Kāuṭilya, prime-minister of Chandragupta (300 B.C.), mentions Sāṅkhya and Yoga as current in his day. But the elements of Yoga, rigorous austerities and control of the senses, are indefinitely antique, and are one of the oldest and most striking products of the Hindu mind and character.

When one considers the floods of pseudo-scientific writing with which the propagandists of Indian "isms" in America have deluged us, one is the better prepared to appreciate the self-restraint of Dr. Woods in keeping all that pertains to miracle-mongering and sensationalism in the background, and in devoting himself to the exposition of the spiritual and intellectual aspects of Yoga. His work "continues the tradition of austere scholarship" which has, from the beginning, characterized the Harvard Oriental Series.

Volumes 18 and 19. The Veda of the Black Yajus School, entitled Tāittirīya Samhitā. Translated from the original Sanskrit prose and verse, with a running commentary. By ARTHUR BERRIEDALE KEITH, D.C.L. (Oxford), of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-law, and of His Majesty's Colonial Office, sometime Acting Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Oxford, Author of 'Responsible Government in the Dominions.' Volume 18, kāṇḍas I-III; volume 19, kāṇḍas IV-VII. 1914. Pages, 464 + 374 = 838. Royal 8°. Price, \$10. Not sold separately.

The Rig-Veda holds unquestioned primacy in the sacred literature of the Hindus; but their greatest mediæval scholiast on the Vedas, Sāyana, did not write his commentary on the Rig-Veda until after his commentary on the Yajur-Veda, because (as he expressly tells us) of the transcendent importance of the Yajur-Veda for the sacrifice. The Yajur-Veda is the Veda of sacrificial formulas. An accurate edition of the Tāittirīya-Samhitā was published in 1871-2 by Weber. It waited nigh fifty years for a translator.

For the difficult task of translation, no English or American Sanskritist was so well qualified by previous studies as Keith. To it he has brought his wide and varied learning, and with such effectiveness as to produce a work, which, in spite of its large extent, is notable for its well-rounded completeness. The entire text is translated. The commentary runs *pari passu* with the version, embodies the gist of Sāyana's scholia, and is presented with the utmost typographical perspicuity. An elaborate introduction is given, treating of the relation of this text to kindred texts, its contents, language, style, and date ('about 600 B.C.'). and the religious ritual of ancient India.

Volumes 20 and 24. Rig-Veda Repetitions. The repeated verses and distichs and stanzas of the Rig-Veda in systematic presentation and with critical discussion. By MAURICE BLOOMFIELD, Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology in the Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore. 1916. Pages, 508 + 206 = 714. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$10.

Volume 20 contains Part 1: The repeated passages of the Rig-Veda, systematically presented in the order of the Rig-Veda, with critical comments and notes. Volume 24 contains Part 2: Comments and classifications from metrical and lexical and grammatical points of view, and from the point of view of the themes and divinities of the repeated passages. Also Part 3: Lists and indexes.

The aim of this work is to help us to understand the oldest religious document of Indo-European antiquity. The arrangement of Part 1 enables the student to bring under his eye at one time all the passages that he needs to compare, and to do so with utmost ease and speed. The material of this work was, from a typographical point of view, exceedingly intractable. The result as a whole is a marvel of clarity and convenience.

This work is the first of the natural sequels to the late Professor Bloomfield's Vedic Concordance (see above, volume 10). Others, begun or planned by him, are in course of publication by Professor EDGERTON of Yale University. They are issued, under the title "Vedic Variants," by the University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia.

Volumes 21 and 22 and 23. *Rāma's Later History, or Uttara-Rāma-Charita*, an ancient Hindu drama by Bhavabhūti. Critically edited in the original Sanskrit and Prākṛit, with an introduction and English translation and notes and variants, etc. By SHRIPAD KRISHNA BELVALKAR, Graduate Student of Harvard University. (Now, 1920, Professor of Sanskrit at Deccan College, Poona, India.)

Dr. Belvalkar, when returning to India in 1914 from his studies at Harvard, shipped his manuscript-collations and other papers and his books by the German freighter, Fangturm. In August, 1914, the Fangturm was interned at the port of Palma, Balearic Islands. In 1919, she was released. In May, 1920, Dr. Belvalkar recovered his papers.

Volume 21 was issued in 1915, complete.

Of volume 22, the first 92 pages, containing the text of the whole play, have been in print since January, 1915, awaiting for nigh eighteen years the recovery of the material for the rest of the book.

Of volume 23, the material included collation-sheets giving the readings of manuscripts from widely-separated parts of India, from Nepal to Madras, from Calcutta to Bombay. In spite of the generous assistance of His Majesty's Secretary of State for India in Council, the work of getting the loan of these mss. was so great that it seemed best not to try to do it again, but to await the release of the Fangturm. — There is hope now that volumes 22 and 23 may be issued.

Volume 21. *Rāma's Later History. Part 1.* Introduction and translation. (Prefixed is a convenient synoptic analysis of the play. The introduction treats of Bhavabhūti's life and date and works, and includes a summary of the Rāma-story as given by the Rāmāyaṇa. Lanman adds an essay entitled 'A method for citing Sanskrit dramas.' The method is very simple and practical.) 1915. Royal 8°. Pages 190. Price, \$3.

Volume 22. *Rāma's Later History. Part 2.* The text, with index, glossaries, etc. (This was printed at Bombay, with the exquisitely beautiful type, newly cast for this work, of Jāvaji's Nirpaya Sāgara Press, and upon paper made expressly for this edition at the Wolvercote Mill of Oxford. Each Prākṛit speech is followed by the Sanskrit version in immediate sequence.) See above.

Volume 23. *Rāma's Later History. Part 3.* Explanatory and critical epilogue. (Critical account of the manuscripts. Running expository comment. The variant readings of the mss. The typographical 'make-up' of Comment and Variants into pages is such that they go *pari passu*. These epilegomena close with an essay on the two text-traditions of the play, a time-analysis, a note on the Hindu stage, etc.) See above.

Volume 24. *Rig-Veda Repetitions. Parts 2 and 3.* By Professor BLOOMFIELD. Described above, with volume 20.

Volume 25. Rig-Veda Brāhmaṇas: The Aitareya and Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇas of the Rig-Veda. Translated from the original Sanskrit. By ARTHUR BERRIEDALE KEITH, D.C.L., D.Litt., of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-law, Regius Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology at the University of Edinburgh. 1920. Pages, 567. Royal 8°. Price \$7.50.

In August, 1915, this work was ready for printing. In August, 1916, it was delivered to the Controller of the Oxford University Press. In 1918, the Press had nigh 350 men at the war. Of the older men who were left, many were busy with urgent war-work, such as a Report on Trench-fever for the American Expeditionary Force. And when, after the armistice, the printing was resumed, the author was engrossed in the work of Lord Crewe's Committee on the Home Administration of Indian Affairs.

The Vedic literature falls into three clearly sundered groups: the Vedic hymns or Mantras; the Brāhmaṇas, 'the priestlies' or 'priestly (discourses)'; and the Sūtras. Keith thinks that the Aitareya is not later than 600 B.C. The plan of the work is like that of volumes 18-19: elaborate introduction; translation; running comment on the same page. The skill of the priestly story-tellers is at its best in the splendid legend of Cunaḥgepa (threatened sacrifice of son by father: cf. Isaac, Iphigenia, Phrixos). Despite the pseudo-profundity and puerility of the Brāhmaṇas, they are of genuine significance to the student of Hindu antiquity, social and religious. And they are in fact the oldest Indo-European prose extant.

Volumes 26 and 27. Vikrama's Adventures, or The Thirty-two Tales of the Throne. A collection of stories about King Vikrama, as told by the Thirty-two Statuettes that supported his throne. Edited in four different recensions of the Sanskrit original (Vikrama-charita or Sinhāsana-dvātriṅśakā) and translated into English with an introduction, by FRANKLIN EDGERTON, Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Pennsylvania. 1926. Pages, 372 + 384 = 756. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$10.

Vikrama's Adventures is one of the most famous story-books of mediæval India. Vikrama is one of the most noted quasi-historical heroes of his times. His magic throne, hidden upon his death, is discovered by a later king, Bhoja. Each of the thirty-two (dvā-triṅśat) statuettes that support his throne (sinhāsana) tells one story to Bhoja. Hence the alternative title. The theme of the tales is Vikrama, who is meant to serve as a kind of Hindu King Arthur, an example for real kings.

Edgerton hopes that his work may prove suggestive as a model for students of comparative literature. The text of each of the recensions (Southern, Metrical, Brief, Jain) is printed in horizontally parallel arrangement, so that the stories which correspond to each other in substance are given, each story in all four recensions, in immediate juxtaposition. And the translation is treated in like manner. Comparisons are thus facilitated to a degree never before attained in a work of this kind.

From all this, Edgerton reconstructs, with some detail, and with reasonable certainty, the original work from which the current versions are derived. This he presents in the form of a Composite Outline, the concrete solution of a problem in literary genetics.

Volumes 28 and 29 and 30. Buddhist Legends. Translated from the original Pāli text of the Dhammapada Commentary, by EUGENE WATSON BURLINGAME, Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, sometime Harrison Fellow for Research at the University of Pennsylvania, and Johnston Scholar in Sanskrit at the Johns Hopkins University, and Lecturer on Pāli in Yale University. 1921. Pages, 366 + 370 + 378 = 1114. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price \$20.

Dhamma-pada, or Way of Righteousness, is the name of one of the canonical books of the Buddhist Sacred Scriptures. It consists of 423 stanzas. These are reputed to be the very words of the Buddha himself. The Dhammapada Commentary, composed by an unknown author in Ceylon about 450 A.D., purports to tell the circumstances under which Buddha uttered each one of these stanzas. In telling them, it narrates 299 stories or legends. These stories are the preponderating element of the Commentary, and it is these which are here translated.

In style and substance the tales resemble those of the famous Jātaka Book, the Buddhist Acta Sanctorum, a counterpart of the Legends of the Christian Saints. And they present many parallels to well-known stories of mediæval literature, Oriental and European. For the comparative study of such parallels, Dr. Burlingame's Synopses, clear and brief, will prove a very great convenience. His vigorous diction suggests familiarity with such "wells of English undefyled" as the Bible and the Book of Common Prayer. The work gives a vivid picture of the every-day life of the ancient Buddhists — monks, nuns, lay disciples. It is thus, incidentally, an admirable preparative for the study of the more difficult Buddhist books in the original. As especially attractive stories may be cited: Lean Gotamī seeks mustard-seed to cure her dead child; Murder of Great Moggallāna; Buddha falsely accused by Chinchā; Visākha; the Hell-pot. A critical and historical introduction is prefixed. At the end is an *intelligent* index, modeled after that of George Foot Moore's *History of Religions*.

In September, 1909, Mr. Burlingame came to Harvard University to pursue his studies with Mr. Lanman. It was at the suggestion of the latter that Mr. Burlingame undertook the task of translating into English the Dhammapada Commentary. He first made a table of contents of the work, giving the title of each story and the place of its occurrence in the Burmese text and also in the Cingalese text. He added an index to the titles, and an extremely good analysis of Books 1 to 4. This most useful preliminary work was formally presented to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences on December 8, 1909, by Mr. Lanman. The manuscript of the article was delivered February 5, 1910, and published soon after as pages 467-550 of volume 45 of the *Proceedings of the Academy*. The admirably elaborated manuscript of the entire translation of the Dhammapada Commentary was delivered by its author on January 10, 1917, just before the War.

Volumes 31 and 32. The Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads. By ARTHUR BERRIEDALE KEITH, D.C.L., D.Litt., of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law, and of the Scottish Bar; Regius Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology at the University of Edinburgh; formerly of the Colonial Office. 1925. Pages 332 + 350 = 712. Not sold separately. Royal 8". Price \$10.

This work aims to deal objectively with Vedic religion and philosophy as distinctive manifestations of the *Indian genius*. Free use has indeed here been made of the light thrown on the development of Indian religion by modern studies of other religious origins and types. But the fundamental fact has been constantly borne in mind that the Vedic religion is a system *sui generis*; and that (no matter what it may share with other religions) the *character of this Vedic religion*, as revealed in the elaborate Vedic literature itself, is, and for us should be, throughout the whole exposition, the feature of prime importance.

Of all classes among the people of India, it was the Brahman class of whose genius the Vedic literature is the manifestation. From earlier and simpler beliefs, the Vedas have evolved a definite and strikingly individual system of deities and a unique conception of the relations of men with their gods. — Doubtless in other, non-Brahmanic, elements of the people of India, there existed beliefs and practices quite different from those

recorded in the Vedas, and more in keeping with what modern study rates as marks of a low order of civilization. — But India is entitled to have her religion judged by the essential product of her highest intellects. Accordingly, in this work, the Vedic religion is presented essentially as it appears in the Vedas, and as it was no doubt felt by those responsible for these texts.

The philosophy of Vedic India, likewise, has been presented objectively, with full recognition of the fact that the Upanishads are the work of many minds, often in discord upon essentials, upon such final problems as being and non-being, birth and death, good and evil. To later thinkers of India, the Upanishads became sacred texts whose messages had to be brought into harmony. No attempt has been made to do this here. The author does not try to disguise the primitive character of much of this early thought; but on the other hand, fails not to point out the remarkable glimpses of a deep intuition into the problems of reality which the Upanishads do present. It is easy to overestimate these evidences of insight; but it is wrong to depreciate the intellectual achievement of some of these early Indian sages, or to deny their right to be set beside the great names of the pre-Socratic philosophy of Greece. — Due regard has also been had to the evolution, from the unsystematic Upanishads, of the Indian philosophical systems.

Keith's treatise is disposed under five main parts: 1. the sources; 2. the gods and demons of the Veda; 3. the Vedic ritual; 4. the spirits of the dead; 5. the philosophy of the Veda. — The references to the great mass of modern books appurtenant to the Veda are so ample that this treatise may well serve as an adequate bibliography of its vast themes. The usefulness of the work is enhanced by two indexes (they fill about 100 columns), a General index and a Sanskrit index. — Of the whole, Professor Frederick William Thomas of Oxford (*Journal of Theological Studies*, 31.250) writes: "A treatise of such character and compass as in the case of an ordinary scholar might well be the crown of a life's work."

Volumes 33 and 34 and 35. The Veda of Praise, or Rig-Veda. Translated from the original Sanskrit into German, with a complete running Commentary. By KARL FRIEDRICH GELDNER, late Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Marburg in Hesse, Editor of the Avesta or Sacred Books of the Parsees. — Part One, Books 1 to 4, revised edition, Pages, about 500; Part Two, Books 5 to 8, Pages, 444; Part Three, Books 9 and 10, Pages, 412. Pages in all three Parts, about 1356. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$20.

Geldner was born December 17, 1852 (not 1853!), and died, a little over 76 years old, early in 1929. In his twenty-first year, in 1873, he came to Tuebingen to be a pupil of Rudolph Roth, the greatest Occidental master of Vedic learning. Geldner's first book was *Siebenzig Lieder des Rigveda, uebersetzt von Karl Geldner und Adolf Kaegi. Mit Beiträgen von R. Roth*, 1875. Forty-eight years later, in 1923, Part One of Geldner's *Der Rigveda, uebersetzt und erlaeutert*, was issued. It was published under the auspices of the Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen, and contains Books 1 to 4, pages 442.

In consequence of the World-war, the completion of this work seemed uncertain. The Göttingen Society graciously accepted the proposal that the Harvard Oriental Series should carry it through to the end. By 1928, the printing of Part Two, Books 5 to 8, and that of Part Three, Books 9 and 10, was finished. It remained to print a revised edition of Part One, Books 1 to 4. In spite of discouragements and obstacles, the printing of this revision was going on, when, early in 1929, Geldner suddenly died.

Whitney, the translator of the Atharva-Veda, as well as Geldner, were pupils of Roth. Both pupils devoted over fifty years of a busy life to the study and interpretation of the

Vedas. The life of each was proved otherwise fruitful: Whitney's, notably by The Century Dictionary, an Encyclopedic Lexicon of the English Language; and Geldner's, notably by his edition of the Avesta. Both Vedic works, the Atharva-Veda and the Rig-Veda, may truly be said to have been on the stocks for over half a century. The issue of each was postponed by the author's death, — Whitney's for about a decade. It is reasonable to hope that Geldner's may appear in 1933.

Volume 36. Index to Geldner's Rig-Veda translated. The plans of author and editor included a Historical and Critical Epilogue, to be issued, with an Index to Parts One and Two and Three, and as Part Four, volume 36 of this Series. To avoid further delay in the distribution of the translation, the Index will be treated as a Supplement to the translation, and completed as soon as is feasible.

Volume 37. Buddha's Teachings. Being the Sutta-Nipāta or Discourse-Collection. Edited in the original Pali text, with an English version facing it. By LORD CHALMERS, G. C. B., Hon. D. Litt., Oxford. Sometime Governor of Ceylon. Sometime Master of Peterhouse, Cambridge University. 1932. Pages 326. Royal 8°. Price, \$5.

A word as to the English title of this volume from the publisher's point of view. For students of Pali and Buddhism, the traditional name, Sutta-Nipāta, is doubtless the best name by which to call the Pali work itself. But for the general reader, the title Discourse-Collection is far too vague to be useful. Accordingly, since the suttas or discourses are mostly didactic and pronounced by the Buddha, the difficulty is perhaps best met by calling the volume "Buddha's Teachings, being the Sutta-Nipāta or Discourse-Collection."

The Jātaka or stories of the Buddha's former births, translated from the Pali by various hands (complete in six vol's, 1895-1907), marks an epoch in Occidental studies of Buddhist literature. The first volume (stories 1-150) was done by Robert Chalmers of Oriol College, Oxford, a friend and pupil of Rhys Davids. — Three years later, continuing and completing Trenckner's edition of the Pali text of the Majjhima-Nikāya (vol. 1, 1888), Chalmers issued, in quick succession, in 1898, vol. 2, and, in 1899, vol. 3.

After long and distinguished public service, begun (1882) in Her Majesty's Treasury and covering some years as Governor of Ceylon, Lord Chalmers became, in 1924, Master of Peterhouse, the oldest of Cambridge Colleges (founded in 1284 by Hugo de Balsham, Bishop of Ely). The Master's experience in translating and editing Pali texts (Jātaka, Majjhima), his residence in Ceylon (where Buddhism is a living religion), and his command of the outcome of the work of his colleagues (notably the work of Rhys Davids, and "the illuminating labours of Mrs. Rhys Davids in interpreting philosophical terms and ideas"), — these are some of the elements of a rare equipment for the exceedingly hard and important task of translating Buddha's teachings as set forth in the Suttas or Discourses or Dialogues of the Majjhima. And for that task, the years of relative leisure in Peterhouse (1924-1931) offered the occasion. Lord Chalmers made those years signally fruitful by issuing, promptly, and again in quick succession (1926, 1927), the two volumes of his translation. To us moderns, the teachings of the Majjhima are strange in form and alien in substance. That substance is so *thoroughly done into genuine English* that the version has become a true rendering. We can understand it without comments and without knowing the original Pali. By cutting out the profuse and tiresome repetitions, the three volumes of the Pali have become two in the English. With Hesiod, we may say, The half is more than the whole, *ἡμισυ παντός*.

His Majjhima work ended, with unabated vigor Lord Chalmers turned to the editing and translating of Sutta-Nipāta. In his *Introduction* thereto, he states and weighs the facts that bear upon the age of certain parts of Sutta-Nipāta, to wit, The Way-across (book 5) and The Octads (book 4) and The Rhinoceros (Sutta 3 of book 1). These he deems "the earliest elements of our present canonical Sutta-Nipāta." For there exists a commentary, actually named Nid-deśa or Ex-position, upon these "certain parts," which commentary was admitted into the Canon. And a commented text must be prior to its commentary, and is usually long prior. — Again, he holds that the narrative Suttas (1-2 of book 3), which tell of Gotama's renouncing the world and of his struggle with the Tempter, are clearly marked as primitive records by their straightforward simplicity and austere avoidance of fanciful embellishment. — Or again, for the age of some Suttas (1.12; 3.11; 4.16), he adduces the fact that they are cited in the Emperor Asoka's rock-inscriptions, of about 250 B.C.

But apart from their venerable antiquity, the Suttas of Sutta-Nipāta are of import also as Pali poetry. Take for example the dramatic scene (1.2) on some Indian Rio Grande (Mahi-tīre), where Gotama, now a Buddha, meets and converts the brahmin herdsman named Wealthy. — The herdsman has worked hard and likes to tell that he is prosperous. The first two items of his boasting are that he's well-fed and well-housed. The first he expresses by the phrase 'Done is my rice,' *pakk-odano*. The Pali word *pakka*, 'cooked, done,' Anglo-Indian *pucka*, is common to this day in the senses 'well-done, substantial.' His meaning is 'Substantial is my food.' And for 'well-housed' he says 'My hut is snug with rain-tight thatch and cozy fire.' And adds, in smug defiance, 'So, if the heavens will, the storm may burst amain.' — Gotama gives the herdsman a Roland for his Oliver, and answers in quiet dignity, but with a pun of age-long fame, *a-kkodhano*, 'Without anger am I. My roof's aleak. The fires [of lust] are quenched. Let the storm burst.'

Herdsmen: Pakk-odano, Done is my broth = My food is drest.

Gotama: A-kkodhano, None am I wroth = My mood is blest.

And so on to the end, Gotama matches each wholesome joy of the layman's life with a higher joy of the spiritual quest. The storm bursts amain. The herdsman sees a new light.

The Sutta-Nipāta, taken on the whole, is the clearest extant picture of primitive Buddhism. The most practical of Buddha's Teachings is his doctrine of Goodwill. In one century or another this has proved an incalculable blessing to one people or another. So may it do again! Goodwill, beyond all else, is what the world needs just now.

Volume 38. Indian Epigrams, done out of Sanskrit into English Verse. By CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN, Professor at Harvard University.

This is a small collection of Sanskrit epigrams, mostly done into English many years ago. They are such as the translator hoped and thought might prove acceptable as gifts to his friends. The Series, as a whole, consists mainly of books which are hard to study or even to read, and yet harder to write or even to edit. For the maker of a gift-book, near the end of his eighty-third year, — it is "Now or never."

Volumes 39 and 40. Buddha-ghosa's Visuddhi-magga or Way of Salvation. Edited, in the original Pali, by the late Henry Clarke Warren, and revised by Dharma-ananda Kosambi. Pages 638. Royal 8°.

Buddha-ghosa flourished about 400 A.D. His *Way of Salvation* is an encyclopedia *raisonnée* of Buddhist Doctrine. There is a certain fitness in calling him the Saint

Augustine of India. Both were men of majestic intellect and wide learning. Both were authors of works which for fifteen hundred years have maintained for themselves, each in its sphere, a place of surpassing influence. It is highly probable that Buddha-ghosa, at Great Minster in Ceylon, was composing the Visuddhi-magga at about the same time as that in which (413-428) Saint Augustine was writing *The City of God*.

Warren (1854-1899) planned to publish a scholarly edition of the Pali text of the Visuddhi-magga, in English letters, with English translation, index of names, and so on. — Accordingly, he had the text of the entire Visuddhi-magga copied out four times just as it stands in his four chief palm-leaf manuscripts, two Burmese and two Cingalese. These copies were made on the type-writer, and in Roman characters. The text of each manuscript was copied from beginning to end, in bits, each bit as long as the width of the paper would conveniently allow, the four corresponding bits of each manuscript in four horizontally parallel lines, and in the order B1, B2, C1, C2; and so on with the next bit. Thus the readings of any given word form a short four-line vertical column. This makes it very easy to collate the readings of the four different manuscripts and to note the points of agreement and disagreement. — Moreover, he had prepared a type-written manuscript of the whole work which he hoped might serve as final copy for the printer. And of the English translation he had made about one third, considerable portions having already appeared in his *Buddhism*. — Buddha-ghosa makes constant reference to the Sacred Texts of Buddhism, quite after the manner of the Fathers of the Christian Church. And of these quotations about one half had been identified by Warren in the extensive literature from which Buddha-ghosa drew.

Shortly before Warren died, Lanman told him that he, Lanman, hoped and expected to take up the work on Buddha-ghosa's *Way of Salvation* and finish it. "But," he added, "the obligation to Professor Whitney is the prior one." To "revise, bring nearer to completion, and edit" and issue Whitney's *Atharva-Veda* took much of Lanman's best working years, from Warren's death to the issue of the Whitney volumes in 1905. The general editorial conduct of the Harvard Oriental Series on the one hand, and on the other hand the work of finishing Buddha-ghosa's *Way*, — both these were for Lanman conflicting duties, too heavy perhaps for any one pair of shoulders.

Meantime, Buddhist scholars of Siam and Burma and Ceylon had not been idle. Their editions of Visuddhi-magga and appurtenant commentaries are in Asiatic letters. The first edition of the text of Visuddhi-magga in English letters is that of Mrs. C. A. F. Rhys Davids. On page ix of her *Foreword*, dated 1920, Mrs. Davids, with the modesty and unselfishness of a nobly true scholar, speaks of all these works as "error-clearing helps" for "the great edition to which my collaborators and I shall have served as stepping-stones." And now, in his turn, Henry Warren, no less true and noble, would be the first to welcome as a stepping-stone this long-delayed issue of his own work, in the same spirit of unselfish and practical devotion to the ideals of the scholar.

THE HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS

publishes other works relating to India, as follows:

Sanskrit Reader: Text and Vocabulary and Notes. By CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN, Wales Professor of Sanskrit at Harvard University. Seventh issue, 1920. Royal 8°. Pages, 430. Price, \$3.

The Reader furnishes the text for 60 or 80 lessons, and with it the needed lexicon and notes. The notes make constant reference to Whitney's Sanskrit Grammar: see below. These two volumes supply all that is strictly indispensable for the beginner. The text is in the Oriental (Nāgarī) letters; but a transliteration of the first four pages in Roman letters is added. The Reader is designed especially to meet the needs of those who have not the aid of a teacher.

The text is chosen: 1. from Classical Sanskrit works (Nala-story, fables of Hitopadeśa, "Manu's Laws"); and 2. from the Vedic literature (Rig-Veda hymns, Brāhmaṇas, Sūtras for wedding and burial). A literary-historical introduction is given for each kind of text. The vocabulary is in Roman letters, and is elaborated with the utmost care. Special heed is given to the development of the meanings (semantics: pāda, foot, leg, leg of lamb, quarter, quarter of a four-lined stanza, line, line of a three-lined stanza), and also to the etymological cognates in English, Greek, and so on (ta-d, ró, ōæ-t. tha-t, is-tu-d).

Parts of Nala and Hitopadesha in English letters. Prepared by C. R. LANMAN. 1889. Royal 8°. Pages, 50. Price, 50 cents.

A reprint of the first 44 pages of the Reader (see above), transliterated from the Oriental characters into English letters. It corresponds page for page and line for line with its original, so that the references of the Vocabulary and Notes of the Reader apply exactly to this reprint. With the Grammar and Reader and this reprint, the student is enabled to acquire a knowledge of the structure of the Sanskrit and to do some reading, without first learning the Oriental letters.

Sanskrit Grammar: including both the Classical language, and the older dialects of Veda and Brāhmaṇa. By WILLIAM DWIGHT WHITNEY, late Professor of Sanskrit at Yale University. Fifth issue, 1923, of second edition, 1889. 8°. Pages, 578. Price, \$4.50.

The greatest extant repository of the grammatical facts concerning the Sanskrit language. A masterpiece of orderly arrangement. Prefixed is a brief account of the literature of India.

Vedānta Philosophy. Outline of the Vedānta system of philosophy according to Shankara. By PAUL DEUSSEN. Translated by JAMES H. WOODS, Professor of Philosophy at Harvard University, and CATHARINE B. RUNKLE of Cambridge, Massachusetts. Second edition. 1915. 8°. Pages, 56. Price, \$1.

This book, a translation of the summary given by Deussen at the end of his monumental work, *Das System des Vedānta*, was first published in 1906. Since then, thanks to the learning and enthusiasm of Charles Johnston, the whole great work has been made accessible in an English version (Chicago, 1912, The Open Court Publishing Company). Nevertheless, the small book was so inexpensive and practical that a new edition was made in 1915. The summary, although brief and compact, is yet so lucid and adequate, — in short, so altogether admirable, that it is not likely soon to be superseded by a better exposition of what has been to untold millions at once a philosophy and a religion.

IN PREPARATION

Sanskrit Grammar. The essentials, in briefest form and for beginners, as to sounds and sound-changes and inflection. With an appendix of linguistic Comment, entirely separate from the Grammar, and drawn from English and Greek and Latin. By C. R. LANMAN. 1924. Royal 8°. Pages, about 50 + 50.

Of all the Indo-European languages, Sanskrit is incomparably well adapted as an elementary study for the purposes of mental discipline in general and of rigorous linguistic training in particular. The transparency of its structure is absolutely unique. The various elements—prefix, root, derivative suffix, inflectional ending—which in synthesis constitute the word, are easily made the subject of quick and certain analysis by the veriest beginner. Thus Sanskrit serves best to reveal the fundamental principles which underlie the structure of English, Greek, Latin, etc. For these have suffered linguistic erosion to such a degree that their original structural features are often no longer recognizable. The habit and power of alert observation and of linguistic reflection (such, for example, as shows you without reference to any book, the connection of *batch* with *bake*, of *fil-th* with *foul*, of *gris-i* with *grind*) are best won by the study of some foreign language. One single year of Sanskrit may, with proper books, be made so fruitful, that any intending Anglicist or Hellenist or Latinist may well hesitate to forego the unmatched opportunity which it offers for winning a habit and a power that shall enable him to tackle his English or his Greek or his Latin more vigorously and effectively.

For this purpose, the mastery of Oriental alphabets is of no use whatever. The inflections and sound-changes of Sanskrit are far less difficult than is commonly supposed, and are positively easy if you separate the difficulties of the language from those of the writing. Therefore this grammar prints all Sanskrit words in Roman letters. The use of Roman letters makes clear to the eye, instantly and without a word of comment, countless facts as to the structure and analysis of the forms. And by combining ingenious typographic arrangement with the use of Roman letters, it is possible to accomplish wonders for the visualizing memory.

The explanatory or illustrative matter, drawn from English, Greek, and Latin, will be found helpful and often entertaining. Thus palatalization (important in Sanskrit: *k* becomes *ch*, *g* becomes *j*) is illustrated by *drink drench*, *hang hinge*, and so on. The section-numbers of the Comment correspond throughout with those of the Grammar, so that reference from the one to the other is 'automatic.'

Bhāratan Readings. Easy and interesting stories from the Mahā-Bhārata in the original Sanskrit. Printed in Roman letters, with a literal English version. By C. R. LANMAN.

These show to the beginner how exceedingly easy the easy epic texts are. They are chosen with common sense and good taste, and are purged of long-winded descriptive passages. They are in simple unstilted language, entertaining, full of swift-moving action and incident. Among them are the story of Śakuntalā (heroine of the master-piece of the Hindu drama, and mother of Bhārata: see above, page 9), the Flood, the great Gambling-scene, the Night-scene on the Ganges (in which the fallen heroes come forth from the river and talk with the living), Vipulā (who restrains Ruchi from a lapse of virtue by hypnotizing her), the Man in the Pit (prototype of the famous mediæval allegory), Nalā and Damayantī (cut down from a thousand stanzas to a few hundred), and so on. To make easier and quicker the understanding of the text, each stanza is printed as four lines (not two), and the literal version is given in a parallel column.